



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 06

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501 – Requiting A Debt Of Gratitude

The entire scene had become quiet. The monk wearing the golden Kasaya was hovering above the Heavenhawk Island. He still wore the expression of an eminent monk. However, after witnessing his brutal approaches, and how he slaughtered those people just now, if anyone still treated him as an eminent monk, that guy would be a true idiot.

The monk casually waved his hand. As if having sensed a calling, the golden sarira flew into his grasp. Logically, after obtaining the sarira, he should instantly put it away. But instead, he openly placed the sarira on top of his palm, and ran his eyes across the faces of all those present. It seemed like he was provoking them, as if he was saying, ‘Do you guys still want it? Why don’t you fight me and take it?’

Many people felt as if they were about to cough out blood. Even Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn’t stand it any longer. Damn it, this monk was really shameless! Although there were many other shameless people in this world, the key point was that this was a monk! Of course, no one has said that a monk can’t be shameless. However, this guy had the face of an eminent monk!

“Misters, if none of you are going to fight for this treasure, I will have no choice but to take it away with me.”

The monk said.

“Damn monk, you’ve killed so many geniuses from the four

major powers! Just you wait, the Invincible Sect's fury will rain down upon you very soon! You will definitely die a horrible death!"

Someone from the Invincible Sect said while gritting his teeth in anger.

"That's right! You dared kill men from the Asura Palace, we'll definitely rip you into a thousand pieces!"

Li Hao had nearly lost one of his arms. He was now covered in blood, and was wearing a painful expression on his face.

"I have no idea if I will be ripped into a thousand pieces. However, I can rip all of you into a thousand pieces right now."

A ruthless light flashed within the monk's eyes. Seeing this, the geniuses from the four major powers instantly scurried away in all directions. None of them had the courage to stay back any longer. This monk was really terrifying; he was simply a lunatic who didn't even blink his eyes when killing someone.

"Amitabha! I did tell you that this item belongs to me."

The monk said. He waved his hand and put away the sarira. After that, he strode away in mid-air, and soon disappeared without a trace.

Seeing the completely messed up Heavenhawk Island, as well as

the corpses floating around the ocean surface, the people present couldn't help but let out sighs filled with mixed emotions. This monk truly deserved to be called the number one Pirate Lord. Compared to the other six Pirate Lords, not only was he stronger, he was also more ruthless. He was simply a devil monk who never blinked his eyes when killing someone.

“Hmph! This monk will never be able to leave the Chaotic Ocean! Let's go back and get more help, we have to rip this monk into a thousand pieces!”

Ye Hui from the Invincible Sect coldly harrumphed, then brought all the remaining men of the Invincible Sect with him and left.

After that, the geniuses from the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace left as well. All of them looked dejected and gloomy, and they had lost their arrogant and overbearing attitudes.

“Let's go. We need to return and tell what happened today. Also, that monk has to die!”

Xiu Rui said coldly.

“Jiang Chen, I'll be returning to the Asura Palace as well. Will you be coming with me?”

Tan Lang turned to Jiang Chen and asked. Since something huge had happened in the Chaotic Ocean, as one of the participants, Tan

Lang had to go back and answer to his own sect.

“I have something else I have to attend to. So, I won’t be following you to the Asura Palace. Do be careful, your fellow disciples aren’t very good people.”

Jiang Chen patted Tan Lang on his shoulder and gave him a friendly reminder. He had no interest in this Asura Palace. After making contact with the people of the Asura Palace today, he no longer had a favorable impression toward this power. The only thing this power had that he liked was Tan Lang.

Jiang Chen never got along well with geniuses from great powers, who had always considered themselves superior to everyone who weren’t a genius from some great power. If not for this, he wouldn’t have been all by himself in his previous life.

“Alright, I’ll be taking my leave now. Jiang Chen, be careful in this Chaotic Ocean. That monk is a frightening guy, and if you can, don’t provoke him.”

Tan Lang reminded Jiang Chen. In his mind, the reason why Jiang Chen wanted to stay behind was to fight for that treasure. However, that monk was really terrifying. Even with Jiang Chen’s incredible strength, it would be very difficult for him to handle that monk.

Soon, all geniuses from the four major powers left, leaving behind a chaotic and bloody scene.

“That monk is really brutal, he killed least ten people from the four major powers in today’s battle.”

“All four major powers have suffered great losses this time, especially the Asura Palace. I’m sure none of them will forgive this matter easily. I’m guessing some true powerful warriors will soon arrive here. That time, the Chaotic Ocean will once again be in a mess.”

“An unprecedented chaos will definitely strike this place soon. This monk will most likely be killed. None of the Thirteen Tycoons are easily to deal with, they’re all very powerful.”

Many people were discussing the previous and upcoming events. Today’s battle had brought great losses to the four major powers. They were the giants of the Liang Province, existences that no one dared to offend, and their disciples were arrogant and domineering. The monk’s actions were no different from shaming their face, and these four major powers would naturally not forgive him for that. Especially the Asura Palace, as they hadn’t even killed their intended target, the Heavenhawk Island Master.

Soon after, all the spectators left. As the Island Master was now gone, the Heavenhawk Island had become an island without a master. Some of Zhuang Fan’s subordinates were still remaining on the island, and they were all in states of anxiety.

“Hehe, buddy, this Heavenhawk Island’s scenery is excellent! Since it doesn’t belong to anyone now, why don’t we become the

Island Masters?”

Big Yellow laughed.

“I’m not interested. Follow me.”

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen started flying toward where the monk had gone.

"Damn it, where are you going?"

Big Yellow chased after Jiang Chen and asked in a gloomy manner.

"I'm going to find that monk."

Jiang Chen said.

“He’s a cruel and heartless guy, why do you want to look for him?”

Big Yellow asked.

"I need to help him."

Jiang Chen said.

"Help him?"

Big Yellow was startled. No matter how much he thought about it, he was pretty sure that Jiang Chen and the monk had never met before. Today was their first encounter, and it didn't seem like they had any previous relationships either. With Jiang Chen's character, unless he was too bored, he would never take the initiative to help a stranger. Also, the monk was a Third Grade Combat King; he was very strong, and so didn't seem like he needed Jiang Chen's help.

"The Buddhist cultivation path is different from ours. When a powerful Buddhist passes away, they will leave behind the essence of their lifetime, and we call it their sarira. The treasure that monk obtained just now is a sarira, and it was the remains of a Buddhist who was at least a Third Grade Minor Saint. The monk has been in the Chaotic Ocean for quite some time, and he never showed himself in public. However, he finally revealed himself today, telling us that he's here for this sarira. Due to the fact that the sarira had hidden itself too deeply, even you wouldn't be able to discover it. So, if even you couldn't find it, it would be much harder for the monk to find its exact location. As a result of that, he hid in this Chaotic Ocean, waiting for the sarira to show itself. If you were that monk, after waiting for so long before finally finding the sarira, what would you do?"

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

"I would immediately absorb it."

Big Yellow answered. He was no idiot, of course he knew the importance of a Buddhist's sarira. If Big Yellow obtained that sarira, he would definitely absorb it at once, and use it to strengthen himself.

“That's right. I'm sure that monk must be very eager to absorb that sarira now. If my guess is correct, he should be looking for a secret place. However, this guy has killed so many geniuses of the four major powers, and they definitely won't forgive him. If they mighty warriors from the four major powers attack the monk while absorbing the sarira, the consequences will be devastating.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Don't tell me you're going to stand against all the mighty warrior of the four major powers for that monk?”

Big Yellow finally understood what Jiang Chen's objective was. However, this only confused him even further. Since when was this guy such a warmhearted man? For the sake of a monk he had never met before, he would stand against four major powers? This was not Jiang Chen's style!

“That's right, I have to help him. Consider this me requiring a debt of gratitude.”

Jiang Chen said with utmost seriousness.

“Requite a debt of gratitude? You owe that monk a favor?! Are

you kidding me?!”

Big Yellow could no longer stand it. The reason Jiang Chen wanted to help that monk was because he wanted to requite an old debt of gratitude. However, Big Yellow remembered that when the sarira revealed itself to the public, Jiang Chen showed intentions of seizing it, but when the monk attacked, he immediately changed his mind.

“I don’t owe that monk a debt of gratitude, but his Ancestor. Do you remember that Buddhist Seal that monk used just now? There are actually three Buddhist seals; the Fudo Seal, the Holy Seal, and the Lion Seal. The seal used by that monk just now is the Fudo Seal.”

Jiang Chen said.

"So?"

Big Yellow expressed a great interest in the story.

“Ever since the Buddhist path started going downhill, the three Seal became lost skills. Amongst all Buddhists, only Ancestor Greenlotus knows how to use the skill, and he only mastered the Fudo Seal. Thus, I am sure that this monk is one of Ancestor Greenlotus’s inheritors. Many years ago, Ancestor Greenlotus saved my life. Thus, no matter what, I have to requite this debt of gratitude.”

Jiang Chen explained. He had met Ancestor Greenlotus many years ago. During that time, he had just finished fighting against mighty devils. He was severely injured, and was at the brink of death. Fortunately, Ancestor Greenlotus had saved his life. However, not long after that, Ancestor Greenlotus had gone missing. Even after Jiang Chen became the number one Saint underneath the heavens, he never had the chance to pay Ancestor Greenlotus back for the gratitude he had shown him. Thinking back to I now, with Ancestor Greenlotus's strength, perhaps he had already entered the Immortal Realm.

After meeting the monk today, Jiang Chen firmly believed that he must be Ancestor Greenlotus's inheritor. Even if he wasn't, he must have some kind of relationship with him. Therefore, when Jiang Chen saw the Fudo Seal, he instantly gave up on involving himself. Not only that, he wanted to help the monk absorb the sarira, so that he could pay back Ancestor Greenlotus for the kindness he had shown him.

Also, compared to those arrogant geniuses of the four major powers, Jiang Chen found this monk much more likable.

“Damn it, who is that Ancestor Greenlotus? You're only eighteen years old now, so why does it sound like you're an old monster who have lived for a few hundred years?”

Big Yellow felt gloomy. He couldn't figure out how Jiang Chen could possibly have some kind of relationship with the Ancestor of Buddhism, and even had his life saved by the Ancestor before.

“Don't ask so much. No matter what, I'm determined to help this

monk. Let's go!"

Jiang Chen then began flying once more.

Chapter 502 - Breaking Through To The Combat King Realm

With a gloomy expression, Big Yellow followed Jiang Chen. He felt dizzy by the fact that Patriarch Greenlotus who had appeared out of nowhere could be related to this shameless monk.

However, he had known Jiang Chen for a long time. He knew that this guy was extremely mystical, a man who knew a lot of things. So, Big Yellow was already used to it.

The Chaotic Ocean covered a vast area that stretched out as far as the eyes could see. After the monk left, he basically vanished into thin air. It would be extremely difficult to find out where he was right now. However, Jiang Chen had never failed to find a person he was looking for. With the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, there were no one could escape from his senses.

Twenty thousand miles away from the Heavenhawk Island there was an area filled with islands of all sizes. As this location was far away from the center of the Chaotic Ocean, the natural Yuan energy here had become much thinner. The islands were all in bad shapes, and no one seemed to be living in this place, and people would rarely come here. It was basically an area with no human activities.

A man and a dog could be seen floating outside of these islands. At this place, although the monk had hidden himself perfectly, Jiang Chen could still sense his whereabouts clearly.

“This monk really knows how to pick his hideout. No one will come to a shitty place like this.”

Big Yellow said.

“This is a perfect spot. However, if the mighty warriors of the four major powers really want to look for him, they will leave no stone in the Chaotic Ocean unturned. Thus, it won’t take long before they come looking for him here.”

Jiang Chen said.

“How are you going to help him? Don’t tell me you’re going to go see him now, and tell him we’re here to help? I believe that damn monk will attack us straightaway.”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes and said. By hiding and waiting for such a long time in the Chaotic Ocean, the monk had shown how much he cared about the sarira. If Jiang Chen jumped out in front of him now and said he was here to help, that monk would never believe what Jiang Chen said unless he was an idiot. Also, a young man who wasn’t even a Combat King, and a big yellow dog who was just a First Grade Demon King, what kind of help could they even provide?

“Of course not. We’ll hide without letting that monk discover us, and let him absorb the sarira with a peace of mind. If no warriors from the four major powers show up during this time, there will be no need for us to help. Besides, I’m sure that the four major powers will send some extraordinary warriors here. With our strength, we

might not be able to defeat them. I want to take this time to break through to the Combat King realm.”

Jiang Chen said.

After that, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow hid their auras and simply picked a desolate island to stay. If it was any ordinary people, it would be really difficult to hide here without being discovered by the monk, with his alertness. However, as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were experts at hiding themselves, they could easily keep the monk in complete dark without him realizing that the two of them were nearby.

Right after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow hid on one of the islands, a golden figure arrived above a desolate island located in the center of this area. This figure was none other than the monk.

Wearing an alert expression, the monk swept the surrounding area with his eyes and divine sense, inspecting all the islands located in this area. After finding nothing suspicious, he found a place to hide.

Within the center of the desolate island, the monk was sitting cross-legged within a quiet valley. A sarira was hovering above his head, emitting golden lights. Its surface was fully carved with Sanskrit.

Suddenly, the monk issued a loud shout. A golden Buddhist Aura shot out from his head and covered the entire sarira. After that, as if the sarira had sensed a calling force, it entered the monk’s body.

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard from the monk's body as he started violently trembling. The energy contained within the sarira was too powerful, and even the monk who was purposely trying to hide his aura was unable to do so.

The faint golden halo and the pure Buddhist Aura, even Jiang Chen who was staying far away was able to sense it.

“That guy is drawing so much attention, it will be impossible for those people to not find him.”

Big Yellow said.

“He has underestimated the power of the sarira. With his current cultivation base, absorbing the sarira of a Third Grade Minor Saint will definitely draw a lot of attention.”

The monk was too impatient to absorb the sarira, and he would definitely attract the mighty warriors of the four major powers. Perhaps this monk thought he would be able to finish the absorption before those warriors could find him. However, he had really underestimated this sarira. With his current Third Grade Combat King cultivation, he could only absorb one tenth of the energy contained within, and he would have to absorb the remaining energy in the future. Although it was only one tenth of the energy, it was not something that was easy to digest, and it required much more time than the monk had expected.

“We can’t delay any longer, I need to break through to the Combat King realm right now.”

With a flip of his palm, two First Grade Demon King demon souls appeared in his hand. Currently, he only needed another 600 Dragon Marks to break through to the First Grade Combat King realm. However, the closer he got, the more difficult it would be for him to form new Dragon Marks. If he had one Second Grade Demon King demon soul now, he would certainly break through to the Combat King realm. However, with two First Grade Demon King demon souls, he was a bit uncertain.

However, Jiang Chen never did something he was uncertain about. As he had robbed a few Pirate Lords, he had found many natural resources amongst his loot, which he could use at this moment. Not only this, he had also found two First Grade Demon King demon souls from what he had received from the Second Grade Combat King. Together with the original two Jiang Chen had, he now had four First Grade Demon King demon souls, and that combined with so many natural resources, he would have no problems breaking through to the Combat King realm.

After that, Jiang Chen sat down with his legs crossed. In a very short amount of time, he entered a state of cultivating, then swallowed all four demon souls in one. He began circulating the Dragon Transformation skill; absorbing them.

On the other side, Big Yellow started murmuring, “This master dog has to stand guard every time! In order for this guy to break through to the Combat King realm, I believe it’s much more

difficult than it is for that damn monk to absorb that sarira. Doesn't this mean that this master dog will have to fight all those mighty warriors alone?"

Big Yellow was extremely gloomy. In his mind, breaking through to the Combat King realm was not easy. At least, it was much more difficult than absorbing a sarira.

However, he had no idea how frightening Jiang Chen truly was. Jiang Chen was only re-cultivating the path he had already mapped out in his previous life, so there were no bottlenecks for him whatsoever. As long as the Dragon Marks and energy in his body reached the required level, he would be able to break through straightaway. This also applied to when he was breaking through to the Combat King realm; there were no obstacles.

An hour later, Jiang Chen suddenly opened his eyes. An extremely powerful aura was emitted from his body, and cracking sounds could be heard from around his body. It was the sound produced by spatial energy. Big Yellow had fortunately covered this place with a formation, preventing Jiang Chen's aura from leaking out to the outside world. If not, Jiang Chen's aura would definitely have alerted the monk.

"Fuck! Are you still a normal human?! You broke through to the Combat King realm in an hour!"

Big Yellow fell down to the ground. He felt as if the entire world had been turned upside down. Jiang Chen's very existence in this world was a heavy blow to all normal beings.

There was a huge bottleneck when breaking through to the Combat King realm, as one was required to comprehend the Spatial Laws. No matter how talented a person was, he would require at least a few days to comprehend the Spatial Laws and break through. However, it had only taken this guy one hour to do it. This really pissed him off.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything. He was carefully feeling the energy within his body. His Qi Sea had transformed into a large space, and he was capable of storing many objects in there.

Within his Qi Sea, a tiny golden dragon was happily flying around. It was Jiang Chen's combat soul. It was surrounded by countless blood-red Dragon Marks. There were 20,100 Dragon Marks. That's right, not only had Jiang Chen successfully broken through to the Combat King realm, he had even formed 100 additional Dragon Marks.

After reaching the Combat King realm, Jiang Chen found out how many Dragon Marks he would need to break through to future levels. He needed 2,000 new Dragon Marks to break through to each grade. The First Grade Combat King realm needed 20,000 Dragon Marks; Second Grade Combat King required 22,000 Dragon Marks; Third Grade Combat King needed 24,000 Dragon Marks...

Not only that, he now knew the requirements for breaking through to the realms above that. Ninth Grade Combat King, Combat Emperor, Minor Saint, Great Saint; it had all become clear and precise to him. The road to 100,000 Dragon Marks was opened up completely for Jiang Chen; he could see his future path bright

and clear.

No doubt, a clear and precise structure was very important for Jiang Chen. By knowing the amount of Dragon Marks needed for each future stage and realm, Jiang Chen could prepare properly.

Also, after Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat King realm, he could feel a Heavenly Tribulation attracted as well, just like when he broke through to the Combat Soul realm. But this time, it would be much stronger than the previous one. If Jiang Chen's estimation was correct, it should be an Intermediate Six Tribulation.

However, there were good news as well. Different from the previous Heavenly Tribulation, Jiang Chen could control the timing of when this Heavenly Tribulation came. It could come whenever Jiang Chen wished for it to come, as long as he didn't break through to the Second Grade Combat King realm.

For Jiang Chen, this was no doubt a tremendous hidden weapon; a card hidden up his sleeve that could save his life. He had yet to forget how powerful the first Heavenly Tribulation he went through was, as it had instantly killed the guardian of the Demon King Palace. This time, it would be even more devastating, and perhaps it would be more than enough to kill many Combat Kings who had a higher cultivation than himself.

"I'll keep this devastating weapon a secret. When the time comes, I'll put it to good use."

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. There was no way he would call the Heavenly Tribulation now, as it would be a huge waste. He would rather wait for when he encountered some powerful enemies. At that point of time, calling the Heavenly Tribulation would be a really joyful moment.

“Buddy, how's your overall combat strength now?”

Big Yellow curiously asked. Before Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat King realm, he was able to kill Second Grade Combat Kings. Now that he had broken through to the Combat King realm, could he be able to kill Third Grade Combat Kings?

“With my current strength, no Third Grade Combat King is a match for me; I can kill them with ease. Also, I'm able to fight Fourth Grade Combat Kings equally. Only a Fifth Grade Combat King can hope to suppress me.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, and his face was filled with confidence.

Chapter 503 - The Eighth Tycoon

Big Yellow couldn't help but roll his eyes one more. He thought that he was frightening with his Dragon Horse bloodline, but when compared to Jiang Chen, the gap between them immediately became apparent. Big Yellow was a First Grade Demon King, and if he attacked with all his abilities and strength, he would be capable of kill a Second Grade Combat King. However, it was very difficult for him to kill any Third Grade Combat Kings. On the other side, Jiang Chen had only just broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm, and he was able to kill Third Grade Combat Kings, and fight against Fourth Grade Combat Kings.

In any case, Big Yellow had long ago gotten used to Jiang Chen's abnormal ability. He was back to normal after a brief moment of depression.

"I've finally broken through to the Combat King realm."

Jiang Chen let out an emotion-filled sigh. He had waited for this day for a long time; waited to become a Combat King. It meant that he had stepped onto a higher platform in his road of cultivation, it also meant that the Combat Emperor realm was no longer far ahead of him. Soon, he would be able to break through to the Saint realm, returning to the pinnacle of his previous life.

Most importantly, after breaking through to the Combat King realm, Jiang Chen was now able to properly use Spatial Energy, and put his Spatial Shift skill to good use. The Spatial Shift skill was a supreme movement technique. The put it bluntly, with this technique, if Jiang Chen wanted to run away, even a Sixth Grade

Combat King would not be able to catch up to him.

Raising his head, Jiang Chen saw more and more golden rays shooting from out the desolate island. The monk was obviously unable to control the energy leaking out from the Third Grade Minor Saint's sarira.

"That damn monk is creating such a ruckus! It's impossible for his enemies not to find him!"

Big Yellow gloomily said. Initially, he believed that if the monk could hide deep enough, those warriors from the four major powers might not be able to find him so easily. However, judging from the current situation, let alone those four powers, even ordinary people of the Chaotic Ocean would be able to discover his whereabouts with ease.

In the distance, two human cultivators were flying in the direction of this desolate island. They were actually just passing by this area. If it was in the past, all those who flew past these desolate islands would just go straight past them, and no one would stop by for even a single second. But now, as these two cultivators saw the bright light, they were immediately attracted to it.

"Look, what's going on over there?"

"It seems there is a treasure. Let's go and check it out."

After a brief discussion, both men turned around and began flying toward the source of the bright lights. Seeing this, Jiang Chen shook his head then turned to Big Yellow and said, "Big Yellow, it's time for you to perform."

"Kaka, they're just two small shrimps! Let this master dog handle them; I'll scare the shit outta them!"

While nodding his head, Big Yellow's huge body shot into the air. In just the blink of an eye, he had arrived in front of the two men. The two men were taken aback when they saw a big yellow dog suddenly appear in front of them. Although they were only Combat Soul warriors, they were still able to sense the strong Demon King aura coming from Big Yellow, causing their expressions to instantly change.

"Scram, or die!"

Bloated with pride, Big Yellow carried his head up high, portraying a look saying 'daddy here is the strongest existence underneath the heavens', while telling the two men with an arrogant tone.

Hearing his words, neither of the two dared to hesitate. They immediately turned around and fled, scared that they were too slow. What place was this? This was the Chaotic Ocean! The place with the most chaotic atmosphere, and this place was the most remote area of the Chaotic Ocean. Bumping into a Demon King in this place was definitely not something good. However, the Demon King had only asked them to scram. They truly felt that they were very lucky on this day.

In the following time, the ruckus caused by the monk absorbing the sarira became bigger and bigger. Bigger rays were flickering around the island, and one could even hear a faint, yet constant buzzing sound coming from within. Any cultivator passing by this area would definitely be attracted to it, and try to figure out what was going on. However, all of them were chased away by a big yellow dog. During this, there was even a First Grade Combat King who was attracted here, and a fierce fight erupted between him and Big Yellow. Of course, Big Yellow gained a complete victory over this warrior. After forcing the warrior to call him master dog three times, he set the poor guy free.

However, as too many people had passed by this area and left, they quickly returned with even more people. Three hours later, several figures could be seen flying toward here from all over the Chaotic Ocean, hovering around in the air and staring at the golden rays being emitted from the island. If not for Big Yellow blocking them with his mighty attitude, perhaps some of them would have already rushed over to the island.

“It’s that dog! Be careful, this dog is not to be trifled with, he can kill Combat Kings with a single bite! Since that dog is here, I’m guessing that the young white-clothed man is here as well.”

“Those golden rays look familiar to me... oh, I remember now! It has the same aura as the treasure that emerged on Heavenhawk Island! The monk took the treasure back then, so I think that the monk is hiding on that island.”

“Judging from this situation, that monk must have teamed up

with that youngster in white. If my guess is correct, that monk is currently in the midst of absorbing the treasure, while the young man and his dog are guarding him.”

Many people had recognized Big Yellow, and some even recognized the aura of the treasure.

“Haha, a good shot is soon arriving! Now that such a long time has passed, I bet the warriors of the four major powers have already arrived at the Chaotic Ocean. However, why hasn’t the monk left this area after receiving the treasure, and instead began absorbing it here? The warriors of the four major powers will definitely find him here, and at that point of time, an intense fight will be unavoidable.”

“That’s right. That monk has killed many geniuses from the four major powers. With their approach to matters, there is no way they will let this monk off the hook easily. Certain death is all that awaits that monk.”

“There is something that puzzles me though; why has that young man teamed up with that monk? Do they know each other? I don’t think so. I remember that he was a helper invited by Tan Lang, so he should be with the Asura Palace. However, this young man actually set the Heavenhawk Island Master free... he truly is a strange man.”

The desolate islands that no one usually cared for had now become the center of attention. No matter who it was, the monk, or the youngster in white, they had both become the most famous persons of the Chaotic Ocean. The number one Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean had killed many geniuses from the four major powers, and he was now publicly absorbing the treasure he had robbed. He was either courting death, or he had never put the four major powers in his eyes.

On one of the desolate islands, Jiang Chen's brows were furrowed tightly. The current situation was the worst of every possibility, and it looked like an intense battle was inevitable. Although Jiang Chen didn't like how the four major powers behaved, and their approach to handling matters, he had no intention of offending all four major powers in the Liang Province right after arriving at the Divine Continent. If he did, how was he going to spend his time in the Divine Continent?

But at the same time, Jiang Chen was a man with principles. Once he decided to do something, he would go all out for it. Thus, in order to repay the debt of gratitude he had for Patriarch Greenlotus, he didn't mind becoming the enemy of four major powers. In his previous life, he would be surrounded by enemies wherever he went. He had long ago gotten used to the days where he had to fight the world by himself, and he even missed the lofty sentiment he had when fighting all by himself.

In any case, he had decided to help the monk.

Rumble...

Right at this moment, an explosive sound could be heard from a distance, attracting the crowd's attention in an instant. A large crack had suddenly appeared in the air, and three men shot out from the void. They were all Combat Kings. Two of them were weaker, while the one in the middle was the strongest. He looked to be in his thirties; his body was tall and muscular, and his red hair was fluttering in the wind. He was portraying an arrogant look; an air of arrogant that only belonged to a genius. His combat strength? Shockingly, he was a Fourth Grade Combat King.

“They're from the Asura Palace! The mighty warriors of the Asura Palace are finally here!”

Someone cried out in shock.

Jiang Chen saw this group as well. He actually recognized two of these three men. They were Li Hao and Xiu Rui. However, he didn't know who the Fourth Grade Combat King who came with them was. And he also didn't see Tan Lang, causing him to feel worried.

“The Asura Palace is the fastest; they're the first to arrive here. That man is the Eighth Tycoon of the Asura Palace, Ling Yi. I heard he just broke through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm not long ago, and is a man with frightening approaches. It's hard for him to find a suitable match among the same level as himself. I'm guessing that monk is truly finished this time.”

“Now that the Eighth Tycoon Ling Yi has personally come here, that monk will certainly face death! The monk is only a Third Grade Combat King, so how could he possibly be a match for Ling

Yi, who is a Fourth Grade Combat King? Even with the help of that young man and dog, it's still useless. The gap between their cultivation bases is simply too huge!"

"Many geniuses of the Asura Palace were killed. If not for this, the Eighth Tycoon wouldn't have come here personally."

The people in the crowd were shocked. With the presence of the Eighth Tycoon, it looked like a good show to watch would appear.

Ling Yi and the other two men soon arrived near the desolate island. Resting his sharp glance on the golden rays being emitted from the island, Ling Yi asked, "Is this the place?"

"Yes. Those golden rays have the same aura as that treasure. That monk must be hiding on this island."

Li Hao said while gritting his teeth tightly. One of his arms had nearly been crushed by that monk, and he had yet to recover. So, when he thought of that damn monk, he felt a strong desire to rip him into a thousand pieces.

"Hmph! He actually dared kill those of the Asura Palace? He's courting death!"

Ling Yi coldly harrumphed. With a sway of his body, he flew straight toward the source of the golden rays. Suddenly, a white beam shot up from below, preventing him from flying any further.

It was a young white-clothed man. As for Big Yellow, he was now hovering on the other side. Although he wasn't a match for this Ling Yi, he could still defeat both Li Hao and Xiu Rui with ease.

Ling Yi was startled by the fact that someone were preventing him from flying any further. Staring at the young man in white who had suddenly appeared in front of him, Ling Yi said with a cold voice, "Who are you, and how dare you block mine, the Tycoon's path?"

Ling Yi furrowed his brows.

"Senior disciple Ling, he is that Jiang Chen, the person who set the Heavenhawk Island Master free."

Li Hao quickly told him Jiang Chen's background. His hatred for Jiang Chen was not any less than his hatred of the monk. Previously, Jiang Chen had shamed his face in front of so many people, causing him to resent him.

"Oh? You're that helper invited by Tan Lang? I do want to ask you the reason for why you set that hawk free. However, let's put that matter aside for now. For the sake of you having previously helped the Asura Palace, I won't make a fuss about that issues. Now, get out of my way. I need to kill that monk."

Ling Yi was first surprised, then he continued speaking in an arrogant manner.

"I'm sorry, you can't touch that monk."

Jiang Chen said with a calm voice. However, his words brought a tremendous storm to the crowd, causing everyone to rest their eyes on Jiang Chen's face. Judging from his words, he wanted to help that monk and stand against Ling Yi? Was there something wrong with his brain?

Chapter 504 - Fighting Against A Fourth Grade Combat King

Everyone felt strange about this, wondering what the background of this young man was. At the beginning, he stood together with the Asura Palace in the fight against the Heavenhawk Island Master. But now, he had actually switched teams, and was helping that monk against the Asura Palace. Which side did he really belong to?

The crowd was left speechless, as no one knew why this young man suddenly switched sides and was helping that monk, even going as far as to offend the Asura Palace for him. No, it wasn't just the Asura Palace, the other three major powers were also hunting that monk, it was just that they had yet to arrive at this place.

Many people were thinking similar thoughts. Although this young man possessed extraordinary talent and incredible skills, it seemed that his brain was not functioning properly. Even if he really wanted to help, he should at least be able to understand how big the gap between him and his enemy was. His enemy was clearly a Fourth Grade Combat King, so poking his head out to help the monk at this moment was no different from courting death.

“Kid, what did you just say? You want to help that monk? Are you honestly seeking death?”

Li Hao immediately scolded Jiang Chen. He was left speechless the last time when Jiang Chen humiliated him, but everything was different now. With Ling Yi present at the scene, he had no fear of Jiang Chen.

“You have no idea who you’re facing. This is the Eighth Tycoon of the Asura Palace, how dare you stand against him? I really don’t know where you’ve found your courage. Our Tycoon has forgiven you for setting the Heavenhawk Island Master free, however, not only do you not feel grateful for this, you still want to get involved. It looks like you’re tired of living in this world.”

Xiu Rui also didn’t want to miss this chance to retaliate.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, I can pretend that I never heard your words. Now, as long as you scam from my sight, I promise I won’t kill you.”

Ling Yi coldly harrumphed and said to Jiang Chen.

“I’m sorry. I, Jiang Chen am actually reluctant to have an unpleasant relationship with Tycoon and the Asura Palace. As long as Tycoon promises me not to cause any trouble for this monk, we will still be friends. What do you think?”

Jiang Chen responded. One way or another, he had decided to help this monk today. At this moment, the monk was at the most critical moment of his absorption of the sarira, and if he was disturbed, he would definitely suffer a backlash, of even a Qi Deviation, which was devastating.

“Where did this kid come from? Why is he poking his nose into the business of others?”

“Sigh... he really is a typical example of a reckless young man. Don’t tell me he thinks that with his strength, he can really fight against the Eighth Tycoon of the Asura Palace?”

“None of the Thirteen Tycoons are kind men, and the same goes for this Ling Yi. By not giving this Ling Yi any face, I’m sure that this young man will suffer later on.”

It was a plain eye-sore for all the spectators to see this situation. In their minds, this young white-clothed man was unable to appreciate favors, and didn’t know his own limits.

“Hmph! Where did this reptile come from? How dare you get in my way? I heard you’re capable of killing Second Grade Combat Kings, but don’t think for a moment that you can look down on everything just because of that mere achievement! Today, I, the Eighth Tycoon will let you know that there is always someone stronger than you out there.”

Ling Yi coldly harrumphed once more. Without hesitating, he forcefully punched out. The punch forcefully ripped apart the space as it crushed its way toward Jiang Chen’s head.

The distance between Ling Yi and Jiang Chen was really close, and as Ling Yi was incredibly fast, together with his Four Grade Combat King cultivation, if his target was an ordinary man, no one would be able to withstand this mighty blow, let alone dodge it. With just this punch alone, their head would explode in an instant.

But of course, Jiang Chen was no ordinary man. After breaking through to the Combat King realm, he was able to fight Ling Yi.

Pa!

Within a split second, Jiang Chen punched out to counter the attack, causing his fist to collide with Ling Yi's. Right at the center of the collision, the tremendous force caused the space to explode into a void, sending frightening shockwaves in all directions.

Tap.

This was a melee exchange, and no fancy techniques were involved. Ling Yi sensed an enormous force coming from Jiang Chen's punch, forcing him to take a step back before stabilizing his body.

On the opposite side, Jiang Chen's body could only be seen briefly swaying. Since he was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, his body grew stronger with every passing second, giving him a nearly indestructible body. When fighting a melee battle, no one would be a match for him.

"What?!"

Ling Yi who wore a lofty expression simply cried out in shock. The way he looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed. He never expected Jiang Chen to really withstand his punch, and not only that, this guy had actually forced him to take a step back. This

was truly unbelievable.

Ling Yi rested his eyes on Jiang Chen's face, and kept examining him up and down. Gradually, his underestimation toward this young man disappeared. He realized that Jiang Chen's aura was actually that of a First Grade Combat King, and not a Combat Soul warrior like Li Hao and Xiu Rui had told him previously.

“How could this be possible? How did he suddenly become so strong?”

“He has broken through to the Combat King realm! Damn it, he was just a peak Combat Soul warrior moments ago, how come he broke through to the Combat King realm so quickly?! This is absurd!”

Li Hao and Xiu Rui's eyes went wide, and they stared at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a ghost. In just a few hours, this guy had broken through to the Combat King realm from the Late Combat Soul realm. This could no longer be described as groundbreaking news, it was simply frightening.

However, something even more terrifying had just happened right before their eyes. Even though Jiang Chen had become a First Grade Combat King, that didn't mean he could defeat a Fourth Grade Combat King, as there was a huge gap of three grades between them. This was absurd!

“Oh heavens, this young man is really amazing! When he struck and killed a Second Grade Combat King earlier, I already thought

he was very frightening! But now, he's actually capable of fighting Ling Yi, a Fourth Grade Combat King!"

"If I remember correctly, he was only a peak Combat Soul warrior back on the Heavenhawk Island, but now, he has become a First Grade Combat King! Could he really have done that in just a few hours? Comprehend the Spatial Laws and step into the Combat King realm? How could this be possible?"

"Extraordinary! What a monster, no wonder he has the guts to stand in the way of Ling Yi! He actually has the strength to do so!"

Everyone were shocked by what they saw. As the saying went; an expert could always show his might with just the simplest move. Although Jiang Chen and Ling Yi had only exchanged one attack in a very short amount of time, the result was obvious to all. In the fight just now, Jiang Chen had clearly gained the upper hand.

"Jiang Chen, do you really want to stop me?"

Ling Yi asked with an angry expression.

"Don't tell me I'm not qualified."

Jiang Chen replied with a cold sneer. Since he couldn't avoid this fight, there wasn't much to say. If they wanted a fight; just fight!

“Alright. Don’t think you can defeat me just by gaining a little bit of an upper hand in our fight just now. I’ll let you know how huge the gap between a First Grade Combat King and a Fourth Grade Combat King is!”

Ling Yi unleashed his energy, emitting powerful waves from his body, causing the surround space to violently fluctuate. His red hair was fluttering in the strong wind, and he was portraying an extremely tyrannical air.

"Firmament Hand!"

Ling Yi suddenly let out a raging roar and unleashed a skill called the Firmament Hand. It was an extremely dazzling, huge golden hand, and it carried a powerful spatial force, and it was shrouding toward Jiang Chen’s head.

It was a mighty strike, and it perfectly carried the incredible force of a Fourth Grade Combat King. Ling Yi was no ordinary Fourth Grade Combat King. As one of the 13 Tycoons, he was a man with extraordinary talent, and it was hard for him to find an equal opponent in the same grade as himself.

Faced with this terrifying Firmament Hand, no signs of fear could be found on Jiang Chen’s face. While maintaining the same indifferent expression, he waved his hand and countered the attack with his True Dragon Palm, causing it to collide with the Firmament Hand.

Boom!

The space shook violently, and right at the center of the collision, the air was torn into a small crack, causing spatial storms to leak out from the crack. This caused the hearts of those who watched the scene to shiver.

Firmament Hand vs. True Dragon Palm. It was a tie.

A powerful fighting intent surged out from Jiang Chen. As he had just broken through to the Combat King realm, he was filled with vigorous spirit. Now that he had to fight a Fourth Grade Combat King, his combat strength was completely ignited.

"Nine Solar Fingers!"

Jiang Chen shouted, becoming the first to strike as he unleashed a frightening finger skill. At this point, the true frightening ability of the Nine Solar Fingers had finally shown up. With his current strength, he could instantly unleash eight huge golden fingers toward Ling Yi.

Ling Yi's expression instantly changed. Jiang Chen's mighty performance had gone beyond his imagination. Without hesitating, he stretched both hands into the air and began drawing; unleashing a mysterious seal, sending it toward the Nine Solar Fingers.

Subsequently, an intense battle erupted between two men. The Eighth Tycoon was incomparable to any ordinary humans, and he had an array of incredible skills. On the other side, Jiang Chen was

not any weaker, as both of them were locked up in a tough fight, where neither seemed to be able to defeat the other with ease.

Many people were shocked. In the eyes of these people, although both men were locked up in a tough fight, it was in fact Jiang Chen that showed them a frightening ability. Jiang Chen was after all just a First Grade Combat King, and he had just broken through to this realm not long ago. It was imaginable, if Jiang Chen was at the same grade as Ling Yi, perhaps Ling Yi would be unable to withstand even a single strike from Jiang Chen, and instantly die right when the battle began.

“This is really terrifying! Where did this guy come from? He is definitely not from any of the four major powers!”

“It’s impossible for a genius like this to not be known by many, and ordinary clans would never be able to cultivate such an amazing genius. Could he be from one of the superpowers in the Xuan Region?”

“It looks like it’ll be impossible for Ling Yi to break through Jiang Chen’s blockage and kill that monk. However, the warriors from the other three major powers will soon be here, and at that point of time, that monk is still going to meet his end.”

No one were able to remain calm. A scene like this had shaken their world. However, for these ordinary cultivators, being able to personally witness a high-level battle like this was something really satisfying.

“Damn it, how come he suddenly became so strong?!”

Li Hao said while gritting his teeth.

“Jiang Chen is now tied down by the Tycoon. Let’s go fight that monk together. That monk is currently absorbing the treasure, so he must be lacking the energy to strike back. As long as we kill that monk, the treasure will be ours. This is our main objective for coming here.”

Xiu Rui’s eyes flickered. On the surface, they were here to kill that monk and avenge the disciples of the Asura Palace, but underneath, they were actually here for that treasure.

Li Hao felt that Xiu Rui’s words made sense. However, before he agreed with the suggestion, he was able to see a big yellow dog staring fiercely at them, causing him to shudder.

“I think it would be best if we gave up on that idea. Look at that dog, that dog is not to be trifled with.”

Li Hao said.

Xiu Rui turned around and saw Big Yellow as well, and he felt like a huge bucket of cold water had just been poured onto his head. He had yet to forget, this dog was able to fight against the Heavenhawk Island Master equally. So, with their strength, if they flew toward the island where the monk was located, there was no

way they could be a match for this big yellow dog. It would truly be a sad event if they were killed by his bite.

Chapter 505 - Kill

Li Hao and Xiu Rui dared not do anything reckless, and that was actually the most accurate decision they had made. In fact, they should feel lucky, as Big Yellow didn't take this opportunity to attack them.

On the other side, Jiang Chen and Ling Yi were locked down in a fierce fight. The more Ling Yi fought, the more shocked he became. He could hardly imagine how a young man who had just broken through to the Combat King realm could have such formidable combat strength. With his strength, he could get past the blockage of this young man, let alone kill the monk.

“Jiang Chen, I'll give you one last chance. As long as you leave now, I can write off everything you've done before. If not, I'll have to fight with my real strength!”

Ling Yi roared out. In the following second, a Dharma Wheel appeared in his hand. The wheel was repeatedly spinning and showing off its razor sharp edge, causing it to look extremely frightening. Through the first round of fighting, Ling Yi realized that it would be impossible for him to defeat Jiang Chen with his current strength. However, no matter what, he couldn't just back down, so he was left with one last option; to use his King Weapon.

“You talk too much trash.”

Jiang Chen completely ignored Ling Yi's words. Once more, he took the initiative to strike. Using the Azure Dragon's Five Steps,

he took a step toward Ling Yi. Since he had met a strong opponent, he wanted to take this opportunity to have a good fight, so there was no reason for him back down. Also, if he did back down now, the monk would certainly die.

When the Azure Dragon's Five Steps stepped onto Ling Yi's Dharma Wheel, Jiang Chen immediately felt a numbing sensation striking his feet, and was knocked away in the following second. However, he wasn't surprised to see this coming. Ling Yi was a Fourth Grade Combat King, and his King Weapon was much stronger than ordinary King Weapons, that's why its strength was so powerful. Jiang Chen was only a First Grade Combat King, and although he could fight a Fourth Grade Combat King, it was very difficult to suppress his opponent. Also, he had only taken the first step. If it was the third step, the result against Ling Yi's Dharma Wheel would certainly be a tie.

In fact, after Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat King realm, he became able to take the fourth step.

"Hmph. You've overestimated your strength."

After knocking Jiang Chen back with one strike, Ling Yi coldly harrumphed, the once again attacked Jiang Chen with his Dharma Wheel. With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen moved gracefully like a swan, yet quickly using the Spatial Shift skill in the most effective way. He didn't take out his Heavenly Saint Sword, but just kept using the Azure Dragon's Five Steps.

Rumble...

When Jiang Chen finally took the fourth step, Ling Yi was knocked back. The huge Dharma Wheel was violently trembling, and cracks had even started appearing on it as a result of the enormous force. This truly frightened Ling Yi. When he looked at the damaged Dharma Wheel, a tremendous storm began raging across his mind. Using a combat skill and attacking with pure fleshly strength, Jiang Chen could actually destroy a King Weapon! This was absurd!

Right at this moment, another loud explosive noise was heard from the distance. Soon after, two figures showed up. One of them was Ye Hui from the Invincible Sect, and the other man was naturally a genius from the Invincible Sect as well. However, compared to Ye Hui, he was many times strongest. His overflowing aura was not any weaker than Ling Yi's.

“Look! The Invincible Sect is here! That man is Ye Wuyou, Ye Hui's cousin. He is a rare genius of the Invincible Sect, and his overall strength is equal to that of the Eighth Tycoon.”

“Ye Wuyou is here, that means another Fourth Grade Combat King has arrived. I'm sure that Jiang Chen won't be able to stop both of them by himself.”

“It's getting merrier! The geniuses of the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace have yet to show; it'll be even merrier when they arrive.”

No spectators would complain about a grand event. Thus, excited expressions began emerging on the many faces in the crowd. The mighty warriors of the Asura Palace and Invincible Sect were here, and presumably, the men from the other two major powers would be here soon.

After Ye Wuyou and Ye Hui arrived, they were taken aback by the intense battle between Jiang Chen and Ling Yi.

“It’s him! Why is he fighting against Ling Yi?”

Ye Hui was startled for a moment.

"You know this guy?"

Ye Wuyou rested his eyes on Jiang Chen’s face. The more he looked at this young man, the greater his shock became. This was because he could clearly sense Jiang Chen’s cultivation. This young man was just a First Grade Combat King, but he was able to lock Ling Yi down himself in a fierce fight.

“He is the young man who helped the Asura Palace defeat six Pirate Lords, and later set the Island Master free. He was only a peak Combat Soul warrior at that time, but now he’s a Combat King, and he can even fight equally against Ling Yi! This is unbelievable! Where did this monster come from?”

The shock in Ye Hui’s mind was not any less than the shock in Li Hao and Xiu Rui. When faced with an existence who could break

through to the Combat King realm in just a few hours, there was no way they could remain calm.

“Brother Ye, that monk is hiding on that desolate island. This guy is his partner, help me kill him first!”

Ling Yi immediately shouted upon seeing Ye Wuyou.

“Haha, the Eighth Tycoon of the Asura Palace can’t even defeat a First Grade Combat King? I can see that you two are having fun right now, so I won’t disturb you. Let me handle that monk for you.”

Ye Wuyou laughed loudly. What a joke, how could he let such a good opportunity slip away? He wouldn’t bother helping Ling Yi fight Jiang Chen, he instead take this opportunity to go ahead and kill that monk and seize his treasure.

Swoosh!

With great speed, Ye Wuyou shot toward the desolate island, aiming for the source of those golden rays. However, although he was quick, someone was quicker than him. Jiang Chen who was in the middle of his fight against Ling Yi had blocked Ye Wuyou’s path like a shooting star. With the combination of the Spatial Shift and Nine Phantom Wolves, he could stop whoever he wanted to stop.

"Someone like you should just scram back to where you came

from!”

Without saying another word, Jiang Chen kicked toward Ye Wuyou’s face. With quick reflexes, Ye Wuyou forcefully punched out toward Jiang Chen’s incoming kick.

"Get lost!"

Ye Wuyou was really angry, and he immediately followed up the attack with another palm strike, crushing its way toward Jiang Chen.

Seeing this, Jiang Chen originally intended to counter the attack with his True Dragon Palm, but a bright idea suddenly came into his mind. He allowed Ye Wuyou’s palm to hit him without countering with any powerful attack, just pretending to block the attack with his punch.

Boom!

Jiang Chen was thrown from the sky onto a desolate island. He was staggering, and nearly fell down to the ground, which made it look like he was in a very bad state. In the distance, Big Yellow was startled upon seeing what happened to Jiang Chen, but a sinister grin quickly emerged on his face.

“Buddy is really cunning.”

Big Yellow was very familiar with Jiang Chen. With Jiang Chen’s

current strength, it would be difficult for him to defeat Ye Wuyou, and it was meaningless to keep fighting like this. So, in order to bring a different result, there was only one possible method; the Earth Jail!

Jiang Chen pretended that he had lost this fight in an attempt to lure Ye Wuyou or Ling Yi to kill him on this island. As long as they got close enough to the ground, Jiang Chen would be able to unleash the Earth Jail, and eventually bring them a huge surprise.

"So weak."

Ye Wuyou loftily glared at Jiang Chen with a disdainful expression on his face. However, he was too lazy to fly down and kill this young man, and thus continued flying toward the island the monk was located on.

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen flew into the sky once again. With great speed, he once again blocked Ye Wuyou's path, saying, "Want to step onto that desolate island? Not possible unless you defeat me first!"

"Haha, brother Ye, this kid is a big nuisance! I think it would be best if you kill him before anything else!"

Ling Yi started laughing. After that, he once again wielded his Dharma Wheel and attacked Jiang Chen.

"I don't need your help! I'll kill him myself!"

Ye Wuyou became angry. He immediately unleashed another palm strike, aiming at Jiang Chen.

Ling Yi and Ye Wuyou's attacks arrived at the same time. Jiang Chen dared not neglect these attacks. He pretended to be in a flurry, and was pressed by the powerful force, causing him to descend onto the island once again.

"You're just like an ant to me, who gave you the audacity to try and stop me? Since you don't cherish your life, I'll kill you first, then that monk."

As expected, Ye Wuyou bit the bait. He transformed into a trail of light and shot down from the sky, and landed on the desolate island.

"Die!"

Ye Wuyou's eyes flickered with cruelty. However, before he could do anything, something strange suddenly occurred. A tremendous force erupted from the ground beneath his feet and transformed into an invisible jail, trapping Ye Wuyou within.

Ahh!

Ye Wuyou cried out in shock. As he was caught unprepared and was pressured by the tremendous force, he nearly fell down to the ground face first. The force came without any prior signs, and he

just didn't have enough time to respond.

"Break!"

Ye Wuyou cried out loud, and a powerful force rushed out from his body, instantly ripping the Earth Jail apart. From the time the Earth Jail's force fell onto his body, it had only taken him a split second to break it. However, for Jiang Chen, even if he was just given a split second, it was more than enough.

Right when Ye Wuyou broke the jail, Jiang Chen appeared above his head. He moved with miraculous steps, and illusionary dragoons were flashing around with loud explosive sounds. Jiang Chen immediately took four steps.

Argh...

As Ye Wuyou had just used all his strength to break the jail, he temporarily lacked the strength to defend against the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. Thus, after letting out a miserable cry, half of his body was buried into the ground by Jiang Chen's powerful steps.

Blergh.

Ye Wuyou threw up a mouthful of blood. He was bristled with anger and was furiously roaring out. However, once Jiang Chen gained the upper hand, he would never give his enemy the chance to fight back. So, when Ye Wuyou fell into Jiang Chen's trap, it

also meant that death was inevitable for his enemy. Even if it was a Fourth Grade Combat King, there was no way he could escape this destiny.

The Heavenly Saint Sword appeared and turned into a deadly sword beam above Ye Wuyou's head. Without hesitating, it instantly chopped down.

No...!

A cry of hopelessness came from Ye Wuyou's mouth. However, it suddenly came to a stop, as his head was sliced in half by Jiang Chen's sword.

"What?!"

Ling Yi instantly cried out. His eyes went wide, as if he had just seen the craziest scene in his entire life. Fast, it was too fast! From the time when Ye Wuyou landed on the desolate island until he was killed by Jiang Chen, it had only last the time of one breath! When Ling Yi finally reacted, Ye Wuyou was already dead.

"Oh heavens, Ye Wuyou is dead! How can this be possible?!"

"There must be something wrong with my eyes! Ye Wuyou, a Fourth Grade Combat King has just been killed in an instant by that young man! How did he do it?! How come I couldn't see anything?!"

“So brutal! Ye Wuyou is dead! How can that young man be so strong?!”

Everyone were struck with great shock, and their eyes were opened up wide. If it was Jiang Chen who got killed, nobody would feel shocked at all. At most, they would sigh a few times. However, since it was Ye Wuyou who was killed by Jiang Chen, it no doubt brought a tremendous storm to the crowd, and people found it difficult to accept this turn of events.

Chapter 506 - The Monk Emerges

Ye Wuyou had died. Although this mighty genius from the Invincible Sect had just made his debut, he had instantly been killed by Jiang Chen. No doubt, this was truly ironic. An unsightly expression emerged on Ye Hui's face, as well as fear. His cousin was a Fourth Grade Combat King, and he never dreamt that Ye Wuyou would one day die in this Chaotic Ocean, killed by a young man who was just a First Grade Combat King.

"How did this happen? He killed Ye Wuyou! How can he be so strong?"

"How did he do it?"

Li Hao and Xiu Rui's faces had both turned extremely pale. What just happened made them feel as if they were dreaming, especially Li Hao. Not long before this, when he met Jiang Chen for the first time, he hadn't even bothered giving Jiang Chen a second look, and only treated him as an ordinary helper invited by Tan Lang.

"What a pity."

On the desolate island, when looking at Ye Wuyou who had been sliced in half, Jiang Chen inwardly felt pity. A Fourth Grade Combat King; a mighty genius of the Invincible Sect, this guy must have had a huge amount of treasures. But unfortunately, those treasures had all vanished following Ye Wuyou's death. Jiang Chen had no confidence in taking control of Ye Wuyou's Qi Sea before killing him, robbing him of his treasures.

With his First Grade Combat King cultivation, he had killed this Fourth Grade Combat King using a brilliant strategy and sneak attack, but he had no chance to control Ye Wuyou's Qi Sea.

After that, Jiang Chen raised his head and threw his glance at Ling Yi in the sky, who now wore an unsightly expression. Then, with a loud voice he said, "Tycoon of the Asura Palace, did you see what just happened? This is the consequence of your actions. I suggest you get the hell outta here."

Jiang Chen's provocation caused Ling Yi's expression to become even more unsightly. At the same time, an angry look emerged on his face. He was a man with great status; the Asura Palace's Eighth Tycoon! No matter where he went, he would be the most respectable person. Not once in his life had someone humiliated him like this.

"Jiang Chen, don't think you can defeat me after killing Ye Wuyou! One way or another, I'm going to kill that monk today!"

After saying that, Ling Yi once again started flying toward the desolate island where the monk was located. He had seen how Jiang Chen killed Ye Wuyou. Jiang Chen had borrowed the Earth's Force, catching Ye Wuyou unprepared. Indeed, the ability to borrow Earth's Force was really strong, and Ling Yi dared not underestimate it. However, since he had learned Jiang Chen's tactic now, he wouldn't act like an idiot and try to kill Jiang Chen on the ground. As long as they were fighting in the sky, Jiang Chen's sneak attack was completely useless.

"Hmph!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. His body swayed, and he shot into the sky once more, blocking Ling Yi's path. Since Ling Yi now knew about the secrets of the Earth Jail, it looked like they only way left to fight him was face to face. No matter what, he had to protect the monk.

Therefore, an intense battle once again erupted between the two men.

A few minutes later, another two groups arrived. Two were from the Peerless Sword Faction, while the other two were from the Heavenly Devil Palace. One of the men from either group had previously been at the Heavenhawk Island, and they were here to lead the way. The other was a mighty warrior; both of them being Four Grade Combat Kings.

"Look! That's Ruan Xiong from the Peerless Sword Faction, and Tu Ran from the Heavenly Devil Palace! Both of those men are really strong!"

"Ruan Xiong and Tu Ran are Fourth Grade Combat Kings, and no ordinary geniuses can compare with them."

The arrival of Ruan Xiong and Tu Ran once again brought a great storm to the scene. Their purpose for coming here was clear. First, kill the monk and avenge their fallen fellow disciples; second, seize the treasure from the monk.

After Ruan Xiong and Tu Ran arrived, they immediately saw Jiang Chen and Ling Yi who were enveloped in a fierce fight. Upon learning who Jiang Chen was from some random spectators, they were struck with great shock as well. After that, they spotted Ye Wuyou's dead body on one of the desolate islands.

“That's Ye Wuyou from the Invincible Sect! He was killed? Who did that?”

Ruan Xiong was greatly alarmed.

“That Jiang Chen did it! He used a dirty trick and ambushed my cousin!”

Words spewed out through Ye Hui's tightly clenched teeth. After that, he continued explaining what happened just now in detail.

“Where did this Jiang Chen come from? And how is he so strong?”

Tu Ran was astonished.

“This guy actually dares to stand against the four major powers, he is really seeking death.”

Ruan Xiong said.

“You two! Since you're here, why are you still standing there

without doing anything?! Let's kill this guy first! Or else, none of us can get close to that monk!"

Ling Yi who was in the middle of fighting Jiang Chen shouted at Ruan Xiong and Tu Ran.

The two men looked at each other and nodded their heads at the same time. They could tell how frightening Jiang Chen was after learning that Ye Wuyou had been killed by him in an instant. Not only was he a man with overpowering strength, he also possessed incredible speed. If he really wanted to protect the monk, it would be really difficult for others to get close to the monk. That was unless they all teamed up and killed Jiang Chen first.

Both men unleashed their energy, then turned into two beams of light and shot toward Jiang Chen. Now, Jiang Chen had to fight three Fourth Grade Combat Kings by himself. No matter how strong he was, the situation was incredibly bad for him right now.

Houu!

At this moment, Big Yellow finally made his move. This dog was definitely an existence that no one could afford to ignore. Although he was unable to defeat Fourth Grade Combat Kings, he could still cause them some trouble with his speed.

A dragon horn was partly visible on top of Big Yellow's head, and lightning bolts could be seen flickering around it. It was a sign that he was ready to strike at any time.

Swoosh!

A pair of illuminating wings spread out on Big Yellow's back. In a split second, he blocked Ruan Xiong's path.

“Where the hell did this dog come from? Get lost!”

Without saying anything else, Ruan Xiong immediately waved his hand and slapped toward Big Yellow.

“Kaka, call me grandfather and I'll leave!”

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out. A never before seen halo emerged from his head as he slammed into Ruan Xiong.

Bam!

Big Yellow was no match for Ruan Xiong's attack, and was thus slapped away. However, as his body was incredibly strong, he was like an undefeatable cockroach. After being slapped away, he simply turned around and charged toward Ruan Xiong once more.

On the other side, following the moment where Tu Ran joined the fight against Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen was instantly brought to a disadvantageous position. Wielding the Heavenly Saint Sword in one hand, and moving with the Spatial Shift skill, he repeatedly dashed between Ling Yi and Tu Ran. The situation looked extremely dangerous. However, for those with a pair of discerning eyes, they noticed that even with the combined force of the two

men, it was not easy for them to defeat Jiang Chen.

The battle was becoming fiercer by the minute. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had teamed up to fight against three Fourth Grade Combat Kings. It was a chaotic scene. However, as the battle progressed, both of them were in a bad situation, which didn't seem promising.

“Let's go, we'll team up and enter that desolate island. Let's kill that monk together first. As for the treasure, we'll talking about it later.”

Ye Hui suggested to Xiu Rui and the other. He was furiously gritting his teeth. His cousin had been killed, and it was a huge loss for the Invincible Sect. Although he was unable to kill Jiang Chen, he could still kill that monk. By that, he would be able to vent the hatred brewing within his mind. In his eyes, Jiang Chen and the monk were part of the same team.

“Fine. Although that monk is a Third Grade Combat King, he is at the most critical moment of his absorption of the treasures. Once he is distracted by us, he will definitely suffer from Qi Deviation.”

Xiu Rui said in a cold manner.

In an instant, the five men came to an agreement. They immediately began flying toward the desolate island. At this moment, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had no time or energy to spare toward the monk's wellbeing. Thus, they could only

helplessly look on as these five men stepped onto the desolate island.

But suddenly, a shrill hawk cry could be heard from nearby. Soon after, everyone could see a black Combat Hawk appeared from thin air, instantly blocking Li Hao, Xiu Rui and the few others' path. He didn't care much about Ye Hui and the other two men, but rather, his eyes flickered with a ruthless expression as he stared at Li Hao and Xiu Rui.

"Heavenhawk Island Master!"

Li Hao and Xiu Rui both cried out in shock. They never thought they would meet the Heavenhawk Island Master at this place. When they sensed the cold killing intent being emitted from the Heavenhawk Island Master, their hearts were filled with fear. When they remembered the resentment between the Island Master and their Great Tycoon, as long as they weren't idiots, they would know why he had appeared at this moment.

He was a man who left life and death out of consideration, and had dedicated his entire life to revenge. As long as he had the opportunity to kill the men from the Asura Palace, he would appear without any hesitation.

"Geniuses from the Asura Palace, it's time for you to die!"

Without saying another word, Zhuang Fan raised the saber in his hand and slashed at Li Hao. He had actually been hiding for quite some time, and had witnessed the entire battle. His opinion of

Jiang Chen changed completely after seeing his fight against Ling Yi. Now, as an opportunity had arrived, he immediately revealed himself and wanted to kill both Li Hao and Xiu Rui.

Argh..!

There was no way Li Hao could be a match for Zhuang Fan, who was currently enraged. Also, he was caught by surprise, one of his arms were instantly sliced off, causing him to cry out in pain.

The situation instantly became even livelier. The arrival of Zhuang Fan was like a catalyst, causing the conflict to rise to a higher level. A few groups of men were fighting each other, some for different reasons. This truly brought a chaotic scene that could hardly be seen during normal days.

Jiang Chen was fighting Ling Yi and Tu Ran, Big Yellow was locked down in a fierce fight with Ruan Xiong, and Zhuang Fan had dragged Ling Yi and Xiu Rui into a battle. If nothing out of the ordinary happened, the two of them would soon be killed by Zhuang Fan.

On the other side, Ye Hui and the other two men had finally stepped onto the desolate island where the monk was located, and they were quickly able to find the monk. Right now, the monk was hovering in mid-air cross-legged, and golden Sanskrit were floating around his body, causing him to look like Buddha.

“Haha! Monk, it’s time to face your death!”

Ye Huo let out a loud laughter, and was the first one to charge toward the monk. At this very moment, the once tightly shut eyes of the monk suddenly opened up. Two golden beams shot out from his eyes, causing the space to vibrate.

At the same time, the monk's Kasaya trembled, as he forcefully struck his palm toward Ye Hui.

"What?!"

Ye Huo who was on course to attack suddenly cried out in shock, as when he sensed the force carried in the monk's palm, a shadow of death was instantly cast over his head. This was because, to his terror, this monk was no longer a Third Grade Combat King, but a Fourth Grade.

Unfortunately, Ye Huo was left with no time to think any further about this matter. The irresistible force of this palm strike collided with his body, instantly shattering him into thousands of pieces; turning him into a clump of blood mist. He disappeared from the sky above the desolate island.

"Amitabha. Mister, you're being reckless."

The monk placed both palms together in front of his chest. After that, he swiftly stood up, then completely unleashed his energy of a Fourth Grade Combat King. The vast Buddhist aura instantly covered the entire desolate island. Although he was just a Fourth Grade Combat King, his aura was equal to that of a Fifth Grade Combat King. When Ye Hui attacked just now, the monk had just

finished absorbing the sarira. Of course, he didn't manage to absorb it completely, he was only able to truly absorb a small part of it, allowing him to break through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. As Ye Hui was only a First Grade Combat King, there was no way he could be a match for this monk. Thus, he was miserably killed on the spot.

Chapter 507 - A Clean Sweep

The other two men from the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace had prepared to strike together with Ye Hui, but in that split second, both of them had been frightened to the point where their souls nearly fled their bodies. They had previously tasted how fierce this monk was, and now, Ye Hui, a genius who was about as strong as them, was instantly turned into a blood mist by this monk. If they still poked their noses into this, the consequences wouldn't be promising.

Without giving it a second thought, both men immediately turned around and ran, scared that if they were any slower, they would be killed on the spot.

“Amitabha. Since both misters are here, please don't leave in such a hurry. I need to send you to nirvana and release your souls from purgatory.”

The monk said with a gentle voice. However, that voice frightened the two men immensely. The monk was indeed a ferocious guy. He resolutely attacked them, unleashing two Buddhist seals at once. In the blink of an eye, the seals caught up with both geniuses.

Argh...!

Two miserable screams ran throughout the air, and both men followed the footsteps of Ye Hui. Even though they had tried their hardest to block the attack, there was no way they could withstand

this monk's frightening strike. As a result of them, both of them exploded into thousands of pieces.

At the same time, after Heavenhawk Island Master killed Li Hao, he held onto Xiu Rui tightly with his hand. Paying no attention to how this genius was struggling, he forcefully penetrated his sharp claws into Xiu Rui's skull. Xiu Rui's eyes were filled with fear as his life slowly faded away. Soon, he was left motionless.

"Haha..."

The Heavenhawk Island Master cruelly threw Xiu Rui's body far away, then he laughed out in satisfaction. His only purpose for living was revenge. Thus, he could only feel the meaning of his life whenever he killed those from the Asura Palace.

In the blink of an eye, all First Grade Combat King disciples of the four major powers were killed. Ye Wuyou from the Invincible Sect was dead, and now, even Ye Hui had been mercilessly killed by the monk. Although losing two Combat Kings was a matter of losing face for the Invincible Sect, it was an inestimable loss for the Ye Family.

"Haha, the monk has finally emerged from seclusion! Looks like he has become stronger as well. Will he attack us as well?"

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out. However, at the same time, he felt a little bit of worry. He was worried that the monk had no clue what was going on, and would simply just kill everyone on the spot without finding out who was the enemy, and who was friendly.

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He didn't share Big Yellow's worries. Buddhists' meditation skill was the most amazing amongst all. Even though the monk was absorbing the sarira in seclusion, he still had a clear grasp of what was going on in the outside world.

"Amitabha."

Taking a step forward, the monk flew out of the desolate island. Hovering in the sky, he glanced at the Heavenhawk Island Master. After that, he rested his eyes on top of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. A grateful expression was visible within his eyes.

Just as Jiang Chen had thought, even though the monk was absorbing the sarira in seclusion, he still had a clear grasp of what was going on in the outside world. It was an extremely dangerous situation for him, and if not for the fact that Jiang Chen had stood out and blocked all the warriors from the four major powers, the consequences he would have to face would be devastating.

The monk had no idea why Jiang Chen wanted to help him. However, he took great note of this kindness.

"You stinky monk! Are you just going to stand there and watch?! This master dog can't hold on much longer!"

Big Yellow shouted at the monk.

“Brother dog, do not worry, this poor monk is here to help.”

After saying that, the monk unleashed a beam toward Ruan Xiong; a golden beam that carried numerous symbols. In just the blink of an eye, it had arrived in front of Ruan Xiong.

“Fourth Grade Combat King, this monk is strong!”

Ruan Xiong’s expression change. He was told that this monk was only a Third Grade Combat King, so he knew that he could kill this monk with ease. However, he never expected that the monk could break through to the Four Grade Combat King realm in such a short amount of time. Thinking about it further, it must be the result of that treasure. This caused the greed in his mind to grow stronger.

Ruan Xiong did not dare underestimate this attack. He quickly took out his combat weapon and slashed it at the incoming beam.

The earth was trembling and the mountains were shaking; space was ripped apart by this tremendous force. Ruan Xiong felt as if he had just crashed into a gigantic mountain. The tremendous force violently shook the combat weapon, causing him to nearly lose grasp of it. His Qi and Blood was in a mess, causing him to feel extremely bad.

"Damn it, this monk is amazing!"

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. With his discerning eyes, he could easily

see the gap between Ruan Xiong and the monk. Although both men were at the same level, they were definitely not on the same spot. This monk could easily fight against those Fifth Grade Combat King geniuses.

Ruan Xiong was greatly frightened. After sensing the monk's frightening strength, without hesitating, he sliced through the air with his weapon, creating a huge spatial crack. With a sway of his body, he disappeared into the spatial crack. Apparently, as he realized that he would not be able to defeat this monk, he chose to run away.

However, the monk would never allow him to run away. Before the spatial crack closed up, the monk jumped into it as well.

Bam, bam, bam...

Some explosive sounds could be heard from various places in the air. In the following second, two figures dashed out from the void. It was the monk, and a bloody body that was carried in his hand. The body belonged to none other than Ruan Xiong.

“Oh heavens! This monk is too fierce! He has killed Ruan Xiong!”

“This is terrifying, really terrifying! Why are there so many abnormal people here?! He just killed a Fourth Grade Combat King!”

“All the warriors who came from the Invincible Sect and Peerless

Sword Faction are now dead, there are no survivors! This matter is getting worse by the minute! This has become much stronger now, perhaps even Ling Yi and Tu Ran will be unable to escape from his slaughter.”

No one could remain calm. The monk was too fierce. With the help of Jiang Chen, who was another abnormal geniuses, today was truly an unlucky day for those geniuses of the four major powers.

"Amitabha! I have sinned."

The monk appeared to be reciting something at Ruan Xiong's dead body in his hand. After that, he just casually threw away Ruan Xiong's body.

Many people felt like throwing up a mouthful of blood. This shameless monk was really cheap, he was plainly a tyrant who killed without blinking his eyes, but still wanted to pretend that he was an eminent monk who had compassion for all mankind.

When Ling Yi and Tu Ran saw how unstoppable the monk was, although they were currently fighting Jiang Chen, they chose to run away like Ruan Xiong. The two ripped apart the space at the same time, and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

"Trying to run?!"

Jiang Chen and the monk shouted out nearly at the same time. A sword wave was emitted from the Heavenly Saint Sword, bringing Jiang Chen into the void to chase after Ling Yi.

On the other side, the monk behaved even more fiercely. He unleashed the Fudo Seal straight into the void. With this strike, the space nearly collapsed.

Argh...

A miserable cry could be heard from the void. A leg covered in blood was brought out by the Fudo Seal, but Tu Ran was nowhere to be found. As a man from a devil power, Tu Ran possessed excellent abilities when it came to escape. However, although he managed to escape death, he had lost one of his legs to the monk. So, he was basically crippled.

Boom!

Jiang Chen jumped out from the void while holding an arm; Ling Yi's arm. As Ling Yi was running away in panic, he had lost his sense of direction. Jiang Chen would never let this golden opportunity slip away, so at the final moment, he sliced off one of Ling Yi's arms with his Heavenly Saint Sword. However, no matter what, Ling Yi was a genius at the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, and that allowed him to eventually run away. If not for the fact that Ling Yi was greatly frightened by the monk and had placed all his attention on running away, there was no way the current Jiang Chen could hurt him.

Chapter 508 – I'll Take Revenge For You

The entire scene was completely silent. No one dared breathe out loudly, as when they recalled what happened just a moment ago, a feeling of horror would surge up in their minds. It was frightening, extremely frightening.

All four major powers had suffered greatly today. When they were fighting for the treasure not long before this, many of their geniuses had been killed or wounded. Now, even two Fourth Grade Combat Kings had fallen, while Tu Ran and Ling Yi who had just escaped were severely injured. One had lost his arm, and the other had lost his leg. With the injuries caused by the Fudo Seal and Heavenly Saint Sword, even though they managed to stay alive, their cultivation bases would be greatly affected in the future.

“To all misters here, since you’re all still here, do you want this poor monk to set your souls free from purgatory?”

The monk turned around. Hearing what he said, all the bystanders instantly fled in all direction, each faster than the other. In just the blink of an eye, everyone had disappeared from the scene. Damn it, who would dare accept the way that monk set their souls free from purgatory?

After a moment of chaos, peace had once again returned to these desolate islands. The monk’s eyes finally landed upon Jiang Chen’s face. When he sensed Jiang Chen’s real cultivation base, he was incredibly shocked. Although he was busy absorbing the sarira, he was still aware of everything going on in the outside world; how Jiang Chen fought Ling Yi, how Ye Wuyou was killed by Jiang

Chen; he knew everything.

Even though the monk was a prideful man, he had to admit that Jiang Chen was the biggest genius he had ever seen. Although the monk could also kill those Fourth Grade Combat King geniuses, he himself was also a Fourth Grade Combat King. However, Jiang Chen was just a mere First Grade Combat King. If Jiang Chen was a Fourth Grade like him, perhaps he would be able to kill those Sixth Grade, or even Seventh Grade Combat Kings.

"Amitabha!"

The monk arrived in front of Jiang Chen. With a serious expression he said, "Mister, thank you for helping me. This poor monk is really grateful for the kindness you have shown."

The monk said with utmost sincerity. He was well aware of the situation. It was an extremely dangerous situation for him, and if Jiang Chen hadn't stood out to help him, he would have had to face devastating consequences.

"It looks like you have partly absorbed the sarira, bringing you to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. Congratulations."

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

"You know about sariras?"

The monk felt surprised. The Buddhist Sect of the Western

Region rarely interacted with other major regions, and they were decaying with each passing day. Ordinary eminent monks could never leave behind a sarira, so aside from this from the Buddhist Sect, no ordinary men could recognize a sarira. Although there were many geniuses from the four major powers who were fighting for this relic, they only thought it was a rare treasure, and none of them were able to recognize what it was. However, this young man had told him the name of this ‘treasure’, surprising the monk.

“A long time ago, I received some guidance from a patriarch of the Buddhist Sect, so I do have some kind of connection with Buddhism, which allowed me to recognize this sarira. It’s a sarira from a Third Grade Minor Saint, and it will no doubt bring you tremendous benefits. With just this sarira alone, you’ll have the possibility of breaking through to the Combat Emperor realm. Of course, it will take you some time, however, the benefits this sarira brings you is far beyond this. You’re cultivating orthodox Buddhist skills, and your body possesses the source of Buddhism, and this sarira will make that become even purer; improving your potential from your very roots. It is a marvelous treasure with endless benefits.”

Wearing a smile on his face, Jiang Chen explained. There was nothing he did not know underneath the heavens.

Jiang Chen’s words instantly stunned the monk. The way he looked at Jiang Chen had changed once again. There was no way he could remain calm, because even he didn’t know so much about this sarira. Originally, he used a Buddhist prediction skill and predicted that the sarira would emerge somewhere in the Chaotic Ocean, and that eventually brought him to this place. Although he

had finally obtained the sarira, all he could sense was the pure energy contained within, but he never knew it was the sarira of a Third Grade Minor Saint. Or, put it this way, this was the first time the monk had seen a sarira, and all he knew about sariras was what he had been told by someone else. If not, he wouldn't have recklessly tried to absorb the sarira in this place, which nearly brought him a devastating disaster.

“Mister, you're truly a man of miracles. This poor monk will never forget the kindness of saving my life today.”

The monk bowed slightly toward Jiang Chen. He felt that this young man was full of mysteries.

“Don't take it to heart, eminent monk. I, Jiang Chen travel the world with one principle; I do things according to my own liking. I've told you just now, I have some sort of connection with the Buddhist Sect. Since you were in trouble, I obviously had to offer my help.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Brother Jiang, don't call me eminent monk. My Buddhist title is Tyrant.”

For the first time, the monk Tyrant mentioned his title.

Big Yellow who had been keeping quiet at the side instantly burst out into laughter. Without hesitating, he immediately teased,

“Damn it, I thought the Buddhist path teaches you to keep a low profile? Shouldn’t your title be something like [Wu Neng](#) or [Wu Jing](#)? Perhaps even [Wu Se](#) or [Wu Wei](#)? Why did you give yourself such a domineering title?”

Wu Neng = Ability Enlightenment

Wu Jing = Clarity Enlightenment

Wu Se = Colorless

Wu Wei = Tasteless

Jiang Chen had mixed feelings as well. Why did this monk call himself Tyrant? He should’ve just called himself a bully. In any case, his behavior could never be related to that of an eminent monk. So, calling him a bully was rather suitable.

“This title was given by my master. I was very naughty when I was a child, and always caused trouble. That’s why my master gave me such an overbearing title. Thank you, master!”

The monk grinned, revealing an innocent smile on his face. Just by looking at his face right now, it was really difficult to relate him to a monk who slaughtered like it was nothing.

“You have a good master. However, don’t you guys think it’s a bit inappropriate for us to chitchat here?”

Big Yellow said.

“Brother dog is right. We can’t stay here any longer. Those four major powers will not forgive us for this matter easily. We need to

find a safe place, follow me.”

After saying that, Tyrant turned around and began flying. At this moment, the Zhuang Fan who was currently in the distance flew up to them and stopped right in front of them.

"You can follow us for now."

Jiang Chen told Zhuang Fan. He truly pitied Zhuang Fan's misfortune, and Zhuang Fan had basically nowhere to go. That's why he wanted to follow them. He wanted to borrow Jiang Chen's strength to get revenge.

"Thank you."

After Jiang Chen allowed him to follow along, a joyful expression emerged on Zhuang Fan's face.

After flying a huge circle around a secret place in the Chaotic Ocean, Tyrant was still unable to find a suitable place to stay. The Chaotic Ocean wasn't that big of an area, so it was really difficult to hide from the radar of the four major powers.

But if they chose to leave the Chaotic Ocean, there wouldn't be any places they could go either, as the entire Liang Province was ruled by the four major powers. Compared to that, the Chaotic Ocean was a... chaotic place, and the four major powers weren't in control of that region. Thus, it was relatively easier to hide.

“Guys, in my opinion, I think we can just go to the Heavenhawk Island.”

Zhuang Fan suggested.

Zhuang Fan's suggestion caused Jiang Chen's eyes to flicker. Without hesitating, he agreed to the suggestion, saying, “Zhuang Fan is right. Usually, the most dangerous place is also the safest. The turmoil started on this Heavenhawk Island, and who will think that we're actually hiding on the island?”

“That's right. I still have a few trusted subordinates on the island, and they can help us keep an eye on the situation.”

Zhuang Fan said.

The group instantly came to an agreement, then began flying toward Heavenhawk Island.

With their ability, it was extremely easy to enter Heavenhawk Island without being noticed by anyone.

Within a courtyard located on Heavenhawk Island, Zhuang Fan kneeled down in front of Jiang Chen and kowtowed a few times.

“I thought you were the master of this Heavenhawk Island, so why are you kowtowing to Brother Jiang?”

Tyrant curiously asked. He hadn't arrived at this place until the sarira's aura attracted him here, so he was unaware of what had happened before this.

“Young master, I beg you to get vengeance for Zhuang Fan. Zhuang Fan can only live for another year, and I'm willing to do anything for young master.”

Zhuang Fan begged with utmost sincerity.

Using his divine sense, Jiang Chen told Tyrant what happened to Zhuang Fan. After learning what happened to him, Tyrant furiously said, “Fuck! That Xiao Nanfeng is worse than a beast! This poor monk really wishes to set his soul free from purgatory!”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn't help but roll their eyes. Could this monk take some care of his image? No matter what, you're outwardly a monk! By saying ‘fuck’, are you just bringing shame to Buddhism?

“Zhuang Fan, I, Jiang Chen don't offer my help easily. But this time, I have decided to help you. I promise you, I will kill Xiao Nanfeng within a year, and let you die in peace.”

Jiang Chen said. After what happened today, the relationship between he and the Asura Palace could no longer be mollified. When they met again in the future, it would be a battle of life and death, same for this Great Tycoon. That's why Jiang Chen resolutely promised Zhuang Fan.

As Zhuang Fan had cultivated a secret demonic skill, he only had one year of life left. But for Jiang Chen, this wasn't a problem. Putting aside all the methods he had, just the Sacred Heavenly Demon skill, if he gave it to Zhuang Fan, not only could it help prolong his life, it could also bring him endless potential, allowing him to achieve unimaginable things in the future.

However, Jiang Chen didn't give it to him. It wasn't that Jiang Chen was a stingy man, but it was rather because it was unnecessary. Making a man live a longer life did not mean helping him. For Zhuang Fan, a longer life would only mean more suffering; life hurt more than death for him.

If not for his grudge keeping him alive, Zhuang Fan would have followed his wife and son's footsteps three years ago, and wouldn't have lived such a miserable life these past three years. He was waiting for revenge; once Xiao Nanfeng was dead, his grudge would be vented, which meant his lifelong dream would be achieved. After that, continuing to live in this world would be meaningless for him.

"Thank you, young master. If we can kill Xiao Nanfeng within a year, I, Zhuang Fan can die without any regrets."

Zhuang Fan's face was filled with agitated emotions. Although this young man in front of him was just a First Grade Combat King, and killing the powerful Xiao Nanfeng within a year seemed harder than stepping into heaven, Zhuang Fan had no doubts. He firmly believed that Jiang Chen could accomplish this seemingly impossible task.

Days before, Zhuang Fan would have never believed this man. But today, after witnessing how frightening Jiang Chen was, he was fully confident in Jiang Chen. A Combat King who wasn't even twenty years old, this alone proved how abnormally talented Jiang Chen was. A man who could break through to the Combat King realm in a few hours; an existence who could kill Fourth Grade Combat Kings as a mere First Grade Combat King, all of this made him believe that Jiang Chen could bring him justice. At least, Jiang Chen had a higher chance of doing so than himself.

Chapter 509 – Tan Lang's Pain

Although Jiang Chen had promised to help Zhuang Fan get revenge, his scalp went numb as he thought of the current situation he was faced with. It was the second day since he arrived at the Divine Continent, and the first time he came to the Liang Province. However, he had offended all four major powers of this place. With his current strength, he was unable to take on even a single major power. He couldn't even fight against any ordinary major powers.

Judging from the current situation, it seemed that the best option would be to temporarily hide in this Chaotic Ocean.

Not long after that, a great storm once again swept across the Chaotic Ocean. As expected by many people, the four major powers had sent even stronger men to this place, and that included Sixth Grade Combat Kings as well. This frightening might spread across the entire sky covering the Chaotic Ocean. The mighty warriors of the four major powers were all furious. They had ruled the Liang Province for many years, and not once in history had they suffered such a huge provocation. A monk and a young man, both of them had killed many geniuses of the four major powers in just one day, causing them a huge loss. This was something believed to be unimaginable in the past.

But unfortunately, although these mighty warriors had left no stone unturned in the Chaotic Ocean, they were unable to find any traces of Jiang Chen and the monk. They had searched many places, including the desolate islands where they were last seen. However, they had left out Heavenhawk Island. As expected by Jiang Chen, the most dangerous place was usually the safest place.

None of these mighty warriors expected the ones they were hunting to actually be hiding on Heavenhawk Island.

The warriors of the four major powers spent two whole days searching the Chaotic Ocean, but they were unable to find any news about Jiang Chen and the monk. In the end, they were forced to think that Jiang Chen and the monk had left the Chaotic Ocean.

It was actually understandable. After killing so many from the four major powers, if it was any other people, they would definitely choose to run away as soon as they could. Only idiots would stay behind.

“Hmph! Announce the orders to kill! I want to capture them even if they’ve grown a pair of wings!”

The Fifth Tycoon coldly harrumphed.

All the men from the four major powers were extremely angry. In the Liang Province, no one could kill those from the four major powers and remain alive.

Asura Palace – Within the Tycoon Palace.

Right now, more than twenty people were gathered in the palace, most of them young men. There were a few old men with powerful cultivation bases. They were obviously the Asura Palace’s elders, while the rest were the Tycoons.

An old man with gray hair was sitting at the topmost position together with a young man wearing a golden robe. The young man looked to be in his thirties, and he had a refined and cultured outlook, and he was portraying an impressive image. He was holding a folding fan in his hand, which made him look like a scholar. Sitting beside him was a fat old man who looked about sixty years old. His hair was all grey, but his cultivation base was powerful. No ordinary men could compare with him.

The old man had a long history with the Asura Palace, and his cultivation base was not any weaker than that of the young man who was holding a folding fan. However, from the way he looked at the young man, it wasn't hard to tell that the man who could say the final word in this palace was not the old man, but the young man who looked like a scholar.

Because this young man carried a big weight in the Asura Palace. He was the head of all Thirteen Tycoons, Xiao Nanfeng!

Right now, all the men inside the palace were wearing angry expressions, especially the Eighth Tycoon, Ling Yi. Once of his arms had been sliced off by Jiang Chen. Although he had partially recovered from his injuries, it would be impossible for his arm to regrow.

“Jiang Chen and that monk must have left the Chaotic Ocean. During the past two days, me and those warriors from the other three major powers have thoroughly searched the Chaotic Ocean, but we can't even find any traces of their aura.”

The Fifth Tycoon said in an angry manner.

“Damn it! We, the Asura Palace have never suffered such a tremendous loss before! It’s not just the matter of losing our men, but our face as well! We have to catch that guy and the monk, then cut them into a thousand pieces!”

Another Tycoon said with a loud voice and a stern expression.

"And that Heavenhawk Island Master!"

The Great Tycoon, Xiao Nanfeng said with a cold voice. Two ice-cold beams leaked out from his eyes. In fact, he inwardly felt depressed about these recent matters. All this time, everything he had done was kept in secret, and no one had ever found out about his dirty deeds, as he left no traces behind. He never expected that this Heavenhawk Island Master, who was actually Zhuang Fan, survived because of his own careless mistakes. This was ridiculous.

Now, Zhuang Fan’s ugly face had been exposed to so many people, bringing severe consequences to his reputation. This was something Xiao Nanfeng could never accept.

“That Heavenhawk Island Master is absolutely disgraceful! How dare he pull out such an absurd lie and defame our Great Tycoon; defame our Asura Palace! I’m guessing this was all purposely arranged by the other three major powers, they want to bring shame to the Asura Palace!”

Someone said.

“That’s right, I have the same thoughts as you. We all know what kind of person the Great Tycoon is, he would never do something like this.”

“We have to find these people and kill them all! We’ll let them know that no one who offends the Asura Palace will have a good ending!”

Everyone were filled with ‘righteous’ rage. No matter what their real thoughts were, outwardly, they still had to say something that could take care of Xiao Nanfeng’s face.

After all, within the Asura Palace, Xiao Nanfeng was a man who held the prime position. Basically, he was the man who had the final say in most petty matters within the Asura Palace. Thus, even the elders had to flatter Xiao Nanfeng.

Within a superpower like this, a man’s position would always be parallel to his strength. Xiao Nanfeng’s prestigious status didn’t come for free; he was a Ninth Grade Combat King, and was just one step away from the Combat Emperor realm. An existence like this, no matter where he went within the Liang Province, he could always do whatever he wanted.

“I was told that the young man, Jiang Chen is a friend of one of our core disciples.”

The gray-haired old man said.

“That’s right, he is Tan Lang’s friend. Two days ago, when some of the younger core disciples went to Heavenhawk Island to hunt for that Heavenhawk Island Master, that Jiang Chen was traveling together with Tan Lang. He helped us in the fight against the six Pirate Lords, but later, he was deceived by the Heavenhawk Island Master’s lie and allowed him to go free. In the end, he helped that monk and chose to stand against the Asura Palace. I have kept Tan Lang in captivity since.”

Ling Yi said. Whenever he sensed the pain coming from the wound of his now gone arm, he would instantly be filled with fury. Since he couldn’t find Jiang Chen, he naturally poured his fury onto Tan Lang.

"Bring Tan Lang here."

The gray-haired old man said loudly.

Ling Yi stretched his arm into the air and performed a grabbing gesture, instantly revealing a crack in space. He then pulled a man out from the other side of the spatial crack.

Plop.

Ling Yi casually waved his arm and tossed the man onto the ground. It was a powerful toss, causing the man to fall with a twisted body. The man’s body was full of scars, and there were

three wounds on his face that blood was still coming out from. He had obviously suffered torture before this meeting. However, no matter what, he never let out any groans.

"Tan Lang, let me ask you. What is your relationship with Jiang Chen?"

The elder asked.

"Friend. He saved my life."

Tan Lang said in a cold manner. He then ran his eyes across the surrounding scene. Every single person present was once an idol in his eyes; they were all at the height he dreamt about reaching. But now, his mind was filled with absolute disgust and disappointment.

During the past two days, Ling Yi had been torturing and brutally beating him, venting all of his grudge onto Tan Lang. Not only did this bring disappointment to Tan Lang, it also made him extremely sad. No matter what, he was a disciple of the Asura Palace, and he had once considered this place his home. But even so, he still had to face such unfair treatment.

Aside from this, in Tan Lang's mind, Jiang Chen was not to blame for this matter. In the beginning, Jiang Chen stood on the Asura Palace's side, and the reason why he traveled to the Chaotic Ocean was to help Tan Lang in his fight to become the 13th Tycoon. It was all because of Xiao Nanfeng's actions against Zhuang Fan that Jiang Chen was provoked, causing Jiang Chen to

feel disgusted with the Asura Palace.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen did help them against those six Pirate Lords, saving the lives of many geniuses from the Asura Palace. But now, these Tycoons and elders were simply ignoring that fact. Not only this, there was one thing that made Tan Lang feel even more disgusted. After failing to find Jiang Chen, they actually vented their anger at their own disciple. From the way they managed this matter, it showed that they had never considered him a part of the Asura Palace.

“Elder Liu, you don’t have to ask him anymore. During the past two days, I have asked him all the questions, but he never tells me anything.”

Ling Yi said.

“Elder Liu, Great Tycoon, as a disciple of the Asura Palace, let me give you all a friendly reminder. Drop this matter, and do not become Jiang Chen’s enemy. It will bring absolutely no benefits to the Asura Palace.”

Tan Lang said. He said this sincerely for the sake of the Asura Palace. As he had been to the Southern Continent, he knew more about Jiang Chen than anyone here. Although Jiang Chen’s cultivation base was weak compared to these Tycoons, having an enemy like him was definitely not a good thing.

During the past two days, Ling Yi had asked about Jiang Chen’s background and where he came from more than once. Of course,

Tan Lang would never tell him. As for the other part, about where he came from, Tan Lang wouldn't be able to tell him even if he wanted to, as even he didn't know where Jiang Chen originated from.

“Bastard! You're a disciple of the Asura Palace, but you're actually colluding with an outsider! Not only that, you are trying to reduce our morale! That guy is just a mere First Grade Combat King, how could he possibly fight against the Asura Palace?!”

One of the Tycoons who stood closest to Tan Lang shouted out loudly. He forcefully kicked Tan Lang's body, causing him to throw up a mouthful of blood.

Cough...

Tan Lang violently coughed out. He had ignored the pain filling his body, but at the same time, he couldn't find any words to describe the sadness that filled his heart. This was his beloved sect, and these people were all once his idols.

This was fucking miserable.

“Hmph! In my opinion, we should use Tan Lang as bait and force that Jiang Chen to reveal himself.”

A man coldly harrumphed and suggested.

“Haha, don't waste your time. I'm not a good friend of Jiang

Chen, and he'll never show up because of me. You'll never be able to find him!"

Tan Lang laughed out. Now, he had left life and death out of his consideration. Jiang Chen had once saved his life, and he would now pay him back with his own life.

Furthermore, in Tan Lang's mind, he did indeed not carry any weight in Jiang Chen's heart. So, how would Jiang Chen show himself, knowing that Tan Lang was just a mere bait? It was no different from seeking death.

Staring at Tan Lang, a look of disgust leaked out from Xiao Nanfeng's eyes. He casually waved his hand, then Ling Yi grabbed Tan Lang's shoulder and once again placed him in captivity.

Chapter 510 – Bone Transforming Technique

“In order to save that Jiang Chen, Tan Lang would rather bear all torture and won’t tell me anything. This tells us that he has a special relationship with Jiang Chen. So, I suggest we use Tan Lang as a bait to lure that Jiang Chen out.”

Ling Yi said.

“That’s right. Since that Jiang Chen likes sticking his nose in others’ business, he wouldn’t let Tan Lang get killed by us. In my opinion, we should announce the news immediately, and give him three days of time. If Jiang Chen doesn’t show up in those three days, we’ll kill Tan Lang.”

Someone agreed to Ling Yi's idea.

"No, I’m against that idea."

The gray-haired old man who was a Ninth Grade Combat King like Xiao Nanfeng immediately objected to the idea. He swept his eyes around the place, then continued, “No matter what, Tan Lang is still a disciple of the Asura Palace. If we use our own disciple’s life to threaten an outside... we, the Asura Palace can’t afford to do this, we’ll lose too much face.”

"Elder Liu, tell us what to do."

Someone asked. Elder Liu was a respectable man in the Asura Palace, and although his position was second to the Great Tycoon, his words carried a lot of weight, enough that the other tycoons would have to do as he says.

“There aren’t any good solutions. Just continue to search for that Jiang Chen and the monk. I believe the other three major powers are also searching for them. Those two have offended all four major powers of the Liang Province at the same time, and I really wish to see how long they can hide. As for Tan Lang, in any case, this disciple is crippled, and I can see a lot of hatred toward the Asura Palace in his eyes. Since that is the case, we can still use him as bait. Just throw him into the Freezing Hell Jail and let him die in there himself.”

Elder Liu decided Tan Lang’s destiny with just one sentence.

Hearing the Freezing Hell Jail’s name, even these tycoons felt a cold shiver running down their backs. Just from the name alone, one could easily imagine how frightening it was. It was a place used by the Asura Palace to lock up convicted felons. The environment within was extremely harsh, and for those who were locked up in this jail, the only ending for them would be death, no exceptions. Killing Tan Lang was much quicker than throwing him into the Freezing Hell Jail and letting him run his own course.

“Elder Liu, I think that although Tan Lang has made a mistake, it’s not to the extent where he should suffer such cruel torture. If he really hates the Asura Palace, we can just kill him straightaway and give him a quick death. Why should we torture him like this? He was after all once part of the Asura Palace.”

The Third Tycoon was a fat guy. Although his cultivation base was formidable, the weight of his words weren't heavy enough to compare with Xiao Nanfeng and Elder Liu's. However, he still thought it was rather cruel to put a core disciples into the Freezing Hell Jail.

“Third Brother, since when did you become such a merciful man? This matter is decided. We can just use Tan Lang as bait without killing him. Spread the news about Tan Lang being imprisoned in the Freezing Hell Jail. I doubt Jiang Chen will just stand by after receiving this piece of news.”

The Great Tycoon made the final decision.

When someone else tried to say something, Xiao Nanfeng had stood up and left the place.

The next day, while all four major powers were still searching for Jiang Chen and the monk, some news came from the Asura Palace. A core disciple of the Asura Palace was in collusion with enemies, which led to the death of many genius disciple of the Asura Palace, bringing them great losses. Hence, Tan Lang was banished to the Freezing Hell Jail as punishment.

The news instantly brought mixed feelings to many people. This was the end of a genius. Lately, Tan Lang could be considered as one of the men who rose to fame among all other core disciples; a man with a bright future. If everything went smoothly for him, he

could get along well even within the Asura Palace. But now, he was struck with such misfortune.

The Freezing Hell Jail was just as famous as the Asura Palace's Thirteen Tycoons. Even those who weren't a part of the Asura Palace were well aware of this Freezing Hell Jail. Whenever someone mentioned its name, it would instantly send a cold shiver down their spines.

The jail was specifically designed for those people who were convicted of serious crimes. However, it was rarely used against the Asura Palace's own disciples. Most of the time, it was used against enemies of the Asura Palace. All ferocious demons and enemies the Asura Palace wanted dead; they would all be placed in the Freezing Hell Jail to run their own course. So to speak, the Freezing Hell Jail represented death. Not quick death, but a cruel death.

"Sigh... Tan Lang is really pitiful. The Asura Palace has gone too far this time. He is after all a core disciple. Even if he really was convicted of a serious mistake, I don't think he would be punished with a death sentence, let alone being thrown into the Freezing Hell Jail."

"I agree. The punishment indeed seems overly serious. Tan Lang is completely finished this time. Once he's placed in the Freezing Hell Jail, he will definitely suffer from all sorts of tortures, and eventually die."

"A possible reason why the Asura Palace did this is to lure Jiang Chen out. However, in my opinion, I don't think it will work.

Jiang Chen is a ruthless man, and it doesn't seem like he has a close relationship with Tan Lang. I don't think he will show himself because of Tan Lang. The entire Liang Province is covered with traps, and all four major powers are searching for Jiang Chen and the monk everywhere. As long as they show up, only certain death will await them."

Many people were discussing the recent events. There was no doubt that the situation Tan Lang was now facing was directly related to Jiang Chen.

On Heavenhawk Island, Big Yellow had just returned after fishing for the latest news, and he brought the news back to Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was enraged upon hearing the news.

"I have to save him."

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen made up his mind.

"Young master Jiang, this Freezing Hell Jail is located within the Asura Palace, and Tan Lang is almost certain to die once thrown into this jail. There is no way we can save him."

Zhuang Fan shook his head and said.

"We'll think of a way when there is none."

Jiang Chen responded with an indifferent tone. He had only met Tan Lang twice, and their relationship could hardly be considered deep. However, Jiang Chen had a favorable impression of Jiang Chen, as their characters were rather matching. Also, it was all because of Jiang Chen that Tan Lang was throwing into the Freezing Hell Jail. If Jiang Chen helped Tan Lang and killed Zhuang Fan at the beginning, and let him bring Zhuang Fan's head back to the Asura Palace, perhaps Tan Lang would be the 13th Tycoon now.

As for things that happened later; Jiang Chen defeating Ling Yi and slicing off his arm, this had nothing to do with Tan Lang any longer. However, no matter what, Jiang Chen was the helper invited by Tan Lang, and this was a fact known by all. Tan Lang still would have been unable to escape from this misfortune.

Jiang Chen didn't like owing any favors, and he didn't want his friends to suffer because of himself. Tan Lang couldn't be considered his brother, at least, his relationship with Jiang Chen couldn't be compare with Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's relationship with Jiang Chen. But, regardless of matters, he was the first friend Jiang Chen got after arriving at the Divine Continent. If not for Jiang Chen, Tan Lang wouldn't have had to go through endless tortures, which would eventually end up killing him. Jiang Chen would not feel good about that at all.

“Brother Jiang, according to what I've learned, there are countless mighty warriors residing within the Asura Palace, and many of them Combat Kings. There also powerful Combat Emperors protecting them. If we just barge in there with our current strength, it'll be no different than committing suicide.”

Tyrant said. Tan Lang was now locked up in the Freezing Hell Jail, and it was no different from a mountain of swords and an ocean of flames. They also simply had no way of barging in.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, and didn't say anything. Tyrant and Zhuang Fan knew he was pondering, so they didn't make any noise. Morally, both of them supported Jiang Chen's decision. Furthermore, they knew that even without their support, Jiang Chen would still do what he wanted to do. From a certain aspect, both of them had been saved by Jiang Chen, and since Jiang Chen could save them, who he barely knew, he would obviously save Tan Lang, who was his friend. They could see an unyielding and heroic spirit of a man in Jiang Chen. Anyone who followed Jiang Chen would be attracted by this charisma

After a long moment of pondering, Jiang Chen finally opened his eyes and said, "I've thought of a way to sneak into the Asura Palace; sneak into the Freezing Hell Jail."

"What?!"

Tyrant and Zhuang Fan cried out at the same time and stared at Jiang Chen with astonishment. They thought Jiang Chen was insane for saying that. Putting aside how difficult it was to sneak into the Asura Palace, even if he managed to do it, how could he sneak into the Freezing Hell Jail? Even if he managed to sneak it, it would be near impossible to save Tan Lang from that place.

"Jiang Chen, don't you think this is a bit nonsensical?"

Tyrant felt speechless.

“Monk, you got a better idea?”

Jiang Chen looked at the monk with a smile.

The monk shook his head. Seeing Jiang Chen’s firm attitude, he changed his tone and asked, “What is your plan? I’ll go with you.”

Although Tyrant was a ferocious man, he was definitely an interesting guy. At least, he possessed the courage to accompany Jiang Chen into this nearly impossible task, something ordinary people would be unable to do.

“You don’t have to, I’ll do this myself, as more people means more problems. I’ll disguise myself as one of the Asura Palace’s disciples and sneak into the palace. After that, I’ll find a way to sneak into the Freezing Hell Jail.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Young master Jiang, I don’t think it’ll be easy to sneak into the Asura Palace.”

Zhuang Fan furrowed his brows.

“I know a Bone Transforming Technique that allows me to change my appearance into that of someone else. After I leave this

place, I'll hide outside the Asura Palace first and find an opportunity to kill one of their ordinary disciples. After that, I'll disguise myself into that disciple's appearance and sneak into the palace."

As the number one Saint underneath the heavens, Jiang Chen knew too many secret techniques and skills. Thus, changing his appearance was just a piece of cake. However, using this technique had a very strict condition, as it needed to be supported by a tremendous amount of spatial energy. Fortunately, Jiang Chen had broken through to the Combat King realm, which allowed him to use this Bone Transforming Technique.

"The fuck, is it really that amazing?"

Big Yellow's eyes flickered, then he continued, "Change your appearance into that of a dog and show me how amazing this skill is!"

"Get lost!"

Jiang Chen helplessly glared at Big Yellow. Asking him to waste all his energy to disguise himself as a dog? Jiang Chen wasn't that crazy.

"The Buddhist Sect has a Bone Transforming Technique as well. Once transformed, not only will the appearance change, even the aura will completely change. However, a secret technique like this will bring great harm to a person, as it will consume blood essence every time it is used. It can also only last for three days."

Tyrant said.

“That’s right, this Bone Transforming Technique can only last for three days. So, I’ll only have three days to rescue Tan Lang.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Within three days, he had to sneak into the Asura Palace and find a way to enter the Freezing Hell Jail. This task could no longer be described as just difficult.

Chapter 511 - Into The Lion's Den

“But brother Jiang, I really don’t understand this. With your First Grade Combat King cultivation, even if you’re able to sneak into the Freezing Hell Jail, how are you going to get Tan Lang out of there?”

Tyrant asked with a frown on his face, his tone hinting that he was worried. Zhuang Fan too felt worried. The Freezing Hell Jail was a restricted area within the Asura Palace, it was a place normal people could hardly get close to. Trying to save someone from there would definitely alert everyone in the palace. At that point of time, even a formidable Ninth Grade Combat King wouldn’t be able to do it, let alone Jiang Chen who was just a First Grade Combat King.

"I have a way of doing it."

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. He had never gone into a battle unprepared. Furthermore, sneaking into the Asura Palace to rescue someone from the Freezing Hell Jail, it was something that caused his blood to boil.

Tyrant and Zhuang Fan exchanged glances, then showed helpless smiles. Although they had only known Jiang Chen for a few days, they were somewhat able to understand him. He was completely different from any other young man his age, he was rather like a cunning old fox. His indifferent eyes looked like two profound tunnels, giving him a sagacious sense.

Aside from that, they could sense extraordinary confidence from Jiang Chen, and a calm attitude. No matter what kind of situation he was faced with, he always wore a confident and calm expression.

“Don’t worry. Since he came up with this idea, I’m sure he can do it.”

Big Yellow said while smiling. All this time, it seemed like there was nothing Jiang Chen would fail at doing. This man had done what should have been impossible so many times along his way, so he shouldn’t face any accidents this time either.

“The longer Tan Lang stays in that Freezing Hell Jail, the more danger he’ll face. I’ll set off right now. You guys just stay here on Heavenhawk Island for the next three days.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Since that’s the case, be careful.”

Tyrant patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder. Sneaking into the Asura Palace also meant that Jiang Chen was infiltrating the inner parts of his enemy’s base; venturing deep into the lions’ den. It was a journey filled with danger, and one could easily see this even with his toes.

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen disappeared from Heavenhawk Island. With his abilities, leaving the Chaotic Ocean

without being discovered by anyone was a piece of cake.

“I really admire young master Jiang’s courage.”

Zhuang Fan couldn’t help but say with mixed emotions. Indeed, what Jiang Chen was trying to accomplish wasn’t something ordinary people could ever achieve.

“No matter where he goes, he’ll always be able to poke a hole in the skies.”

Big Yellow smiled.

The Asura Palace was located in the northwest region of the Liang Province. It occupied an entire mountain range, and covered more than a few thousand miles of land. A layer of permanent white fog blanketed the mountain range, and the natural Yuan energy was dense, making this place look like a paradise.

The inner parts of the Asura Palace were crowded with palaces of all sizes. There were even ancient buildings hovering above the clouds surrounded by glowing rays, giving it a magical feeling.

Right now, at the outer perimeter of the mountain range, a figure dressed in white suddenly appeared in a ghostly manner. He was moving at top speed, and in the blink of an eye, he disappeared once again.

"Eh, I sensed something over there."

Outside the Asura Palace, four disciples on guard duty were chitchatting with each other. One man suddenly looked at where Jiang Chen had momentarily appeared, but he found nothing.

"Zhang Yang, I think you're being overly sensitive, I haven't sensed anything at all."

"I agree. This place belongs to the Asura Palace, so who would dare hang around here? Isn't that just asking for trouble?"

The other two disciples teased. All four disciples were Divine Core warriors, and were outer circle disciples of the Asura Palace. Today was their turn to stand guard.

"Damn it, the outer circle competition is tomorrow, but we have to stand guard here. This is really depressing."

The young man whose name was Zhang Yang cursed.

"Zhang Yan, you're just a Mid Divine Core warrior, the outer circle competition has nothing to do with you."

Another man laughed at Zhang Yang.

"Who says I have nothing to do with it? Anyone can participate

in this outer circle competition. Every year, the disciple who gets first place will be enlightened by the Palace Chief, helping him break through to the Combat Soul realm straightaway and become an inner circle disciple.”

Zhang Yang said. From the way he talked, it seemed he was discontent with his current status.

The four men were leisurely talking to each other. Their conversation was mostly related to the outer circle competition that was taking place tomorrow. A few minutes later, Zhang Yang once again incidentally saw a flash at the foot of the mountain, as if someone was moving.

"There really is something there."

Zhang Yang said.

“Hey, can you just not overreact?”

Someone said with an unhappy tone.

Zhang Yang became quiet and didn't say another word. He was thinking about the bright light he saw just now, and was wondering if it could be some kind of a treasure. The thought brought a secret joy to his mind. If he could find that treasure, that'd be his fortune. Perhaps it was something given by the heavens? If he could grab this opportunity, he might be able to yield extraordinary results in tomorrow's competition.

“You guys just wait here, I’ll go take a look.”

After saying that, Zhang Yang shot himself toward the foot of the mountain. The other three disciples were talking to each other, not bothering about Zhang Yang at all.

Soon, Zhang Yang excitedly came to where Jiang Chen was. To his surprise, there weren’t any treasures, but instead, a young man in white waiting for him.

"You..."

Zhang Yang wanted to say something, but his throat was clenched by Jiang Chen’s hand, preventing him from speaking a word.

“I’m Jiang Chen. You better not make any noise, or else, I’ll kill you.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold expression. Upon sensing the strong might of a king emanating from Jiang Chen’s body, Zhang Yang was struck with great terror, and dared not put up any struggles.

Zhang Yang felt extremely regretful now. Although he was just an outer circle disciple of the Asura Palace, he was well aware of what had been going on these past few days. Jiang Chen’s name had been heard by nearly every single man and woman in the Liang Province. Originally, he thought he had found some kind of

treasure or legacy, but he never expected it to actually be his doomsday, as he bumped into this malefic.

“Tell me your name, and your position in the Asura Palace.”

Jiang Chen said.

"My name is Zhang Yang, I'm just an ordinary outer circle disciple of the Asura Palace."

Zhang Yang truthfully answered.

"What's the name of that golden hair man?"

Jiang Chen asked again.

“He is Wang Zhan, also an outer circle disciple. His cultivation is the same as mine, a Mid Divine Core warrior.”

Zhang Yang said.

“Is the Asura Palace going to hold the outer circle competition tomorrow?”

Jiang Chen asked again.

"Yes... yes."

Zhang Yang had no idea why Jiang Chen asked him these questions, but he dared not hesitate when answering. This malefic could even slice off the Eighth Tycoon's arm, so he dared not doubt his ferociousness.

After that, Jiang Chen asked him a few more questions he wished to know, and finally nodded his head in satisfaction.

"Let me ask you, do you want to die or not?"

Jiang Chen asked with a sneer.

"No, I don't want to die!"

Zhang Yang kept shaking his head. What a joke, who would want to die for no reason at all?

"Alright, for the sake of your answer, I can spare you from death."

After saying that, Jiang Chen pointed at Zhang Yang's forehead. With this point, Zhang Yang closed his eyes and fainted. After that, Jiang Chen placed Zhang Yang's body into Zhang Yang's storage ring, then placed the storage ring in his Qi Sea.

Zhang Yan was a Divine Core warrior, so placing him inside a storage ring for three days wouldn't kill him. Jiang Chen had no

animosity against Zhang Yang, and Zhang Yang couldn't pose any threat to him either. Therefore, Jiang Chen had no interest in kill this Divine Core outer circle disciple. Once he finished his matters three days later, he would release him.

“Damn it, what is that Zhang Yang doing now?”

Wang Zhan couldn't help but curse.

"Let's go and see what he is doing now."

Another man suggest. The three disciples immediately flew to the foot of the mountain. At the same moment, bone cracking sounds could be heard from Jiang Chen's body. His facial muscles began twisting, and his body's shape also began transforming. The entire process looked really frightening.

When Wang Zhan and the other two men arrived, Jiang Chen had completely transformed his look to that of Zhang Yang.

"Zhang Yang, what are you doing here?"

Wang Zhan asked.

“Haha, I suddenly received enlightenment about the profoundness of cultivation, and was indulged in it.”

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out. Even his was had changed, and

sounded exactly like Zhang Yang's.

“Enlightenment about the profoundness of cultivation? Damn you! You can't grasp any anything with your mere talent!”

Wang Zhang simply looked down on Zhang Yang.

“Hmph! Wang Zhan, how dare you talk to me like that? Do you believe I won't kill you right now?”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then sent an energy wave out from his body. Wang Zhan and the other two disciple had originally intended to ridicule him some more, but their expressions instantly change dramatically upon sensing his energy.

“Late Divine Core realm! You... you've broken through!”

Wang Zhan was taken aback.

“Of course! I told you, I have received enlightenment regarding the profoundness of cultivation, allowing me to immediately break through to the Late Divine Core realm. Tomorrow, I'll participate in the outer circle competition and take first place for myself!”

Surrounded by arrogant airs, Jiang Chen continued, “You three better be respectful when talking to me! Otherwise, I'll teach you a lesson.”

Every dog had its day. This scene was something Zhang Yan had always fantasized about, and Jiang Chen had played it out perfectly. He had previously been thinking of a way to get close to the Freezing Hell Jail, and tomorrow's outer circle competition had given him a golden opportunity.

Jiang Chen waved his hand and strode away, leaving Wang Zhan and the other two dumbfounded disciples behind. Anger could be seen in their expressions, but they dared not say anything. This was because they knew one thing; after breaking through to the Late Divine Core realm, Zhang Yang was no longer in the same league as them, and now had the qualifications to participate in tomorrow's outer circle competition.

“Damn it, look at his prideful face! He has only broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, but he acts as if he has taken first place amongst the outer circle disciple.”

“That's right! Daddy here will wait for him to shame himself in tomorrow's competition.”

“Every dog has its day, puh! Bullshit!”

Although they were whispering to each other, nothing they said could be hidden from Jiang Chen's ears. He turned around and strode up to them, and without saying another word, he simply slapped their faces.

“You three bastards, how dare you say something behind your father's back?! You're courting death!”

Jiang Chen behaved arrogantly. He had to wear this arrogant air properly. Firstly, he didn't have any favorable impression of the people from the Asura Palace. Secondly, this was the method he wanted to use to get closer to the Freezing Hell Jail.

“We're sorry. Senior disciple Zhang Yang, we won't do it again.”

A disciple quickly bowed and apologize. Just like the saying, ‘a man who must pass under low eaves must bend his head’, when faced with the domineering ‘Zhang Yang’, they had no choice but to bow their heads.

Chapter 512 - Arrogant And Domineering

Wang Zhan and the other two disciples were trembling in fear, as they felt pain flare up in their cheeks where Jiang Chen had landed his slap. All three of them stared at Zhang Yang in front of them, feeling that he had changed into a completely different man. He was far from the Zhang Yang they were familiar with.

Jiang Chen turned around and walked up the mountain without looking back, and soon disappeared without a trace. Following the information provided by Zhang Yang, he quickly found the courtyard where Zhang Yang was staying. There were a total of six rooms in this courtyard, and they were all occupied by different disciples. Outer circle disciples who had yet to break through to the Combat Soul realm wouldn't have their own courtyards.

It was late in the afternoon. Most of the disciples had returned to their staying place. Three men were sitting around a stone table within the courtyard, chatting with exultation. They were clearly talking about tomorrow's outer circle competition.

When the three of them saw Zhang Yang returning, one of them asked, "Zhang Yang, I thought you were on guard duty today? Why are you back so quickly?"

Raising his head, Jiang Chen looked at the disciple with a cold gaze, then said with a rather rude attitude, "Daddy here came back earlier because of a bad mood, what does that have to do with you?"

The fuck? Did this guy just eat some gunpowder?

The tree men were startled for a brief moment, but they were shortly afterward struck by anger. Although they were staying in the same courtyard, the competition between them, open and secret, had never ceased for a minute; they all wanted to stop on top of each other. Zhang Yang's position in this courtyard wasn't high at all.

Even throughout the entire outer circle, Zhang Yang was only considered an extremely ordinary disciple. Because of his cowardly nature, people always liked to bully him.

“Fuck You Zhang Yang, have you just eaten some gunpowder?! Daddy here was talking to you nicely, so you better not be a fool and reject my good intentions! Who do you think you are?!”

The disciple who asked Jiang Chen the question became extremely angry. He suddenly stood up from his chair and strode up to Jiang Chen, pointed his finger at his nose and cursed.

Pa!

Without saying another word, Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and slapped the disciple. Leaving him no time to react, the disciple was sent away spinning. Jiang Chen was obviously holding back his strength. Otherwise, this slap alone would be more than enough to kill this disciple.

Plop.

The disciple landed on top of a stone table not far away, crushing it into pieces, then spat out a mouthful of blood.

"What?!"

The other two disciples cried out in shock. They stared at Jiang Chen with eyes wide open, their faces filled with astonishment. To their surprise, the extremely ordinary Zhang Yang had just attacked someone, and with a single slap, he had sent a Mid Divine Core warrior flying. If they hadn't witnessed this themselves, they wouldn't have believed it to be true.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed and purposely emanated his aura. Upon sensing the Late Divine Core aura, the expression of these two men changed dramatically. At the same time, the disciple who was knocked away by the slap stood back up, and was planning to scold Jiang Chen. However, when he sensed Jiang Chen's aura, his face turned pale with fright, and dared not speak another word.

The strong would always be respected; this timeless tradition would apply no matter where one went. The bigger a sect was, the more intense the internal competition would be. Thus, the stronger you were, the more respect you would earn. On the opposite, if you were weak, you would only get stepped on and bullied by others.

“You... you’ve broken through to the Late Divine Core realm!”

A disciple said with a trembling voice, extremely shocked. After all, before Zhang Yang left in the morning, he was still a Mid Divine Core warrior. However, just by standing guard for a mere day, he had broken through. This was unbelievable!

Most importantly, even if Zhang Yang had broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, why was there such a huge difference in his character? This Zhang Yang looked really strange to them, as if he had changed into a completely different person.

“Now you know.”

Jiang Chen glared at the three disciple, then strode over to a chair placed next to the broken stone table, then sat down with his legs crossed. Then, he told the three disciples, “I want you three to bring publicity to me, your father. Tell everyone that I, Zhang Yang am going after first place in the outer circle competition. If anyone meets me on the fighting stage tomorrow, they better admit defeat as soon as possible. If not, I’ll kill them on the spot.”

What? Going after for first place in the outer circle competition?

The three men were once again stunned by what they heard, and for a moment, none of them could comprehend the true meaning behind Jiang Chen’s words.

“What are you waiting for?! Waiting for me to punch you?!”

Jiang Chen shouted, causing the three to shudder. Without any hesitation, they immediately turned around and left the courtyard.

Looking at the back of the trio, a gruesome smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. This was his first step in rescuing Tan Lang. Next, he had to find a way to enter the Freezing Hell Jail, and the outer circle competition was the perfect opportunity for him.

“Damn it, why did that Zhang Yang suddenly become so strong?”

“He's so arrogant! I never knew he was a guy like that! That bastard, he always acted like a yes-man and was as cowardly as a mouse! But now, he has actually broken through to the Late Divine Core realm! It's just like the saying, 'every dog has its day!' And, he really is aiming for the first place in the outer circle competition! Perhaps he'll be killed without knowing how it happened.”

“Since he wants us to help him with his publicity, let's do it for him! In the outer circle, even the top ten genius disciples wouldn't dare say anything like that. Tomorrow, I'm certain those geniuses will teach him a good lesson!”

Words emerged through the trio's clenched teeth after they left. It was a depressing day for them, they never thought they would suffer like this before. Furthermore, it was because of Zhang Yang.

Just an hour later, the news about Zhang Yang having broken

through to the Late Divine Core realm, and his boastful words of going after the first place in tomorrow's outer circle competition swept across the entire outer circle. The outer circle competition was a major event for the outer circle, and since it was happening tomorrow, many disciples who were traveling outside had returned. Especially those real geniuses, who had prepared to fight for a good position in the competition.

Not only did the trio excitedly do exactly as Jiang Chen told them to, they even spiced it up, describing how arrogant that Zhang Yang was, and how he never put any of those geniuses in his eyes. He even 'said' that those who met him on the stage would have to kneel down and kowtow to him before he would let them leave the stage.

Those geniuses were pissed off by this arrogant statement, especially those were already half a step into the Combat Soul realm, as they weren't someone those ordinary Late Combat Soul warrior could ever compare with, let alone Zhang Yang who was just a mere common disciple that no one have heard of before. So, no real genius would put him in their eyes.

"Damn it, who is that Zhang Yang? Why have I not heard of his name before? He actually dares make such an arrogant statement? I am going to teach him a lesson right now, I want him to lose the opportunity to participate in tomorrow's competition!"

A hot-tempered, rather famous disciple of the outer circle couldn't take it, and decided to cause some trouble for Zhang Yang.

"This Zhang Yang is really crazy, is there something wrong with

his brain? Even if he is lucky enough to break through to the Late Divine Core realm, he shouldn't have made such an arrogant statement! Isn't that just an act of seeking death?"

"I know this Zhang Yang, he is an extremely cowardly man, and his talent is ordinary. It's rather surprising that he was able to break through to the Late Divine Core realm. However, how could he speak such boastful words? He was too reckless this time!"

"Here is merely a guy who has just broken through to the Divine Core realm, and he wants to get first place in the outer circle competition? What about those top ten outer circle disciples who are just a single stop from the Combat Soul realm? Who does he think they are?"

"He is dead for sure. No one can save him this time."

A storm swept across the entire outer circle in an instant. The outer circle competition would take place tomorrow, and today should supposedly have been a calm and peaceful day. However, there was no way anyone could remain calm, because a reckless guy was courting death!

It was now dark, and the moon had begun shining its rays down upon earth. Jiang Chen was leisurely sitting alone within the courtyard. His eyes looked deep, and no one could tell what he was thinking about right now. He was in the heart of the lions' den, but he still behaved calmly. Throughout the entire world, perhaps only Jiang Chen alone could behave like this.

“Which one of you are Zhang Yang? Move your ass out here right now!”

A loud voice was suddenly heard outside the courtyard. After that, many people ran into the courtyard. Most of these people were here to watch a show, as the real main cast was a fat guy who stood at the front of the group. The fat guy had a greasy face, and he weighed more than 300 Jin. He had a strong cultivation base... well, strong amongst the outer circle; a Late Divine Core warrior. Not only that, he was a man who had been in the Late Divine Core realm for quite some time, so his foundation was quite strong.

“So, you’re the Zhang Yang who is tired of staying alive.”

The fat guy said right after he saw Jiang Chen.

“Who forgot to lock up his pig? The pig has now come to daddy’s place and is breathing out with its bad breath. Why are you all still just standing there after meeting your grandpa Zhang Yang? Do you believe I won’t break your legs right now?”

Jiang Chen gazed at the fat guy and spoke with an indifferent tone.

His words startled the fat guy, and stunned every single disciple who had come here for a show. Even the trio who had helped Jiang Chen gain publicity were once again stunned. They knew that this Zhang Yang was arrogant, but they never expected his arrogance to reach such a level.

“Arrogant, so fucking arrogant! Previously, I didn’t believe what other said about him, but I believe now!”

“Is there something wrong with this guy’s brain? I thought he just broke through to the Late Divine Core realm, so why is he so arrogant?”

“A typical example of someone with no respect for anyone, he doesn’t even show any respect to senior disciple Luo Song, and scolded him as a pig! This is a huge taboo for senior disciple Luo Song!”

Many people felt a desire to leave a shoe mark on Jiang Chen’s face, and none of them were able to think of a reason why Zhang Yang had become so arrogant. Could it be that he had been maintaining a low profile for too long, and when he suddenly broke through to the Late Divine Core realm, he felt that his day was here and wanted to show off his mighty? However, what was the difference between this and committing suicide? As the old saying went, “ask for no trouble and trouble won’t kill you’, in the minds of these outer circle disciples, Zhang Yang was a typical example of someone asking for trouble.

"Bastard!"

Luo Song furiously roared out. His eyes went wider than the eyes of a camel, and judging from the way he looked right now, it seemed like he was going to eat Zhang Yang alive. Luo Yong was

considered famous in the outer circle, and anyone who bumped into would have to politely greet him as senior disciple. Yet, this bastard in front of him had just merely broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, so how dared he disrespect Lu Song? Not only that, he actually referred to Luo Song as a pig! He just couldn't stand this at all!

Chapter 513 - Extremely Arrogant

“Zhang Yang, you’re just like an ant to me! You were trash in the past, and you still are trash now! You dare be disrespectful to me, Luo Song?! I’ll cripple you now and take away your opportunity to participate in tomorrow’s outer circle competition!”

Luo Song furiously said with a loud and stern voice. The Late Divine Core aura that was being emanated from his body was rolling across the scene like a tidal wave, sending the debris of the broken stone table flying in all directions. Upon sensing this powerful aura, many people couldn’t help but take a few steps back. At the same time, the three disciples who stayed in the same courtyard as Zhang Yang all wore gloating expressions, feeling as if their grudge had been vented. Previously, Jiang Chen had scolded them like they were nobodies, and even beaten one of them. Now, with Luo Song wanting to teach him a lesson, their minds were obviously filled with joy.

Luo Song was indeed a man with extraordinary strength. Without hesitating, he punched out toward Jiang Chen’s face. Unfortunately, although he was a powerful man, he only possessed the strength of a Divine Core warrior. Although it made him a rather famous man within the outer circle, compared to Jiang Chen, it was like heaven and earth.

A Late Divine Core clown trying to behave arrogantly in front of a First Grade Combat King, perhaps he was the one looking for trouble.

Jiang Chen was still sitting on his chair cross-legged. Looking at

Luo Song who portrayed an imposing image punching out toward him, it was like watching an infant crawling in front of himself. It was incredibly childish.

Bam!

Right when Lu Song had nearly arrived in front of him, Jiang Chen kicked out toward Luo Song's stomach with great speed.

Ahh!

Following a miserable scream, Luo Song was sent flying backwards like a kite that had its line cut off. He was thrown onto the ground over 30 meters away, causing a large crater to appear on the ground. While lying on the ground on his stomach, his body that weighed more than 300 Jins was violently trembling, causing him to look like a large turtle.

Luo Song felt as if his internal organs had nearly shattered to pieces, causing him to repeatedly throw up mouthfuls of blood. His abdomen was painfully vibrating, causing him to feel as if he was dying.

“My Qi Sea, no...”

In the following second, Luo Song let out a despairing screech, and all the pain in his body seemed to fade away. This was because, to his shock, his Qi Sea had been destroyed by the kick, and his Yuan energy had started vanishing like a balloon losing its air. In

just a few breaths time, all of it had completely vanished.

In that instant, Luo Song's heart sunk to the bottom of the abyss; he completely surrendered to despair. His Qi Sea was destroyed, which meant he was now crippled. For a Divine Core warrior, this was worse than death. Imaginable, from now onwards, his world would be cast into a permanent darkness, as the Asura Palace would never cultivate a cripple.

All the spectators gasped in shock, and they repeatedly looked over at Jiang Chen who was still sitting in his chair as if nothing had happened. They felt as if their whole world was now spinning; as if they were dreaming. How could a man go through such a huge transformation in such a short amount of time?

“Oh heavens! He has become so strong! How could this be possible?!”

“Impossible, this is absurd! He was still a Mid Divine Core warrior when he left in the morning! I used to fight with him, and he couldn't even defeat me! Even if he has broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, I don't believe he could become so strong! Senior disciple Luo Song is a mighty warrior who has been famous for a long time, however, he couldn't even withstand a single strike from Zhang Yang?!”

Nobody could remain calm. Indeed, a scene like this was not something people could easily accept.

“Hmph! Since you were disrespectful to me, having your Qi Sea destroyed is just a petty punishment. You damn fat pig, you’re now a cripple, and you’re even worth of licking daddy’s toe!”

Jiang Chen said in a cold and arrogant manner, not showing any modesty in his words. His behaviors was like attracting hatred in plain sight, causing everyone underneath the heavens to hate him. This was, in fact, the result Jiang Chen was looking for. He wanted everyone in this place to hate him; wanted everyone to feel that kill him was the lightest punishment they could bring to him.

“What?! He destroyed Luo Song’s Qi Sea?!”

“Damn it! This Zhang Yang has really gone too far! No matter what, we’re all fellow disciples, and there weren’t any life or death grudges between them, so why did he resort to such violent means? Luo Song is finished now that his Qi Sea is destroyed!”

“Why did this man suddenly become so cruel and merciless? If I remember correctly, he and Luo Song didn’t even know each other before this, and yet, he still destroyed Luo Song’s Qi Sea! Luo Song is done for, this is extremely cruel!”

The people present couldn’t help but feel mixed emotions. Many people even showed expressions of fear as they looked at Jiang Chen. The previous cowardly Zhang Yang that existed in the minds of many had now turned into an extremely arrogant malefic. Now, many people were thinking the same; perhaps this merciless man will amaze the world in tomorrow’s outer circle competition.

“Get this guy out of here. Tell those geniuses that they best withdraw from tomorrow’s competition! Otherwise, daddy here won’t be any courteous with them. This fat pig is an example.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand at the crowd, portraying an extremely arrogant image, while showing a face that invited all punches, causing people to feel a strong desire to walk up and punch him.

Since Luo Song had his Qi Sea destroyed by a single kick, no one dared to continue staying in this place. If they were unlucky enough to offend this malefic, they would be unable to withstand the consequences. A disciple who had a rather good disciple carried him up and left. Luo Song’s mind was completely blank, and his eyes looked distracted. He felt that there was no way he could live through the rest of his life any longer. He was now a cripple. Initially, he thought he could get himself a pretty good ranking in tomorrow’s competition, but now, everything had turned into a mere fantasy; his dream had burst like a bubble. While his mind was filled with hatred toward Jiang Chen, he also felt regret for being impulsive and offending this malefic today.

In the blink of an eye, all the spectators dispersed in an uproar. Those few disciples who stayed in the same courtyard as Zhang Yang left as well. They would rather sleep on the street than stay with an unreasonable lunatic, and they wouldn’t be able to guarantee their lives if they continued staying here.

After the last person left, a solemn expression emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. What happened today was all part of his place.

However, the real show would begin tomorrow. He couldn't afford to let anything go wrong. Otherwise, he couldn't be able to complete his plan smoothly. The Bone Transforming Technique could only last for three days, and he had to enter the Freezing Hell Jail as soon as possible and rescue Tan Lang.

“Brother Tan, just hold on for one more day. I'll save you from this place tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen said with a voice only he could hear.

On the same night, the temperature of the outer circle turmoil had once again heated up. The incident of Luo Song being crippled had brought an uproar to the entire outer circle. Many people were really angry about this matter, thinking that Zhang Yang had gone too far. Although fighting amongst disciples was a normal thing in the Asura Palace, it was the first time someone had destroyed another disciple's Qi Sea. Under normal circumstances, if they had a life or death grudge, they could always fight on the life or death battle stage, or even privately settle their grudge outside the Asura Palace. Thus, not once had a disciple crippled another fellow disciple in such an unrestrained and reckless manner.

“Bastard! Is that guy a lunatic?! Does he really think he can act so lawlessly just because he's a bit strong?!”

“This is ridiculous! I'm going to teach him a good lesson when we meet on the fighting stage tomorrow!”

“Tomorrow, I'll cripple him in front of everyone and allow him

to taste the feeling of becoming a cripple; do to him what he did to Luo Song!”

Many geniuses were furious about this matter, even the top ten geniuses of the outer circle had commented on this, saying they would teach Zhang Yang a good lesson during tomorrow’s competition, making sure he would pay a heavy price for what he had done.

Early morning in the next day, the outer circle of the Asura Palace had become lively. Many outer circle disciples arrived at the gigantic square located in the outer circle. As one of the major sects of the Liang Province, the Asura Palace had a large army of disciples. In fact, they had more than a few thousand Divine Core outer circle disciples. The size of these was not something the Eastern Continent could compare with.

This was a land with extremely dense natural Yuan energy, and that together with the impact of the natural laws, the constitution of cultivators since they were born was different from the constitutions of those in the Eastern Continent. A Divine Core warriors was rare there, but in this place, they could be found anywhere along the street, and they didn’t even possess any prestigious status.

Bam, bam, bam...

The sound of drums being beaten rung through the air. The

square was fully packed with people, and everyone disciple was wearing looks of excitement on their faces. In total, there were nine fighting stage built in the square, and the competition would be carried out on these fighting stages.

“The yearly competition is finally here again! It’s a shame I still couldn’t show any extraordinary talents today.”

“The man who gets first place in this competition will receive enlightenment from the Palace Chief, helping him break through to the Combat Soul realm, as our Palace Chief is a mighty Combat Emperor! Who do you guys think will win first place this year?”

“I’m guessing it’ll be senior disciple Wang Yuan. He is already a step into the Combat Soul realm, and he’s worthy of being called the number one outer circle genius. Furthermore, he has been preparing for this competition, and is determined to get first place.”

“Not necessarily, senior disciple Tian Liang isn’t any weaker than senior disciple Wang Yuan. Not long before this, I heard they’re both going to fight each other in this competition; fight for the number one position.”

“Don’t forget about that Zhang Yang! I’m really curious about what kind of great legacy he has found, as it helped him break through to the Late Divine Core realm yesterday. After that, he immediately crippled Luo Song, who is also a Late Divine Core warrior. I heard he destroyed Luo Song’s Qi Sea with a single kick. So, although he’s an arrogant guy, his strength is formidable.”

“That bastard! He’s too ruthless! Those top ten senior disciple said that if they bumped into Zhang Yang in the competition, they would definitely teach him a good lesson! If that Zhang Yang really dares to stop onto the fighting stage today, perhaps he’ll never get the chance to step down!”

Before the competition officially begun, everyone were chatting amongst each other. Their conversations circled around the important disciples of the competition. Of course, these top ranked outer circle disciples were definitely the targets of their conversations. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was also a big topic amongst these guys; the coward no one had ever taken seriously.

“Hmph! Today’s first place will be mine! Those who dares fight me, Zhang Yang, will have to face their death!”

Right at this moment, an extremely arrogant voice could be heard from the back of the crowd. Then, everyone could see Zhang Yang appearing in the square. He looked completely calm and collected as he raised his prideful head up high, looking down on everyone present.

Chapter 514 - Draw The Sword And Kill

Many people were unable to bear what he said. Putting aside the cultivation of this guy, just his words alone were enough to draw a lot of hatred onto him. Just by making a simple speech, Jiang Chen had successfully drawn the attention of everyone; catapulted himself into the limelight before the competition could officially begin.

The people in the crowd immediately looked at Jiang Chen's face. Since Zhang Yang was a timid man by nature, and had a mediocre cultivation base, he wasn't an existence known by many outer circle disciples. So to speak, many people had never heard of Zhang Yang before the recent events yesterday.

"So this guy is that Zhang Yang. Why is he so arrogant?"

"I agree, just take a look at his lofty face! He was lucky enough to increase his cultivation a stage higher, and with that, he wants to take first place in the outer circle competition? Who does he think he is? Does he really think he's invincible just because he defeated Luo Song? What a fool!"

"Quiet! He is an extremely ruthless man, and since he has the audacity to fight for the first place in the outer circle, he will definitely be greeted by miserable consequences. None of the top ten geniuses are someone he can trifle with. If this Zhang Yang really offends them, all that awaits him would be death."

The noise of discussion filled the air, but most of the disciples dared not talk loudly. After all, Zhang Yang had crippled Luo Song with an extremely ruthless method, and since these disciples' cultivation bases couldn't measure up to Lu Song, no one dared say anything that might provoke this vicious man. Otherwise, if he became angry and crippled them, it would be really unfortunate.

Ignoring the crowd, Jiang Chen strode further toward them. When he approached the ocean of people, with an arrogant tone he said, "Move aside! Make way for your grandpa!"

Fuck, so incredibly arrogant!

Many people felt an impulse to give this arrogant guy a severe beating, but eventually refrained themselves from the impulse. Some Late Divine Core geniuses were staring at Jiang Chen as well, hostility leaking out from their eyes. However, they didn't do anything either. Firstly, they had to conserve their energy for the upcoming competition, and secondly, they did fear this man who could cripple Luo Song with a single kick.

As for those strong top ten guy, they were all men with lofty attitudes. Naturally, they would be the last to show up. For example, men like Wang Yuan and Tian Liang, who were the strongest geniuses in the outer circle, they would be the focus of the competition, and men like them would only show up at the last moment.

Dozens of minutes later, three old men with powerful auras stepped through the air and landed themselves on a tall stage located in the center of the square. They were all Early Combat

Soul warriors, and they were the elders who managed the outer circle.

Upon the arrival of three elders, the scene became quiet. Everyone knew that the arrival of these three elders indicated that the competition was going to start.

Right at the moment when these three elders arrived, numerous formidable figures started flying in from all directions, and soon landed at the front of the crowd. All of these figures belonged to young man, and they all wore the same prideful expressions on their faces. Although they couldn't be compared with those Combat Soul inner disciples, or Combat Soul core disciples, they were the elites in this outer circle.

All these men had their names on the rank of the outer circle, and they all possessed extraordinary talent, and were the most popular candidates for the outer circle competition. The arrival of these men instantly attracted blazing glances from the crowd. At the same time, many people had their eyes rested on Jiang Chen's face as well. However, no one could see anything about Zhang Yang that allowed him to fight against these elites.

“Before the competition beings, I, the elder have one thing to tell you. This year's competition is different from the last, as the disciple who gets first place will be given the chance to meet with the Palace Chief. The disciple will receive enlightenment from the Palace Chief himself, and this is an extremely rare opportunity. Even I, the sect's elder am not qualified to receive such a reward.”

The elder who stood in the middle said with a loud voice. When

he mentioned the reward for the disciple who gets first place, the eyes of those geniuses who were ranked the strongest immediately lit up. Being able to receive enlightenment from the Palace Chief; a Combat Emperor! That was a great honor.

“As long as you are an outer circle disciple of the Asura Palace, regardless of your cultivation base, you are qualified to participate in the competition. Now, let me emphasize on this; the fighting stages in front of you are not for life or death fights, and no one is allowed to kill his opponent. Unless both agrees to a death match beforehand, where both can freely carry out the fight according to the rules of the life or death fighting stage. Alright, I’ll now let Elder Yuan explain the rules of the competition.”

The same Elder said loudly once more.

Elder Yuan who stood next to him took a step forward, but right before he could say a word, a rather disharmonious voice interrupted him.

“I think the rules of this competition needs some changes.”

It was none other than Jiang Chen who spoke. He didn’t have time to lose to those long, winding rules of the competition, and he didn’t have time to participate in this outer circle competition either. He had to let everything go according to his plan.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen leapt onto one of the fighting stages. After glancing at his surroundings once, he said with a loud voice, “The first place of this year competition belongs to me, Zhang Yang. Those who refuses to accept this can come here and challenge me! This is the rules of this year’s competition. If none of you have the courage to challenge me, I’ll take the first place now, while the rest of you can fight for the second place according to the rules.”

His words instantly brought a tremendous storm to the entire square. Many people simply yelled out in shock. Even the three elders were enraged. As elders who were in charge of the outer circle, Jiang Chen’s behavior was no doubt incredibly disrespectful to them. To them, it was a provocation to their position and status.

“Fuck, this bastard is too arrogant! He has no respect for anyone! There are so many outer circle geniuses here, but he shown no respect to any one of them!”

“This is outrageous, this guy is crazy! He actually wants to challenge the entire outer circle all by himself! He just doesn’t know the meaning of death!”

“Let daddy here teach him a lesson! I’ll rip his arrogant face into pieces!”

No one could bear it any longer. Those geniuses of the outer circle couldn’t stand this bullshit any longer. When they threw their glances onto the arrogant guy who was standing on top of the stage, no one seemed able to recognize this guy. A guy whose name

had never been heard of before challenging all the disciples... No, he was actually letting others challenge him! This was absurd!

"Who is that rascal?"

Elder Yuan asked with a cold voice.

"He is Zhang Yang, originally some nobody. However, it seems he found something unique yesterday, which allowed him to break through to the Late Divine Core realm. After that, he became extremely arrogant and claimed he wanted to seize first place in the outer circle competition."

Another Elder told him. As yesterday's commotion had attracted many people's attention, even he was informed about the incident.

"Hmph! The outer circle competition has been conducted for many years, and not once has its order been disturbed by a disciple! No matter how much of a genius he is, since he doesn't show anyone any respect, we, the Asura Palace don't want a disciple like this!"

Elder Yuan said with a cold voice. After that, he turned to Jiang Chen and said with a loud voice, "Zhang Yang, the outer circle competition's rules can't be changed. You have disturbed the order of the competition, thus, I will deprive you of your qualification to participate in the competition, and you'll have to receive punishment from me. Now, get your ass down from there!"

“All disciples of the Asura Palace are qualified to participate in the competition; you have no right to deprive me of my qualifications. My purpose is to save time. No matter what, I’ll get first place one way or another. You can let all the other disciples admit defeat. With that, I’ll be the champion of this competition. After that, you guys can follow the boring rules and continue with the competition.”

Jiang Chen responded with a loud voice, showing absolutely no respect to Elder Yuan. He was going all out right now. Yesterday, the people had learned how arrogant this guy was, but they never expected his arrogance to reach such a level, as he didn’t even show any respect to a Combat Soul Elder.

"Presumptuous!"

Elder Yuan was enraged, and he shouted out angrily, “You’re extremely conceited, and you show no respect for elders! As punishment, I will personally cripple you today!”

"Hold on."

Right when Elder Yuan was about to strike, a voice rang through the air. It came from one of the genius disciples, and his name was Wang Yuan, the man who was seen as the strongest in the outer circle.

“Since this guy wants first place, why don’t we give him a chance? I really want to see who dares to fight for first place with me, Wang Yuan!”

After saying that, Wang Yuan leapt onto the fighting stage and stood opposite of Jiang Chen.

“Senior disciple Wang Yuan, kill him! Get revenge for Luo Song!”

“Don’t kill him! Just destroy his Qi Sea and let him live the life of a dead!”

“He is an unbridled man, there is no point in him keeping his life!”

Jiang Chen’s behavior had no doubt aroused public indignation. However, he was actually smiling right now, and wasn’t show any signs of taking this to heart. This was in fact the result he was looking for, including the fight between him and the number one ranked genius.

“So, you’re Zhang Yang. Do you hear them? All of them are asking me to kill you. It looks like you’re hated by everyone.”

Wang Yuan said.

“Is that so? Do you want to kill me? Then, let’s have a death match.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

Jiang Chen's words stunned Wang Yuan. He never expected this. Not only did this lunatic not show any fear when facing him, he actually suggested a death match. This was a typical example of someone who had no clue what death or danger was.

"Why? Are you scared?"

Jiang Chen ridiculed his opponent.

"What a joke! I'll never be scared of you. Since you're asking for death, don't blame me for going too far."

Wang Yuan laughed out. He turned to the three elders and said with a crystal clear voice, "Elders, I suppose you heard what he just said. This arrogant guys wants a death match with me."

"Fine, I give you permission. Let the death match begin!"

Elder Yuan immediately agreed. In his mind, with Wang Yuan's overall combat strength, he was probably even stronger than himself, an Early Combat Soul Elder. So, it should be a piece of cake for Wang Yuan to kill this arrogant Zhang Yang.

But unfortunately, right after Elder Yuan finished speaking, Jiang Chen moved. A dazzling sword appeared in his hand, and in the blink of an eye, it arrived in front of Wang Yuan's face.

Swoosh!

A ray flashed through the air. Wang Yuan didn't even have the chance to respond, and his head was sliced off with a single strike. His head was sent flying high up into the air, and his blood was spraying out of his neck like a water fountain nearly 6 meters into the air. The crimson fresh blood left a magnificent yet miserable scene in the air.

Chapter 515 - Completely Insane

In that instant, the audience burst into an uproar. With a near dumbstruck expression, everyone blankly stared at the fighting stage, feeling as if they were dreaming.

Plop.

Wang Yuan's head fell down from the sky and hit his shoulder, pushing his body to the ground. It was a bloody and brutal scene. The fresh blood quickly smeared the fighting stage, blanketing it with a crimson layer.

At this moment, everyone felt it difficult to breathe. The dramatic scene was not something these people had expected, and none of them even thought this would be possible. Who could have thought that Zhang Yang was actually so strong, enough to kill Wang Yuan with a single strike, not even giving his opponent a chance to react.

“Oh heavens, what did I just see? Is it Wang Yuan who got killed? Killed by a single strike without even the chance to defend against it? What kind of encounter did this Zhang Yang bump into? Why did he suddenly become so strong?”

“So savage! Wang Yuan who was ranked number one in the outer circle has just been killed! In order to fight for the first place in the competition, he spent an entire year preparing. In the end, he was killed in a miserable manner without even getting to unleash a single strike. This is too dramatic! I know Zhang Yan, he is a timid

guy, a man with mediocre talent, and his cultivation base was stuck at the Mid Divine Core realm for two years, and I heard he was still a Mid Divine Core warrior yesterday, where he was supposed to be on guard duty. How come he could have such a tremendous transformation in just one day? This is bizarre!”

“Zhang Yang suddenly turned into someone who shows no respect to anyone, arrogant and conceited! Furthermore, he’s too ferocious, as if he has turned into someone else. But what shocks me the most is that he actually has the strength to kill Wang Yuan now.”

No one were able to remain calm. The number one genius of the outer circle, Wang Yuan, had just been instantly killed by a single strike, and it happened right after Elder Yuan finished speaking. This didn’t mean Wang Yuan was weak, as the title of number one genius of the outer circle wasn’t just for show. It only meant that Zhang Yang was too strong!

"Who's next?"

Jiang Chen waved his sword and turned his glance over toward those geniuses of the outer circle.

These geniuses who usually puffed themselves up with pride instantly gasped. Jiang Chen’s provoking glance frightened them, causing them to take a few steps back. Although they felt a strong desire to beat this arrogant guy to death, even Wang Yuan was killed within seconds. So, if they really fought him, the results

wouldn't be much better.

All three Sect Elders had their eyes went wide, only now they managed to pull themselves out from the shocking emotion. They couldn't believe what just happened, and felt like this was the first time they knew this Zhang Yang.

“Zhang Yang, today is the outer circle competition! Who gave you the audacity to kill a fellow disciple?! You have committed a crime deserving of a myriad deaths!”

Elder Yuan scolded loudly.

“Old fool, who do you think you are? Why gave you the audacity to talk like that to me? We had agreed to a death match, and the only reason he died is his poor strength. With my, Zhang Yang's talent, I will become the number one genius of the Asura Palace in the future, and all 13 Tycoons will become my stepping stones! If you three old fools dare disrespect me, I'll trample you to death straightaway! Let me give you a chance right now; immediately announce me as the champion of this competition, then kneel down and kowtow to me. Once I, Zhang Yang have made my way to the top of the world, I'll reward you handsomely. Otherwise, you'll soon suffer!”

Jiang Chen was incredibly arrogant. He pointed his sword at the three elders and spoke loudly. Even he himself nearly burst out into laughter because of what he just said. Although being an arrogant man required strength as a foundation, he was just behaving like an idiot right now. However, this was the result Jiang Chen wanted.

The crowd once again burst into an uproar, and a tremendous storm was brought into the entire square. Although they felt Zhang Yang was previously extremely arrogant, they had still underestimated his arrogance. This guy wasn't a normal human any longer, he was a lunatic! Even when the Great Tycoon Xiao Nanfeng made his first debut, he dared not behave so arrogantly. However, this guy was just a Late Divine Core warrior. Even if he really seized the champion spot in the competition, he couldn't make the elders kneel down in front of him, let alone claim all 13 Tycoons to be his stepping stones.

The 13 Tycoons were after all the symbol of the Asura Palace; the representatives of the Asura Palace's supreme status. No one dared to defame them. No matter how much of a genius Zhang Yang was, with such an arrogant and treacherous attitude, he would have to suffer the sect's punishment.

"What a treacherous brat! I will personally punish you!"

Elder Yuan was set ablaze with fury, and completely unleashed the aura of a Combat Soul warrior. With a sway of his body, he leapt onto the fighting stage where Jiang Chen stood.

"You bastard! I'll put an end to your pathetic life right now!"

Elder Yuan had never been so angry before, especially when dealing with an outer circle disciple.

"Old fool, do you really think you can kill me? You think too

highly of yourself.”

Without saying anything, Jiang Chen swung the Heavenly Saint Sword forward. In an instant, Elder Yuan who was emanating his powerful aura was trapped by an invisible force, preventing him from moving even a bit.

A horrifying scene was revealed to everyone. Jiang Chen’s formidable sword sliced Elder Yuan in half. His blood and internal organs splattered across the entire fighting stage. It was a savage scene that caused the hearts of those watching to tremble.

"So weak."

Faced with Elder Yuan’s dead body, Jiang Chen spat out.

Once again, the audience was struck by a violent storm. No one could believe what they had just witnessed. Zhang Yang, a Late Divine Core disciple, had just killed an Early Combat Soul Elder with a single strike. This literally turned their common sense upside down. If not for the fact that they had witnessed it with their own eyes, they never would have been able to believe it.

"He... he killed Elder Yuan!"

“Heavens! He is a lunatic! He slaughtered an Elder during the outer circle competition! This is insane! This matter is going to escalate into a high level very soon! He has committed a serious crime, and will most likely be thrown into the Freezing Hell Jail!”

“Insane! He really killed an Elder! That means he completely ignores the authority of the Asura Palace! I really don’t understand why he would want to do this... He is indeed a genius, as he can kill a Combat Soul Elder with just his Divine Core cultivation. With that, the Asura Palace would definitely give him a serious amount of attention. However, why does he behave so arrogantly, and even killed an Elder? He has just buried his own promising future.”

The Asura Palace had existed for many, many years. However, this was the first time in their history that a disciple had killed his fellow disciple and Elder on the day of the competition. Although the Asura Palace had quite a number of arrogant disciples, none of them dared to kill an Elder unless they had lost the will to live in this world.

“Elder Yuan!”

The two remaining Elders cried out in shock together. Initially, they thought that with Elder Yuan’s personality, Zhang Yang would definitely be killed on the spot. They never thought he would die like this.

“Zhang Yang! Who gave you the audacity to kill an Elder?! You are a treacherous guy, you deserve ten thousand deaths for your crime!”

With a loud voice and a stern expression, the Elder who announced the outer circle competition’s reward shouted at Jiang

Chen. Outrageous! This was absolutely outrageous!

Chapter 516 - Ferociously Killing

Both elders were extremely furious. Their voices were loud, and their expressions were stern. However, neither of them had the courage to stand out and attack Jiang Chen. No matter how outrageous he was, he had shown them his mighty strength. Even Elder Yuan had been killed with a single strike, and they weren't even as strong as Elder Yuan. This Zhang Yang was also obviously a lunatic, and he killed without even blinking his eyes. If they stood out right now, perhaps they would have to face the same consequences as Elder Yuan.

Hmph...

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Ignoring the angry expressions of the elders, he moved onto the fighting stage where both of them were standing. He pointed his sword at the two elders then shouted, "You two, kneel down now!"

What?

The eyes of the two elders went wide, and thought there was something wrong with their ears. This lunatic was asking them to kneel down in front of so many people? This was extremely heaven-defying! As a disciple of the outer circle, during the outer circle competition, he had just asked two elders to kneel down in front of everyone? What did this guy actually want to do?

"Bastard! Zhang Yang, are you trying to revolt?!"

The Elder's eyes became bloodshot. This was a plain humiliation! As elders who managed the outer circle, they had not once had to suffer such an insult.

“Hmph! Sooner or later, I, Zhang Yang will become the man who dominates all Thirteen Tycoons! So, it is only right and natural for you to kneel down before me! Do it quickly, otherwise, I'll kill both of you.”

Jiang Chen was being so arrogant that even he himself was almost unable to recognize himself. An ice-cold glow was flickering at the tip of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and judging from his posture, if the two elders refused to kneel down, he would really kill both of them in an instant.

“What does this guy really want?”

“Insane, he has really become insane! He is asking the elders to kneel down!”

“Does he really think he is invincible? This place is the Asura Palace! There are many people who can suppress him with ease!”

The spectators were left speechless. This lunatic had really become nonsensical; no one were able to predict what he would do next. Asking the elders to kneel down, claiming that he was going to suppress all Thirteen Tycoons, just these two statements alone could put him in an everlasting perdition.

“Damn it, you’re revolting!”

One of the two elders could no longer take it. He was a man with a prestigious status; a mighty Combat Soul warrior, an Elder who managed the outer circle! If he really kneeled down before an outer circle disciple, he would lose all his face, and there would be no way for him to stay in the Asura Palace any longer.

“Since you refuse to kneel down before me, you should just go die.”

With soaring killing intent, Jiang Chen had completely transformed into a lunatic. With a swing of his Heavenly Saint Sword, he unleashed a web of sword energies that instantly covered the Elder. Captivated by the web of sword, the Elder realized he was completely trapped and unable to move even a pit, let alone put up any counter measurements.

Puchi... Argh...

Following a miserable shriek, the Elder was sliced in half by Jiang Chen. He died on the spot, just like what happened to Elder Yuan. It was a savage yet miserable scene.

Seeing this, the spectators couldn’t help but gasp in shock. The way they looked at Jiang Chen had once again changed completely. The ferocious approach of this man made them boil with anger. Since the beginning until now, he had killed three men without holding back. One of those three was the number one genius of the outer circle, and the other two were elders in charge of the outer

circle competition.

Because of Jiang Chen, the yearly most important outer circle competition had become completely stirred up. The current situation prevented it from continuing, as no one could predict what kind of turmoil this lunatic would bring. In the minds of these people, this man had gone completely insane, and he had most like suffered from Qi Deviation during cultivation, which accidentally brought him onto the path of a devil.

“And you, it’s too late for you to kneel down. I previously gave you a chance, so, you can die with him now.”

Jiang Chen swung the sword in his hand into the last Elder, who seemed stunned. Jiang Chen was a genuine Combat King, although he had hidden it from others. Of course, even if he wasn’t a Combat King, but instead just a Late Divine Core warrior, he could still easily kill an Early Combat Soul warrior with the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Puchi!

As expected, the last Elder followed the steps of the previous two elders; sliced in half.

Four corpses laid on two separate fighting stages, and fresh blood was flowing out from them. Even their internal organs were scattered across the stage. It was an extremely savage scene. Jiang Chen stood on the fighting stage like a demon king, showing no signs of discomfort toward the miserable scene surrounding him.

“Hahaha... Daddy here is the number one warrior underneath the heavens! If any of the cowards here dares challenge me, come!”

Jiang Chen heartily laughed out as he swept his eyes across the disciples standing beneath the fighting stage.

“Lunatic, this guy is a complete lunatic! Quickly, go and get help from the inner circle! Otherwise, there is no way we can settle this madness!”

“He has killed all three elders, go get help immediately! We have to capture this guy, he is too savage and ferocious, and might kill all of us soon! No one from the outer circle is able to stop him!”

“Someone has gone to get help, I’m sure some powerful warriors will soon arrive and put him down!”

The spectators couldn’t help but keep backing off, as no one dared to stay too close to this lunatic. They were waiting for help from the inner circle.

Not long after that, four powerful figures flew in from the direction of the inner circle, and landed in the square. They were all young man; geniuses and elites of the inner circle. Three of them were Mid Combat Soul warriors, and the last was a Late Combat Soul warrior. Compared to the three elders who were killed by Jiang Chen, they were much stronger.

“Look, it’s senior disciple Song Liangdong, a powerful Late Combat Soul warrior, and superior genius of the inner circle! The other three are also Mid Combat Soul warriors! That Zhang Yang is finished this time!”

“Good, perfect! Kill that lunatic! There will never be any peaceful days if we keep this lunatic in the Asura Palace!”

The arrival of help brought joyful emotions to all outer circle disciples. Since even a mighty Late Combat Soul warrior had arrived, and since Zhang Yang was just merely a Late Divine Core warrior, there was no way he could put up a fight against them. His death was inevitable.

After Song Liangdong and the other three men arrived, they immediately saw the scene on the fighting stage, causing their expressions to instantly change. They were all inner circle geniuses who originally came from the outer circle, so they personally knew these three elders, and they were pretty familiar with Wang Yuan as well. They never expected to see all these four men dead. Not only that, they never expected to see someone with the courage to kill elders during the outer circle competition. This was the first time something like this had happened in the Asura Palace’s history, and it was simply a heaven-defying incident.

"Zhang Yang, are you the one who did all this?"

Song Liangdong couldn’t believe what he had just seen. Although

he didn't know Zhang Yang, he was able to call out his name. Someone had obviously told him about what happened here. However, the man had only told him that there was a violent man in the outer circle who had killed the strongest disciple of the outer circle, Wang Yuan, as well as one Elder. However, when Song Liangdong arrived, he realized it wasn't just two men, but four men who had been killed by Zhang Yang.

“Who are you, and who gave you the audacity to mind my, Zhang Yang's business?! I'm the number one genius of the Asura Palace, if you four kneel down before me right now, I'll spare you from death! Otherwise, you'll have to face the same consequence as them!”

Jiang Chen pointed his sword at Song Liangdong and the other three men. It looked like he was going to carry out his arrogant act to the end.

Many people once again rolled their eyes. They could finally confirm that Zhang Yang had gone insane. No normal human would do something like this, and he had even asked the geniuses from the inner circle to kneel down. If this wasn't a sign of his madness, what would it be?

“Damn it, why is there such a reckless fool in the outer circle? Senior disciple Song, let me kill him.”

One of the Mid Combat Soul disciples was unable to bear it. With a sway of his body, he leapt onto the fighting stage. Without saying another word, he struck out with his palm, unleashing a huge, bright palm from the sky above, aimed toward Jiang Chen's face.

Jiang Chen's brows twitched, then he countered with a palm strike of his own. Two huge, dazzling palms instantly collided together. The tremendous force pushed Jiang Chen to the edge of the fighting stage. His body was trembling violently, and he nearly fell down from the stage.

"You're merely an ant at the Divine Core realm, you should feel proud that you managed to stay alive after taking a strike from me. Next, you'll die."

The inner circle disciple said with an extremely cold voice.

Zhang Yang was finally subdued by someone; causing many to sigh out in relief. Previously, they were still worried that even the inner circle disciples would fail to bring this Zhang Yang under control, which would just be absurd. But fortunately, they had just worried too much.

"Is that so? If you kneel down before me now, I'll spare your life. I don't mind telling you this; I, Zhang Yang found a tremendous legacy, which allowed me to break through with ease. Now, I'll show you me breaking through to the Combat Soul realm!"

Jiang Chen shouted as his raging aura burst out from his body. In just a very short amount of time, he broke through to the Combat Soul realm, and finally stopped at the peak of the Early Combat Soul realm.

"What?!"

Many people cried out in shock at the same time, while others nearly had their jaws drop to the ground; their eyes nearly popped out from their sockets. Jiang Chen had let them witness the birth of a miracle, as he had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm from the Divine Core realm in front of them, as easily as slicing through butter.

While the spectators were still bewildered by what just happened, Jiang Chen moved once again. He charged forward like a sudden clap of thunder and arrived in front of the inner circle disciple in the blink of an eye. He raised his sword high up into the air and swung it down from top to bottom, slicing yet another person in half.

The audience burst into an uproar once again. Now, everyone felt as if they were suffocating. While many of them feared this Zhang Yang, some were actually envious of him. They were wondering what kind of legacy he had found, which allowed him to break through two stages in a single day, even crossing the big gap between the Divine Core and Combat Soul realm. If not for the fact that they had personally witnessed it, no one would have believed it to be real.

"Bastard!"

Song Liangdong furiously roared out. He finally moved, shooting himself toward Jiang Chen to launch an attack.

Two ice-cold beams leaked out from Jiang Chen's eyes. Killing

intent was bursting out from his body as he turned into a trail of light and shot toward his opponent. Today, his sole purpose was to wreak havoc; the more the better. He wanted to lure those mighty warriors who were qualified to open up the Freezing Hell Jail to him, as that was the only chance for him to enter.

Jiang Chen wasn't scared that any powerful warriors would kill him in an instant. Humans were after all greedy by nature. Him continuously leveling up had definitely attracted the attention of many, and he believed that many people would be interested in the 'legacy' he had found yesterday, and that didn't exclude those 13 Tycoons. At that point of time, as long as they wanted to know about his secret, they would keep him alive, and the Freezing Hell Jail was the perfect place to place him.

Chapter 517 - Freezing Hell Jail

A loud explosive sound rang through the air as Jiang Chen's sword destroyed Song Liangdong's palm strike. However, it didn't stop there, as it continued its way and impaled Song Liangdong's palm within a split second. A fierce and trenchant sword energy burst out from the sword, and, under the eyes of everyone, Song Liangdong's palm exploded; turning into a blood mist.

Arghh...

Song Liangdong let out a miserable shriek as his palm exploded. However, his shock was greater than his pain. Even if this guy was able to continuously level up, he appeared to just be an Early Combat Soul warrior, whereas Song Liangdong himself was a mighty Late Combat Soul warrior. So, why couldn't Song Liangdong withstand even a single strike from this guy, and was severely wounded in an instant? The strength of this guy had reached a level beyond anyone's imagination.

Swoosh...

Showing no mercy, Jiang Chen swung his sword with incredible speed, ferociously slicing through Song Liangdong's neck. Song Liangdong could only feel a shivering sensation from his neck, and didn't even have the time to respond. His head was sliced off from his neck, just like how Wang Yuan had been killed. Neither of them felt any pain before dying.

Plop...

Song Liangdong's headless body fell down to the ground. After twitching a few times, it stopped moving.

A pandemonium broke out in the entire square, and some nearly fainted on the spot, as they had just witnessed a scene that wouldn't even appear in their wildest dreams. That lunatic had just killed Song Liangdong! No one had any idea how strong this guy was. Even if he had found himself a heaven-defying legacy; even if he had become an Early Combat Soul warrior, that didn't mean he should be able to kill the inner circle genius, Song Liangdong.

Also, what kind of legacy had this lunatic discovered? It caused people to become envious of him.

"He killed senior disciple Song! But, he's only an Early Combat Soul warrior, how can he be so incredibly strong?"

"So extremely fierce! What exactly does that guy want? Even if he wants to prove himself, there is no need to kill so many people. If he didn't kill anyone, with his performance today, I'm certain the Asura Palace would have put a lot of attention on him. With that, he might even have become a Tycoon in the future. But now, there's no hope for that."

"There is no easy way out for him now. Zhang Yang has gone insane. I believe that underneath the heavens, there's only those he can't kill, but none he doesn't dare kill. This matter has escalated to a very serious level. Perhaps only those core disciples

are able to subdue him now. If any of the 13 Tycoons come here, he will be met with certain death.”

Everyone present were in shock, as this was such a terrifying scene. No one expected this Zhang Yang to rise up in such a quick manner. Of course, no one were thinking that this wasn't the real Zhang Yang. The real Zhang Yang was no asleep within a storage ring located in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea.

“I'll ask a Tycoon to come here and deal with him.”

A Mid Combat Soul warrior who came here with Song Liangdong said with an unsightly expression on his face. Without hesitating, he left the scene and went looking for a Tycoon. Song Liangdong had been killed, instilling great fear in them as they face Jiang Chen. They didn't have enough courage to stay here any longer, let alone attack him.

"I'll go with you."

Another man who was trembling with fear as well said. He wasn't willing to stay here for even one more second. He immediately followed after the first man, and began flying toward the inner area of the Asura Palace.

"You, stay here!"

Jiang Chen shouted as he forcefully swung his sword. A

miserable cry rang through the air as the inner circle disciple was killed. The other disciple simply let out a helpless cry, then hastily bolted away, scared that Jiang Chen would attack him from behind. Of course, Jiang Chen had no intentions of killing this man; he had to let him go get help.

There more than a few thousand dumbfounded disciples in the square. All of them were wearing the same terrified expressions as they repeatedly backed off, trying their best to keep a safe distance from this lunatic who had gone on a rampage.

Jiang Chen disdainfully gazed at these outer circle disciples. He had lost his interest in these people. He had done everything according to his plan. With his actions, the upper echelons of the Asura Palace would definitely not let him off easily. Also, he gave them an impression that the legacy he had found was extremely powerful, so those guys wouldn't kill him straightaway. So, what awaited him could only be the Freezing Hell Jail.

Only by personally entering the Freezing Hell Jail would have have a chance to save Tan Lang.

Not long after, the disciple who ran away from the scene returned, but not alone. A formidable guy came with him. This guy only had one arm, and his face carried a ruthless expression. Jiang Chen was able to recognize this guy with just a single look; he was the man he had fought in the Chaotic Ocean, the Eighth Tycoon – Ling Yi!

Jiang Chen never expected to see such a big-shot right away. With great speed, he put away the sword in his hand. As Ling Yi's

arm had been sliced off by the Heavenly Saint Sword, it wouldn't be good if he saw 'Zhang Yang' carrying the same sword.

“Look! That's senior disciple Ling Yi, the Eighth Tycoon! Zhang Yang is completely doomed this time, senior disciple Ling Yi is a Fourth Grade Combat King!”

“It's a shame that senior disciple Ling Yi's arm was chopped off by someone. I heard that an amazing young man appeared in the Chaotic Ocean, his name is Jiang Chen, and he's with that stinky monk. Now, all four major powers are hunting both of them.”

“That Jiang Chen is utterly detestable, how dare he stand against the Asura Palace? It will only bring him death! Although senior disciple Ling Yi has lost one of his arms, his Combat King cultivation isn't something any ordinary man can compare with. No matter how strong this Zhang Yang is, he was no match for the Eighth Tycoon.”

When the audience realized that it was the Eighth Tycoon who had come to help, they couldn't help but feel excited. In their minds, the 13 Tycoons were the most respectful existences, and also their idols.

After Ling Yi arrived, he immediately saw the miserable scene presented on the fighting stage. Fury instantly burst out from his eyes as he turned to Jiang Chen who stood on the fighting stake, looking calm and relaxed.

“Senior disciple Ling, that’s him, he’s that Zhang Yang! He has killed many people!”

The inner circle disciple said. His voice trembled whenever he thought of Jiang Chen’s savage and ferocious approaches.

“Early Combat Soul warrior, but has the ability to kill Late Combat Soul warriors. Not only that, you were only on a Mid Divine Core warrior yesterday. Now, tell me, what kind of legacy have you found? I might give you a quick death if you tell me.”

Ling Yi said while portraying a domineering image. He showed a look saying that he did not take Jiang Chen seriously at all. Just as Jiang Chen had expected, Ling Yi was greatly interested in the legacy Zhang Yang found. Being able to bring such a tremendous transformation to a person, allowing him to break through to stages in one day, and bring tremendous improvements to his combat strength, it could only be a heaven-defying legacy. In the minds of many people here, Zhang Yang must have found a supreme treasure, which explained his dramatic transformation.

Ling Yi naturally wanted to get hold of the legacy Zhang Yang had found. Because he had lost one arm, as long as there was a chance to regrow his arm, he would never ignore it.

“Haha, Ling Yi, who do you think you are? Who gave you the audacity to talk to me, a genius? Let me tell you this; sooner or later, I’ll be dominating all of you 13 Tycoons. Now, if you kneel down before me, once I make my way to the top of the world, I will definitely reward you handsomely. However, if you try to stand against me, these dead bodies will be your example.”

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out, then told Ling Yi with a loud voice.

Hearing this, Ling Yi was instantly startled. He thought that Zhang Yang would kneel down and beg for forgiveness upon meeting him, but instead, not only was this guy not afraid of him, the words that came out from his mouth were hundreds of times more arrogant than Ling Yi. Was there something wrong with this guy's brain? Or did he really think that he could fight against a Fourth Grade Combat King with his pathetic Early Combat Soul cultivation base?

The spectators nearly fainted once again. They totally believed that Zhang Yang had gone insane after finding the legacy. After all, no sane person would ask the Eighth Tycoon to kneel down. This was simply an act of courting death.

“You just have no idea what death or danger means!”

Ling Yi was really angry. He stretched his arm forward and made a grabbing gesture, unleashing a bright palm that turned into a large cage and instantly trapped Zhang Yang within. No matter how much Zhang Yang tried to attack it, there was no way he could break it. Seeing this situation, all the outer circle disciples sighed out in relief. This guy was luckily not so heaven-defying that he was able to fight a Combat King.

"You lunatic! I can kill you right now!"

Ling Yi said with a loud voice.

“Haha, do it! Kill me now! If you don’t kill me now, I will sooner or later become much stronger, and at that point of time, you will die!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter and showed no signs of fear as he faced Ling Yi’s suppression.

“You’re dreaming! For the crimes you have committed, killing you straightaway would be too light! I’ll throw you in the Freezing Hell Jail, where you’ll slowly be tormented until you die!”

Ling Yi said with a loud voice.

His words brought great joy to Jiang Chen, and he couldn’t help but sigh out in relief. As expected, Ling Yi had no intentions of killing him straightaway, but instead wanted to throw him into the Freezing Hell Jail and torture him until finding out what legacy he had found. This fit exactly as Jiang Chen had planned.

“Perfect, throwing him into the Freezing Hell Jail! He’ll never see the sunlight again, and will be slowly tormented until he dies!”

“That’s right, just killing him is too light of a punishment! We must let him suffer all the tortures of the Freezing Hell Jail!”

Upon hearing Ling Yi's announcement of punishment for Zhang Yang, joyful cheers instantly burst out from the spectators. Everyone feared and hated this lunatic, but no matter how strong he was, once he was put into the Freezing Hell Jail, all that would await him was certain death. Although no one here had seen the Freezing Hell Jail before, they knew every single frightening legend regarding it.

Ling Yi stretched his arm forward and performed another grabbing gesture, immediately ripping apart the space in front of him and revealing a black doorway. Even from afar, one could easily feel the ice-cold air leaking out from behind the doorway, bringing a chill down their spines.

After that, Ling Yi pulled Jiang Chen up from a distance and threw him into the door. The 13 Tycoons were all given supreme authority, and they could open the doorway to the Freezing Hell Jail at will.

Jiang Chen didn't resist once throughout the entire process. In just the blink of an eye, he had entered the Freezing Hell Jail.

The surrounding scene had suddenly changed. Extremely cold wind invaded him from all directions, causing Jiang Chen's to shudder. Jiang Chen also found out about something, not only was the air here extremely cold, it was corrosive as well. In order to repel the cold air, he would have to unleash his Yuan energy. However, this cold wind could even corrode his Yuan energy. It was no wonder why everyone was so scared of this Freezing Hell Jail. No matter how strong a person was, his Yuan energy would eventually deplete because of the corrosion, and at that point of

time, he would be greeted by death.

Chapter 518 – Tan Lang’s Miserable Condition

For any ordinary cultivator, the Freezing Hell Jail’s cold wind was no doubt deadly. However, that wasn’t the case for Jiang Chen. Firstly, he possessed really powerful Yang energy, and the Dragon Transformation skill filled him with vigor and vitality. So, he had no reason to fear the cold wind. Although the cold wind here was intense, it still wasn’t equal to the wind in the world of glaciers located in the Island of Ice. Secondly, Jiang Chen didn’t need to mind the corrosive effect coming from the cold wind either, because the Dragon Transformation skill allowed him to absorb nearly anything in the world. He could even absorb Lord Nether’s deadly poison, let alone this cold wind.

With a shook, Jiang Chen stabilized his body. Looking around, he discovered he had come to another space. It was an extremely gloomy space, and fog was lingering around all over the place.

Graaa...

The roars of various demons entered his ears from various directions. Looking ahead, Jiang Chen saw numerous cages hovering within this huge space. He had no idea what material was used to make these cages, but they looked extremely sturdy. Each cage contained a prisoner, some of them being powerful demons. Many of them were seen covered in blood, and their auras were weak. They were clearly approaching the end of their lives, as the cold wind had started corroding the bodies of these demons.

Jiang Chen wore a calm expression and showed no emotions,

then strode forward. His first step was to find further. As he moved further, he was able to view these demons within the cages clearer. He found several dozens of demons, and the weakest were Second Grade Demon Kings, the strongest being a Fifth Grade Demon King. There might even be stronger existence in this place, but they weren't kept here

When he saw all these demons, Jiang Chen couldn't help but lick his lips. For time, these powerful Demon Kings were the best tonics for his cultivation. If he could absorb the demon souls of these Demon Kings, he could at least break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm.

As the space within the Freezing Hell Jail was extremely huge, it was not an easy task to find Tan Lang amongst so many cages. However, after putting the Great Soul Derivation skill to use, he quickly found Tan Lang's aura, and immediately began striding in that direction.

"Graa! Little man! I can tell that you're part of the Asura Palace by your clothes. Why are you here? What kind of severe crimes have you committed? Hahaha..."

When Jiang Chen walked past a Fourth Grade Demon King, the Demon King immediately spoke out. This Demon King was a Mighty Lion (species name), a rare demon species that possessed a powerful innate ability. If Jiang Chen absorbed its demon soul, he would easily be able to obtain its innate ability.

However, when Jiang Chen absorbed demon souls, he would usually only absorb the energy contained within, and selectively

give up on the innate abilities. Unless he found an incredibly powerful innate ability, Jiang Chen wouldn't bother absorbing it. The True Dragon skills he possessed were extremely frightening, and with the combat skills he had from his previous life, he naturally wouldn't give a single thought to the innate abilities of those ordinary demon beasts.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had a feeling that he should focus all his effort on cultivating those True Dragon combat skills brought to him by the Dragon Transformation skill. The Dragon Transformation skill was a mysterious and divine skill, so nothing could go wrong by cultivating the combat skills that came from it

“So, you can still laugh even after being trapped in this place. It looks like you have a pretty strong mentality.”

Jiang Chen mockingly said to the Demon King. He could tell with a single look that this Demon King had been trapped in this place for very long, causing its state of mind to nearly collapse. So, upon seeing a newcomer, it couldn't help but want to tease him.

“You bastard! Let me tell you this; you will never be able to leave the Freezing Hell Jail! In here, only death is guaranteed. I can see that you possess strong Yang energy, and that you're full of vigor and vitality. Why don't you let me eat you? Once I've regained my energy, I'll find a way to leave this place. It's much better than both of us dying in this shitty place.”

The Demon King finally revealed its intentions. It stuck out its tongue, and treated Jiang Chen as its delicious prey.

"Thinking of eating me? I will eat you in a moment."

After leaving behind his words, Jiang Chen strode away without turning his head back. He had decided to absorb all the demon souls locked up in this place. For him, this was an excellent opportunity.

Walking like the lightest feather, Jiang Chen ignored the cold wind lingering around his body. Soon, he arrived at a cage. A young man was seen lying motionlessly inside of the cage. His head dangling by his neck, and his entire body covered in blood. One couldn't even tell what color his shirt originally had.

The young man looked paralyzed, and he was lying there like a dead man, completely motionless. Although Jiang Chen stood next to the cage, this young man didn't show any signs of having noticed him. If one could look closer, he would see that this young man's legs were violently trembling, but it seemed that he had lost his strength to stand up. As a matter of fact, his legs had been forcefully broken by someone. Right now, the young man was just quietly lying there, allowing the cold wind to corrode his body.

Looking at the miserable state of this young man, raging fury erupted from Jiang Chen's eyes. He had seen all of Tan Lang's wounds, and they were extremely severe; bringing him to a life-threatening situation. If he was left alone here, Tan Lang would die in less than three days.

Tan Lang had currently lost all his ability to resist. His Yuan

energy had been sucked dry, and he was like an arrow at the end of its flight. With injuries like these, even if he was rescued from this place, without healing him with some divine medication, his cultivation base would be incredibly difficult to restore.

Jiang Chen was truly angry right now. Right at this very moment, his hatred toward the Asura Palace had reached new heights. After learning of Zhuang Fan's miserable encounter, he had only turned his nose down on Xiao Nanfeng alone. But now, he really believed that the Asura Palace no longer deserved to exist. It was a heartless sect, and there was no point in allowing it to continue existing. No matter what, Tan Lang was a genius disciple of the Asura Palace, and even if he had committed the crime, this punishment had gone too far, as this was the most serious punishment given to the worst enemies of the Asura Palace. Not only had Tan Lang been locked up in the Freezing Hell Jail, he had also been devastatingly tortured.

"Brother Tan."

Jiang Chen called out with a soft voice. Tan Lang's body trembled, and he slowly raised his head. His hair was disheveled, his face was extremely pale, and he looked incredibly weak right now, as if he was about to die at any second.

"You, who are you?"

Tan Lang asked with a weak voice. According to his memory, he didn't know this man. Actually, this wasn't strange at all. Although Tan Lang and Zhang Yang were both disciples of the Asura Palace, there was a huge difference between their cultivation

base and position, causing them to never meet before. So, Tan Lang didn't know about Zhang Yang.

Jiang Chen pointed his finger like a sword and shot a pure Yuan energy into Tan Lang's body. At the same time, he unleashed a golden barrier and covered Tan Lang's body with it. After that, he said, "It's me, I'm Jiang Chen."

As if Jiang Chen's name could bring him energy, Tan Lang's eyes went wide, and his face became expressive. He stared at this strange man with a look of disbelief, and thought that the face of this man did not belong to Jiang Chen. However, the voice was indeed Jiang Chen's voice.

"Brother Jiang, you... how did you come into this place?"

Tan Lang was astonished. He tried to stand up, but he remembered that his legs had been broken by someone. His movement affected his injuries, causing a painful expression to emerge on his face.

"You have suffered because of me. So, it wouldn't make sense if I didn't come here to rescue you."

Jiang Chen smiled.

"Brother Jiang, you better find a way out of here quickly. This place is not a good place. I'm a cripple now, and even if you saved me from here, I would still be a cripple. Don't involve yourself in

this. I know you're capable, and since you have a way to come here, you'll definitely have a way to leave as well. I don't want to get you in trouble. You saved my life in the Southern Continent, and it is now time for me to pay my life back to you."

Tan Lang said.

Jiang Chen was stunned. He thought Tan Lang would burst with joy upon realizing that Jiang Chen had come here to rescue him. However, not only did Tan Lang not show any excitement, he actually showed worry for Jiang Chen's safety. This was a sign of a trustworthy man, which instantly warmed Jiang Chen's heart. With this alone, he felt that sneaking into the Asura Palace to rescue Tan Lang was worth it.

Right at this moment, a crack suddenly erupted in the Freezing Hell Jail's space, and a man was revealed not far away from Jiang Chen. This man was none other than the Eighth Tycoon, Ling Yi.

"Both of you are dying, is there anything you can still talk about?"

Ling Yi said while laughing grimly.

"Ling Yi, when I die and become a ghost, I, Tan Lang will never let you go!"

Upon seeing Ling Yi, those words emerged through Tan Lang's tightly clenched teeth. A murderous hatred leaked out from his

eyes. Not once in his life had he hated someone so much; Ling Yi was the first.

"All your injuries were caused by him."

Jiang Chen's face turned cold. From the look in Tan Lang's eyes and his tone, Jiang Chen had guessed the truth.

"Hmph. Save your breath. Zhang Yang, you should feel honored that I didn't kill you on the spot. I'll give you a chance to live now, as long as you tell me about the legacy you found yesterday, I will spare your life."

Ling Yi coldly harrumphed.

"Fine, I'll tell you."

Jiang Chen smiled.

"Are you serious?"

Ling Yi was delighted. Initially, he thought he would have to go through much trouble in order to obtain the legacy Zhang Yang had found. However, this guy unexpectedly compromised by himself. This was the best result he could expect.

"Open your eyes and take a good look, this is the legacy I found! I'm not Zhang Yang!"

After saying that, Jiang Chen's bones and muscles began twisting. In just a few breaths of time, he transformed back into his original look.

"It's you!"

Seeing the man suddenly transform into Jiang Chen, Ling Yi instantly cried out in shock. He couldn't help but take a step back, as he never expected Zhang Yang to actually be Jiang Chen. He knew that this young man was incredibly difficult to deal with. However, Ling Yi quickly calmed himself down. He began laughing, then said, "Jiang Chen, not only did you not take the road to heaven, you actually delivered yourself to hell where there is no exit. It looks like you and Tan Lang are really good friends, as you were willing to risk your life to come here and try to rescue him. However, you're just wasting your time and effort. Today, even if you're given a pair of wings, I will never let you leave the Asura Palace!"

Chapter 519 - Jiang Chen's Plan

Ling Yi was shaking with emotions. Only he knew how much hatred he had for Jiang Chen. After the fight in the Chaotic Ocean, not only had he lost one of his arms, he had also lost his reputation as the Eighth Tycoon. He was a well-renowned man, but he was defeated by a First Grade Combat King. This was something he could never accept.

During the past few days, whenever he thought about Jiang Chen, he would clench his teeth in anger, and feel a strong desire to devour this man. Now, while all of the four major powers were searching for Jiang Chen everywhere, he had actually brought himself to Ling Yi. If they had met each other outside, he would fear Jiang Chen, but since this was the Asura Palace, he had no reason to fear him, as there were many existences here that could easily kill Jiang Chen.

Although Ling Yi was betraying in an unruly manner, he was actually moving backward. After all, he knew how strong Jiang Chen was. If he was still in his prime, he wouldn't have backed off upon seeing Jiang Chen. However, as he had lost one of his arms, his combat strength was severely affected, causing him to no longer be a match for Jiang Chen.

While backing off, Ling Yi took out a talisman. It was a golden colored talisman, and he instantly crushed it upon bringing it out. It was clearly a communication talisman. Not long after the talisman was crushed, some mighty warriors would arrive.

Jiang Chen wasn't bothered by Ling Yi's action. No matter how

many people arrived, he had no reason to fear them. Furthermore, he had never planned to leave just like that.

As the Freezing Hell Jail was an important place for the Asura Palace, he would alert those powerful figures upon forcefully breaking out. More importantly, with Jiang Chen's current strength, he couldn't forcefully break the space in this place. Of course, Jiang Chen still had other ways to leave this place.

"Brother Tan, let me kill this guy and get revenge for you."

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen turned to Tan Lang and said. In an instant, he transformed into a trail of light and dashed into Ling Yi. Using the Spatial Shift skill which granted him incredible speed, he arrived in front of Ling Yi in just a split second. Jiang Chen would not show any mercy when dealing with Ling Yi. This guy was after all a Fourth Grade Combat King, not an easy opponent.

Therefore, Jiang Chen immediately attacked with the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. Upon taking the first step, the entire space violently swayed, and numerous illusionary dragons flickers around his leg. Jiang Chen stepped onto Ling Yi's head.

Sensing the formidable energy and oppressive might coming from Jiang Chen, Ling Yi's expression immediately changed. He dared not neglect this, and instantly unleashed a large layer of brilliant rays to counter the attack.

Tap! Tap! Tap!

Jiang Chen took three steps in a row, and each step collided violently with Ling Yi's attack. After losing one arm, Ling Yi became unable to fight with his full strength. Because of this, he was no match for Jiang Chen, let alone when Jiang Chen was using the powerful True Dragon Skill – Azure Dragon's Five Steps.

Blergh...

Ling Yi was forced back by the tremendous force, and threw up a few mouthfuls of blood. His face was extremely pale, and his aura was in a chaotic state.

“Argh! Someone, help me quickly!”

Ling Yi furiously roared out. He was well aware of how frightening Jiang Chen was, and if no one came to help him, perhaps he would soon be killed by this man.

However, Jiang Chen would never give him the chance. While Ling Yi roared out, Jiang Chen took his fourth step.

Boom! Argh!!

The fourth step fell down like a mighty bolt of lightning. All of Jiang Chen's strength had merged into this single step, and it stomped down onto Ling Yi's head. A miserable shriek escaped Ling Yi's mouth before his head exploded. He died on the spot.

"What?!"

Tan Lang cried out in shock upon witnessing this frightening scene. Jiang Chen really killed Ling Yi, a Fourth Grade Combat King! If he hadn't witnessed this himself, he never would have believed it. He knew Jiang Chen had broken through to the Combat King realm. However, killing a Fourth Grade Combat King as just a First Grade Combat King, this was extremely shocking.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen's current combat strength was only equal to that of Ling Yi. So, it wasn't easy for Jiang Chen to kill him. However, after their fight in the Chaotic Ocean, Ling Yi had subconsciously began to fear Jiang Chen, and because he had also lost one arm, a huge gap was drawn between their strength.

"Who is that young man? He's so bold!"

"This is the first time a Tycoon has been killed in the Freezing Hell Jail, this is incredible!"

.....

At the moment, the entire Freezing Hell Jail broke out into an uproar. Many demons and criminals rested their eyes upon Jiang Chen, their expressions that of disbelief. However, the death of a Tycoon still brought them great joy.

"Who is creating trouble in the Freezing Hell Jail?"

Right at this moment, a deep voice run through the air in the Freezing Hell Jail. At the same time, several dozen powerful auras arrived in this place. Amongst these auras, the most powerful belonged to a Seventh Grade Combat King. Jiang Chen could easily tell this from the voice alone.

Swoosh!

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen once again returned to Tan Lang. He looked at Tan Lang with a bright smile, "I've gotten revenge for you."

"Brother Jiang, you've gone too far this time."

Ling Yi was dead, and Tan Lang's mind was filled with joy. However, because of the current situation, he couldn't truly enjoy the happiness. Now, with the arrival of those powerful figures, this place had become a jail of death, and there was no way they could escape even if they were given a pair of wings.

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and took out the Heavenly Saint Sword. He swung the sword forward and shattered the cage that locked Tan Lang up. After that, he hastily said, "Brother Tan, I need you to enter my sword's inner space. I'll use the Lightning's Force to help your body recover. No matter what happens later, don't let it distract your state of mind."

After saying that, a crack appeared on the Heavenly Saint Sword's body. The Heavenly Saint Sword was Jiang Chen's Natal Weapon, and after Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat King

realm, it had become a King Weapon, which produced a space within its body.

Since Jiang Chen had the confidence to enter the Freezing Hell Jail and rescue Tan Lang, he must have a trump card in his hand. In fact, his trump card was the Heavenly Tribulation. He hadn't gone through Heavenly Tribulation after breaking through to the Combat King, and now, with the arrival of those powerful warriors of the Asura Palace, he would make them go through Heavenly Tribulation with him. When Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat Soul realm, he was greeted by Minor Three Tribulation, and this time, he was sure to be greeted with Intermediate Six Tribulation. Once his Intermediate Six Tribulation arrived, the entire Freezing Hell Jail would be destroyed. He had no doubts about this.

"What are you saying?"

Tan Lang was startled. He had no idea what Jiang Chen meant.

"Come in quickly, you'll understand soon."

Not taking any time to explain, Jiang Chen made the Heavenly Saint Sword emit a suction force, causing Tan Lang to be pulled into its internal space. Initially, he planned on placing Tan Lang within his storage ring, and once he left this place, he would let him out. However, as Tan Lang was suffering from severe injuries right now, it would greatly benefit his recovery if he could accept the baptism of lightning. After all, lightning possessed incredibly pure Yang energy, and it was the best method to temper one's body.

The Heavenly Saint Sword had only become a King Weapon recently, so it wasn't in a very stable state. So, Jiang Chen would take this opportunity to temper it. As Tan Lang was hiding inside of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it would provide him good protection and spare him from the Heavenly Tribulation's damage. He would also be able to obtain some benefits from this tempering process.

Soon, several dozen figures were revealed in Jiang Chen's line of sight. When they saw Ling Yi's dead body, they were struck with great shock. They turned their eyes to Jiang Chen. It was obvious that he was the one who had killed Ling Yi.

While they were measuring Jiang Chen with their eyes, Jiang Chen looked back at them as well. All of these guys were Combat Kings. The weakest among them was a Second Grade Combat King, while the strongest was a Seventh Grade Combat King. Five of them were old men, and were supposedly elders of the Asura Palace. The remaining men didn't look old, and most of them were around twenty to thirty years old. Three of them were tycoons.

“Who are you? How dare you kill a Tycoon of the Asura Palace in the Freezing Hell Jail?! You're courting death!”

The old Seventh Grade Combat King shouted at Jiang Chen.

“I'm Jiang Chen, the man you've been looking all over for.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What?! How did you come here?”

The old man was really surprised. He didn't doubt that Jiang Chen's words. Although he had never seen Jiang Chen before, someone had described the image of this young man to him. He was a young man who was about 17-18 years old. Besides that, Tan Lang had disappeared from his cage. So, this young man must be Jiang Chen, and he was here to rescue Tan Lang.

“You've come at the perfect time! We've been looking all over for you. You've killed disciples of the Asura Palace, and because of that, you deserve to die. Now, you've even killed our Eighth Tycoon. Now, no one can save you. However, there is one thing I don't understand. Why would you come to this place? Is that Tan Lang really that important to you? Or do you perhaps think you can leave this place safely?”

It was the Sixth Tycoon who just spoke. He looked to be in his thirties, and he was portraying an imposing image. The Tycoons weren't ranked according to age, but strength. The Sixth Tycoon was a Fifth Grade Combat King, and was a powerful man.

“Of course. If I want to leave, none of you can stop me. Also, I don't see why this Freezing Hell Jail should exist.”

While saying that, a bright crimson beam shot out from Jiang Chen's head. Within the bright beam, there was a blood red shadow of an Azure Dragon flying around. It lifted its head and let a soul-shaking dragon cry into the sky

Rrrr...

Explosive thunderous sounds suddenly rang through the air, causing the entire Freezing Hell Jail to violently shake.

“What’s going on?! Why can I feel a tremendous pressure?! This isn’t the kind of pressure that comes from a human, but rather from Heaven and Earth!”

The old Seventh Grade Combat King was struck with astonishment. Right at this moment, everyone turned their heads toward the sky. No one had any idea what was going to happen. However, they had a really bad feeling about it.

At the same time, dark clouds suddenly gathered over the Asura Palace. Lightning flashed within the sky, and thunder roared out. The entire scene looked like the arrival of doomsday.

“What’s going on? Why did the color of the sky suddenly change?”

“Such a tremendous pressure! What’s going to happen? Is this heavens’ anger?”

“I once read about something similar in a book. I think this is Heavenly Tribulation! Heavens! Could it be that someone is about to face Heavenly Tribulation in the Asura Palace? Only a Great Saint can attract Heavenly Tribulation, and there is no one at that level

in the Asura Palace... Or, perhaps a heaven-defying object has emerged in Asura Palace, thus attracting Heavenly Tribulation?”

.....

The scene caused everyone to panic. No one were able to remain calm.

Chapter 520 - Destroying The Freezing Hell Jail

Dark clouds were gathered in the sky above, and lightning was constantly flashing within. More and more bolts of lightning were pouring out from the clouds, startling all people in the Asura Palace.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Powerful figures kept rushing out from the inner area of the Asura Palace. All Combat Kings had revealed themselves, and all of the tycoons had shown up. Xiao Nanfeng and the grey-haired Elder were staring at the raging clouds in the sky in shock, wondering what was going on.

“What’s going on? Who’s going to face Heavenly Tribulation in the Asura Palace?”

Elder Liu exclaimed.

“This pressure is too strong, it might alert Palace Chief and the Great Elder who are in deep secluded cultivation.”

Another Elder said. The Palace Chief and Great Elder of the Asura Palace were both Combat Emperors, and the degree of their strength was immeasurable.

Suddenly, something strange happened. The vast and dense thunder clouds suddenly disappeared. However, the sky was still very dark. Not only that, although those clouds had disappeared, the tremendous pressure had actually become stronger, and everyone could still clearly hear the deafening claps of thunder.

"What exactly is going on?!"

The Third Tycoon shouted out in astonishment. He had no idea what was going on.

"The Freezing Hell Jail, the Heavenly Tribulation has moved to the Freezing Hell Jail! Hurry, we need to find out what has happened!"

Xiao Nanfeng was unable to keep his calm any longer. Although the Asura Palace was a major power in the Liang Province, there was still a tremendous gap between them and the superpowers of the Divine Continent. Even their Palace Chief, the mighty Combat Emperor had never witnessed a real Heavenly Tribulation before, let alone they. Heavenly Tribulation was a supreme concept, and it would usually only be attracted when a Minor Saint was breaking through to the Great Saint realm, or when a Great Saint was trying to become an immortal. It was impossible for any ordinary cultivators to experience it. But now, a genuine Heavenly Tribulation was descending upon the Asura Palace, and it had gone straight to the Freezing Hell Jail, greatly shocking all of them. Without having to think much, it must be that someone in the Freezing Hell Jail had attracted Heavenly Tribulation.

Heavenly Tribulation could go wherever it wished. This was a

vast universe, and there were many planes similar to the Saint Origin Realm. In every plane, whenever an abnormal monster appeared, Heavenly Tribulation would immediately be attracted. Therefore, although the Freezing Hell Jail was located in another space, it was still unable to escape from Heavenly Tribulation. As long as Jiang Chen purposely emanated his aura, he could attract it whenever he wanted.

Right at this moment, the entire Freezing Hell Jail was filled with flashes of lightning and thunder. Lightning clouds gathered in the sky, and tremendous serpent-like lightning kept striking out from the clouds, looking like they would hit the ground at any time. The entire space was violently shaking, and many spatial cracks had appeared in random places, making it look like the entire space was about to be ripped apart at any time.

The lightning clouds were dense, especially the ones above Jiang Chen's head. It was very obvious, and anyone could easily tell that the Heavenly Tribulation was attracted by Jiang Chen.

“Oh heavens! It's a Heavenly Tribulation! He really attracted Heavenly Tribulation here! Only a Great Saint can attract Heavenly Tribulation, but he's just a Combat King! How can he be so heaven-defying? This is unbelievable!”

“This is bad, he's going to face Heavenly Tribulation here. Once he's finished, perhaps the entire Freezing Hell Jail will be destroyed.”

“What should we do now? Are we going to stop him?”

“Are you crazy?! Don’t you know how frightening Heavenly Tribulation is?! It’s the punishment sent forth by the heavens, and whoever stands under it will be punished by the heavens, and you’re almost certain to die once you do!”

.....

All the Combat Kings in the Asura Palace were struck with astonishment. Initially, they wanted to kill Jiang Chen right after arriving, but they never thought Jiang Chen would bring them such a huge surprise. With this, no one would have the courage to attack him. Perhaps even the Palace Chief himself, a Combat Emperor, would not dare get close to this Heavenly Tribulation. After all, once a person interfered with a Heavenly Tribulation, he would trigger a tribulation of his own. The difficulty of a Heavenly Tribulation was based on a cultivator’s overall strength. Thus, even a Combat Emperor might get killed by it.

“Heavens, it’s Heavenly Tribulation! Brother Jiang is really heaven-defying!”

Within the Heavenly Saint Sword, Tan Lang’s mouth was wide open in shock. He could clearly see what was going on outside the Heavenly Saint Sword, causing him to realize what Jiang Chen meant. Jiang Chen wanted to fight the Asura Palace using Heavenly Tribulation. This was a fierce approach.

Tan Lang was hiding with the Heavenly Saint Sword. With its protection, his safety was guaranteed. However, although Jiang

Chen had the Heavenly Tribulation as his trump card, he was still worried about Jiang Chen. Someone had previously told Tan Lang that even a Great Saint would be in an extremely vulnerable period after going through Heavenly Tribulation, let alone Jiang Chen. So, once the Heavenly Tribulation was gone, Jiang Chen would be in an extremely dangerous situation.

More and more powerful warriors were arriving at the Freezing Hell Jail. The leading man was the Great Tycoon, Xiao Nanfeng, as well as Elder Liu, the Ninth Grade Combat King. It was a big lineup, as nearly every single one of the Asura Palace's powerful warriors had arrived. However, they were all astonished by what they saw.

“Great Tycoon, Elder Liu, that man is Jiang Chen. He has killed the Ling Yi, and he has attracted Heavenly Tribulation. It looks like he's going to face his tribulation here.”

The Seventh Grade Combat King Elder hastily said.

“It really is Heavenly Tribulation, I never expected this guy to be so heavenly defying. The Heavenly Tribulation is soon going to arrive, and if we let him face it here, the entire Freezing Hell Jail will collapse. This place has meticulously been created by the Palace Chief himself, and it will be a great loss for the Asura Palace if it is destroyed.”

Elder Liu said.

“Jiang Chen, I'm sure you came here to rescue Tan Lang. Now, I

give you the permission to bring him away. However, you need to leave this place as soon as possible. I promise, the Asura Palace will never try to hunt you down again.”

Xiao Nanfeng shouted at Jiang Chen who stood in the middle of the lightning clouds. Although he hated Jiang Chen as well, nothing was more important than the Freezing Hell Jail at this time. Furthermore, even if he let Jiang Chen go now, Xiao Nanfeng could still catch up to him easily once his tribulation was finished.

"Brother Jiang, this guy is Xiao Nanfeng."

Tan Lang said to Jiang Chen via his divine sense. Jiang Chen turned his head toward Xiao Nanfeng, and his eyes immediately became cold. He had promised Zhuang Fan to get revenge for him, and now, with the appearance of this man who pretended to be righteous, Jiang Chen felt a strong desire to kill Xiao Nanfeng with the Heavenly Tribulation. However, Xiao Nanfeng wasn't someone easy to deal with. He was a man with heavy precautions against any possible plots against him, so there was no way he'd fall into Jiang Chen's trap.

“Haha, so you're that bastard Xiao Nanfeng who rapes other people's wives and kills their innocent children. I really despise people like you. One way or another, I will destroy this Freezing Hell Jail today! If you're so great, come down and fight me now!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. Although Xiao Nanfeng said he would let Jiang Chen go free, he was basically treating Jiang Chen like a three year old kid. He was scared that Jiang Chen would destroy the Freezing Hell Jail, so he simply made up an empty

promise. No matter what, the hostile relationship between Jiang Chen and the Asura Palace could never be resolved.

Boom!

Right after Jiang Chen finished speaking, a loud boom suddenly rung out from the lightning clouds. Six crimson lightning bolts revealed themselves, and hovered above Jiang Chen's head. From left to right, each was thicker than the previous. Jiang Chen was very familiar with Heavenly Tribulation, so with just one look, he could tell that this was the legendary Intermediate Six Tribulations.

"Haha, let's do this!"

Jiang Chen began laughing. He showed no signs of fear even when facing this Intermediate Six Tribulation. With his powerful body, he could easily resist the initial four tribulations. However, these four tribulations could easily destroy the entire Asura Palace. At that point of time, he would have to run away to a place far away before he could face the last two tribulations. Although he knew it was risky, as the Heavenly Tribulation drew so much attention that the powerful warriors of the Asura Palace could easily track him down, this was the only plan he had for now.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen also wanted to use this Heavenly Tribulation to increase his overall strength. All the Demon Kings locked up in here would become his tonics.

Boom!

Another loud boom ran through the air. A crimson lightning bolt let out a raging roar, then poured down like a violent waterfall; bolting itself into Jiang Chen. All the powerful warriors of the Asura Palace were dumbstruck upon seeing this. None of them had seen a real Heavenly Tribulation before, so they were really curious about it.

Swoosh!

Right when the first tribulation bolt appeared, Jiang Chen moved. Like an out of control horse, Jiang Chen moved at his full speed with the help of the Spatial Shift. In the blink of an eye, he arrived next to a Fifth Grade Combat King.

Argh...

Before the Fifth Grade Combat King could do anything, he had triggered his own tribulation. A fierce lightning bolt instantly hit him, forcing him to let out a miserable shriek. He was instantly killed by the lightning bolt, and his entire body had become charred. It was a miserable scene.

"What?!"

All the other men cried out in shock at the same time. Only now were they able to respond. They were looking at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a ghost, and they hastily retreated, trying to keep a safe distance from Jiang Chen.

"Haha..."

Jiang Chen had withstood the first lightning bolt, and it didn't bring him any harm. The Heavenly Saint Sword was hovering by his side, and it was now fully covered with lightning. The pure lightning energy repeatedly penetrated into it. Not only was the energy tempering the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was also being absorbed by Tan Lang, who was hiding within. Tan Lang was severely injured, and it would be really difficult for him to fully recover. If he was able to absorb some of the lightning energy, it would no doubt be of great benefit to him.

Tan Lang dared not neglect. He held his breath and adjusted himself to his best possible form. Bit by bit, he absorbed the lightning energy, helping him temper his body.

Boom!

Soon after, the second lightning bolt had formed, and it looked like it could strike down at any time. Looking at this, all the Combat Kings in the Asura Palace lost their curiosity, and began staring at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a wild tiger.

"Fall back! We need to leave the Freezing Hell Jail at once! This guy is a lunatic, there is no way we can save the Freezing Hell Jail!"

Elder Liu shouted out loudly. None of the Combat Kings dared to hesitate. All of them possessed a talisman that allowed them to enter or leave the Freezing Hell Jail. Without hesitating, they

immediately activated their talismans and left the Freezing Hell Jail.

Jiang Chen never prevented them from leaving. Firstly, he had to focus on facing his Heavenly Tribulation. Secondly, even though he could use the Heavenly Tribulation to kill a few Combat Kings, it wouldn't help him much. It was still very difficult for him to kill Xiao Nanfeng. He was after all just a First Grade Combat King. The gap between him and a Ninth Grade Combat King was not small. Also, Xiao Nanfeng was quite clever, so there was no way he would fall into Jiang Chen's trap.

Also, once they were gone, Jiang Chen would be able to wreak havoc in this Freezing Hell Jail. Those Demon Kings were going to suffer.

Chapter 521 - Li Tianyang

Including Xiao Nanfeng, all the Combat Kings retreated from this place. They had no other choice, as none of them had any way of stopping Jiang Chen. Even if a mighty Combat Emperor was to intrude this place, the Asura Palace would have ways of stopping him from doing any damage. But now, this abnormal monster was facing his Heavenly Tribulation here, leaving them with no way of stopping him. Anyone who tried to stop him would eventually be killed, as even a Minor Saint wouldn't dare get close to someone else's Heavenly Tribulation, as it was just too frightening.

“Let me out! Hurry! Let me out of here!”

“Damn it, this bastard is facing his tribulation in here! Let me out of here! I don't want to die in this place!”

.....

All the Demon Kings began to furiously roar out. This scene made them all panic greatly. They were all locked up in cages, which meant they could do nothing but wait for death to arrive. Even if they were lucky enough to not get killed by the Heavenly Tribulation, they would be unable to escape from death once the Freezing Hell Jail collapsed.

There were also many humans locked up in this place, not only Demon Kings. Some of them were also like Tan Lang; disciples of the Asura Palace who had committed some wrongdoings, resulting in them being locked up in this place. Some were enemies of the

Asura Palace, who were thrown into this place to run their course.

Everyone were greatly frightened upon seeing the Heavenly Tribulation wreak havoc in the Freezing Hell Jail. The same pale expression could be seen on everyone's face. It was a frightening scene, and none of them had ever experienced something like this in their life. It looked as if the Freezing Hell Jail could collapse at any time. There were only two possibilities that awaited them; die by lightning, or be wiped out together with the destruction of this space.

Meanwhile, at one of the most remote corners of the Freezing Hell Jail, there was a dilapidated cage which looked insignificant. A man was seen curled up inside, lying on the floor within the cage. His clothes were stained with blood that had long ago dried up, and no one could tell the original color of the shirt. His hair was disheveled, and it hung down his face, covering half of it; preventing his face from being seen. However, judging from his pale lips and body shape, this man should be a young man.

The young man was trembling violently. The ice cold wind had started corroding his body, and he was now laying between life and death; his breath as thin as a thread, as if he could die at any moment. As he was in a deep coma, the noise produced by the first tribulation bolt did not awake him.

Boom!

The noise produced by the second tribulation bolt was much louder than the first. It instantly ripped open a huge hole in the Freezing Hell Jail, and spatial cracks had started appearing

everywhere. The space was at the brink of collapsing. Demon Kings were furiously roaring out, while the humans had gone frantic as well. Nobody wanted to be killed by this Heavenly Tribulation.

Jiang Chen and the Heavenly Saint Sword were hovering underneath the raging tribulation clouds as lightning and thunder struck down like heavy downpour. However, it seemed like Jiang Chen was enjoying a nice, warm shower, as he wore a joyful expression on his face. Countless blood red illusionary dragons were seen lingering around his body, making him look extremely majestic.

The second tribulation bolt finally woke this young man up from his deep sleep. With great effort, he raised his head and opened his eyes. His eyes were cloudy in the beginning, but they soon became bright.

This young man had clearly lost all his strength. He could only see the lightning bolts that filled the entire sky, and a towering, mighty figure that stood in the eye of this frightening scene.

Graa...

After continuously withstanding two tribulation bolts, Jiang Chen threw his head back and roared out. It was a dragon's cry that shook both Heaven and Earth, and astonished all those who heard it. Even those Demon Kings were shaken upon hearing this roar. All of them stared at Jiang Chen in shock, freaked out by him. In their minds, Heavenly Tribulation was an extremely frightening concept, and even a Great Saint would fear it like a

fierce tiger, and would have to prepare greatly before facing it. However, this young man's body was clearly overpowered, as he looked like he was just showing underneath the raging thunder and lightning.

In fact, most people misunderstood the facts of Heavenly Tribulation. Normally, Heavenly Tribulation's strength would be scaled according to the cultivation base of the cultivator undergoing Heavenly Tribulation. Cultivators would attract Heavenly Tribulations of different strength according to their current strength. Jiang Chen was facing the Intermediate Six Heavenly Tribulation now, and it was scaled according to the strength of his cultivation base.

Furthermore, as Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, his body was incredibly strong, and was brimming with Qi and Blood. Also, as he had already passed through a Minor Three Tribulation, not only did it give him Lightning Flame, it also made him somewhat resistant to Tribulation Lightning. As a result, he was able to shower in the rain of lightning and thunder as if it was nothing.

The dark clouds were getting denser and denser. There were four remaining crimson lightning bolts, each thicker than the previous, hovering in the sky like four Azure Dragons, casting great fear in the hearts of everyone.

Every living being locked up in the Freezing Hell Jail had lost all hope. There was no way they could escape from this place now.

Boom!

The third tribulation bolt finally descended from the sky, striking toward Jiang Chen. At this moment, Jiang Chen waved his hand, turning the tribulation bolt into numerous bright beams that shot toward some of the cages.

Bam, bam, bam...

In an instant, all cages that had humans locked up inside were ripped apart. Jiang Chen turned toward these humans and shouted, "Countless spatial cracks have appeared in this Freezing Hell Jail, you can run for your lives now."

Jiang Chen's voice swept across the entire space like a roaring clap of thunder. His words brought change to faces of those despairing humans, bringing them immense excitement. Many of the humans bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen, then simply found a random spatial crack and squeezed out from this Freezing Hell Jail.

This was their perfect opportunity. The Freezing Hell Jail was being destroyed, giving them a chance to escape. Everyone were immensely excited, as they thought they would soon have to face their deaths. They never expected this to actually be a chance for them to survive. They were really grateful to Jiang Chen. Without him, none of them would be able to leave this Freezing Hell Jail for the rest of their lives, and would have to die miserably in this place.

That young man also climbed out from the broken cage. His skinny body was trembling, but he still managed to gather enough

strength to squeeze into a spatial crack and disappear.

At the same time, in the sky above the Asura Palace, all those Combat Kings had sensed the changes within the Freezing Hell Jail, causing their expressions to change dramatically.

“Not good, the Freezing Hell Jail is going to break at any moment! Jiang Chen has set those criminals free, and they have all run away from here. Should we go and chase them back?”

An Elder asked.

“Chase them? The Freezing Hell Jail’s space is basically destroyed, and we have no idea where those spatial cracks led to. Damn it, this Jiang Chen is a pure bastard! He has destroyed the Asura Palace’s foundation, we can’t let him get away!”

Elder Liu responded with a somber voice. Originally, the Freezing Hell Jail was an intact space, and there were countless customized portals that led into it, and these portals were only connected to the Asura Palace. If those criminals escaped from one of these portals, they would easily be recaptured. However, because the Freezing Hell Jail was nearly destroyed, it wouldn’t be easy to find and recapture those escaped criminals.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Right at this moment, another two powerful figures arrived. One was a middle-aged man wearing a green robe. He looked to be in

his forties, and he had a manly face. He was emanating an extremely frightening aura from his body, and he projected natural dignity and power, while carrying the air of an emperor. He was in fact a mighty Combat Emperor!

Standing next to him was an old man who looked to be in his sixties. The old man was tall, and judging from his aura, he was not any weaker than the middle-aged man. Yes, he was a Combat Emperor as well.

Upon seeing the arrival of these two men, all the Combat Kings were filled with deep veneration, including Xiao Nanfeng and Elder Liu. Everyone immediately bowed and greeted the two men.

"Palace Chief! Great Elder!"

Everyone called out the identities of these two men. Yes, these two men were none other than the strongest warriors of the Asura Palace; two powerful Combat Emperors. The middle aged man was the Palace Chief, Li Tianyang.

"What's going on? Who's facing Heavenly Tribulation in the Freezing Hell Jail?!"

Li Tianyang was clearly very angry. The Freezing Hell Jail was the fruit of his painstaking labor, and the symbol of his authority. But now, it was torn and tattered as a result of this reckless man.

"Palace Chief, that guy's name is Jiang Chen."

Xiao Nanfeng dared not hide anything, and he quickly told Li Tianyang everything about Jiang Chen via his divine sense, including all that had happened in the recent days.

“Damn it! He dares challenge the authority of the Asura Palace?! He’s courting death! Great Elder, work with me, let’s lock down this guy’s aura first. Once his Heavenly Tribulation is finished, we’ll give him no chance to leave the Freezing Hell Jail.”

Li Tianyang said in a savage manner. Currently, as Jiang Chen was facing his Heavenly Tribulation within the Freezing Hell Jail, although Li Tianyang was a Combat Emperor, he had no courage to enter the place. The Freezing Hell Jail was done for, and the only thing he needed to do was lock down Jiang Chen’s aura from the outside, giving him no chance to escape.

“This mean is such a heavenly defying monster, and is able to attract Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm, he’s definitely an abnormal monster. Once I’ve captured him, I’ll cultivate him into my secondary body. That’ll be enough compensation for the loss of the Freezing Hell Jail.”

Two bright beams shot out from Li Tianyang’s narrowed eyes. He had mastered a skill that allowed him to choose a young man with extraordinary talent and cultivate him into his secondary body. The second body could continue to cultivate together with him, which would eventually bring him twice the results of cultivation. Now, as the young man who appeared in the Freezing Hell Jail was capable of attracting Heavenly Tribulation, it proved that he was a man with extraordinary talent. Thus, a perfect

candidate for Li Tianyang's secondary body.

Li Tianyang and the Great Elder worked hand in hand, both sending out a thread of their divine sense into the Freezing Hell Jail and locking down on Jiang Chen's aura.

As Jiang Chen was cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill, he instantly sensed both men's divine sense. A faint smile emerged on his face. He wasn't bothered by them at all. Taking this opportunity where the fourth tribulation bolt had yet to strike, he cast his glance upon the imprisoned Demon Kings.

"Bastard, why aren't you letting us go?!"

The Fourth Grade Demon King who claimed it wanted to eat Jiang Chen previously was now holding the edge of its cage tightly, and was furiously roaring at Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

The Demon King became Jiang Chen's first target. He unleashed his True Dragon Palm and grabbed the Demon King's head. Under normal circumstances, it would be really difficult for Jiang Chen to take control of a Fourth Grade Demon King. However, as all the Demon Kings here had been locked up for a pretty long time, they had lost most of their combat strength. Thus, this Fourth Grade Combat King was no match for Jiang Chen.

Not only this, the Heavenly Tribulation would be wherever Jiang

Chen was, and as long as this Fourth Grade Demon King dared to unleash its aura, it would immediately trigger its own tribulation.

Of course, Jiang Chen would never give it the chance to trigger its own tribulation. With the help of the True Dragon Palm, he simply crushed its head.

Chapter 522 – Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill

Bam!

Right at this very moment when the Demon King's head exploded, Jiang Chen quickly grabbed its demon soul, swallowed it and began absorbing. A Fourth Grade Demon King's demon soul was more than enough for him to break through to the Second Grade Combat King realm.

With the help of the purest lightning energy, as well as the mystical Dragon Transformation skill, the demon soul was absorbed in an instant. The combination of the True Dragon Flame and the Lightning Flame had removed every impurity within the demon soul, leaving behind only the purest energy, which was absorbed by Jiang Chen.

Buzz...

Even though he was facing his Heavenly Tribulation, a tremendous transformation was still taking place within Jiang Chen's body. New Dragon Marks had started forming. The Fourth Grade Demon King's demon soul had brought him another 2,000 Dragon Marks, making it so that he now possessed a total of 22,100 Dragon Marks. Thus, he had broken through to the Second Grade Combat King realm.

Breaking through like this was undoubtedly something incredibly frightening, as he simply seized another's energy and

made it his own. Jiang Chen only broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm a few days ago, and he had now broken through to the Second Grade Demon King realm. This speed was incredibly terrifying, and if others heard about it, they would simply not believe it to be true.

Not only that, if Jiang Chen absorbed all the demon souls within this Freezing Hell Jail, he would be able to break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm. At that point of time, he would become someone even more frightening. If it was in the past, Jiang Chen wouldn't have dared to use such a method in such a short period of time. After all, seizing another's energy and making it his own found make his foundation unstable. Under normal circumstances, whenever Jiang Chen absorbed a demon soul and broke through to the next level, he would find a method to stabilize his cultivation base for a period of time. When his foundation once again became stable, he would continue using such a method. However, as he was in top shape right now, and since he was absorbing lightning energy into his body; tempering it, which further strengthened his foundation, he had no worries about his foundation becoming unstable.

Buzz...

Suddenly, the dense dark clouds began acting violently once more. Seeing this, Jiang Chen's expression changed slightly, "Damn it, after breaking through to the Second Grade Combat King realm, the strength of the remaining three lightning bolts have become stronger as well. This isn't good, it looks like I'll have to kill these Demon Kings and take their demon souls, and only break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm after this tribulation is finished."

Jiang Chen had completely forgotten about this fact when he absorbed the demon soul just now. Heavenly Tribulation's strength was scaled according to the cultivator's realm and stage. Since Jiang Chen had broken through to the Second Grade Combat King realm, the remaining energy had also become stronger. The last three tribulation bolts would definitely be stronger than before. Thus, even though Jiang Chen was confident in himself, he also couldn't neglect this change.

Although the demon soul he absorbed just now came from a unique demon beast, but as its innate ability was a type of brutal offensive skill, Jiang Chen simply ignored it when he absorbed its demon soul. He didn't need such an innate ability at all.

Inside the Heavenly Saint Sword, Tan Lang's condition had become much better, as the lightning energy had entered his body. The pure energy brought him a great amount of help. At this moment, under the Heavenly Saint Sword's protection, Tan Lang was seen showering in dazzling lightning, and he kept absorbing the energy and turning it into his own.

At the same time, Tan Lang was clearly able to see what was going on outside the Heavenly Saint Sword. He was greatly shocked by the scenes flashing by, especially the one with Jiang Chen absorbing the Demon King's demon soul, and eventually breaking through to the Second Grade Combat King realm. He felt as if the world he knew had been turned upside down.

Tan Lang felt speechless and sighed. Jiang Chen was indeed a peerless monster. However, as an existence who could attract

Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm, there must be something extraordinary about Jiang Chen. With such a mentality, Tan Lang actually felt a bit relieved; feeling fortunate to have a friend like Jiang Chen.

The lightning was furiously roaring out in the skies. As a result of Jiang Chen's sudden change in cultivation base, the lightning in the sky was in the midst of a change as well. At this moment, Jiang Chen turned his head to a Fifth Grade Demon King, as it was the strongest Demon King in this place.

Noticing Jiang Chen's glance, needless of any guesses, the Demon King instantly realized what Jiang Chen wanted to do, bringing a dramatic change to its expression.

"Kid, you can't kill me with your cultivation base, so why don't you let me go? I promise you a good fortune once you've set me free."

The Demon King said.

"Is that so? Why don't you give me your demon soul? I'm only interested in demon souls."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"Bastard!"

The Demon King instantly became angry. Asking for its demon

soul was no different from asking it to die. This human obviously had no intentions of sparing its life. Furiously, it unleashed a powerful attack from within the cage.

“Hmph. If you were a Fifth Grade Demon King in top shape, perhaps I would be unable to do anything to you, and would have to rely on the power of lightning to kill you under these circumstances. However, as you are now, you can at most only attack me with the strength of a Fourth Grade Demon King; killing you will be a piece of cake. Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then directly unleashed the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons. This time, a total of nine flood dragons revealed themselves. They surrounded the entire cage in an instant, and flooded the Demon King.

"Argh... No!!!"

The Demon King let out a miserable shriek, unable to believe that fact that it was no match for a mere Second Grade Combat King. Jiang Chen was able to fight Fourth Grade Combat Kings when he was just a First Grade Combat King, and now that he had broken through to the Second Grade Combat King realm, he could kill a Fourth Grade Demon King with just a wave of his hand. So, fighting a Fifth Grade Combat King was no longer an issue for him.

"Give it to me!"

Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and pulled the Fifth Grade demon soul into his grasp. After that, without slowing down, he

sprinted toward the other Demon Kings. All of these Demon Kings were cruel and savage beings, and Jiang Chen felt no guilt toward killing them all. Today, underneath the lightning shower, he was going to enjoy a big feast!

Boom!

The fourth tribulation bolt finally struck down. In an instant, Jiang Chen was flooded by a waterfall of lightning. However, he was still moving around while showering in this raging lightning. Wherever he went, all living beings would instantly be killed. Thus, he simply flooded all the remaining Demon Kings in this deadly shower, killing them all at once.

Jiang Chen kept stretching out his arm, trying to grab those demon souls. However, in the end, he only managed to get three demon souls. One was a Fourth Grade, and the other two were Third Grade. As for the remaining demon souls, they were destroyed by the lightning before he was able to reach them.

"What a pity."

Jiang Chen shook his head. It was a pity to see so many demon souls destroyed in front of him. However, the demon souls he had now were more than enough to allow him to break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm. Although, Jiang Chen had no plans of breaking through now, so he placed them inside his Qi Sea. He would be crazy if he absorbed them now.

He had only just broken through to the Second Grade Combat

King realm, and the strength of the Heavenly Tribulation had increased significantly. It was imaginable, if he broke through to the Third Grade Combat King realm, the devastating power of the Heavenly Tribulation would once more increase, which would bring tremendous risk and obstacle to Jiang Chen.

After the fourth tribulation bolt disappeared, Jiang Chen couldn't help but let out a long sigh of relief. After continuously resisting four tribulation bolts, his image was no longer as overbearing as it previously was. At least, he didn't look to be in a good shape on the surface, as his hair was all standing on edge. His clothes were torn all over, and his aura was slightly in disorder.

Rumble...

The fifth tribulation bolt was forming quickly, and would soon strike down. Most of the Freezing Hell Jail had been destroyed, and it was easy to imagine that once the fifth tribulation bolt struck down, the entire Freezing Hell Jail would collapse, and completely vanish from this world.

Jiang Chen raised his head and looked into the raging lightning clouds, murmuring to himself, "In my previously life, I always wanted to concoct a type of pill, but never had the chance to do it. Today is a perfect opportunity. The last two tribulation bolts in the Intermediate Six Tribulation, the lightning energy within them will definitely be very strong and pure; a perfect ingredient to concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill."

The Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was a pill that only existed in legends. Even the most amazing alchemists in the Saint Origin

realm had only heard of it, but never seen it; let alone concocted on themselves. The sole reason for this was because the requirement to concoct this pill were too strict. It was so strict that no alchemist had ever dared try it.

Concocting the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill had two requirements. First, it require Nine Solar Holy Water. Although this condition wasn't much in the eyes of those superpowers of the Divine Continent, the second condition was truly difficult. The pill would need to be concocted under a Heavenly Tribulation. It needed to absorb the lightning energy, and borrowed the strength of Heavenly Tribulation in order to form the pill.

This was simply nonsense. When facing Heavenly Tribulation, ordinary cultivators would be full of fear, let alone have any thoughts of concocting pills... well, unless one no longer wanted to live. Heavenly Tribulation was no rain, which could come at any time. Under normal circumstances, only Great Saints would attract Heavenly Tribulation, and even if that happened, not all Great Saint were alchemists. Even if it really was an alchemist attracting Heavenly Tribulation, he wouldn't have the courage to concoct a pill while facing Heavenly Tribulation.

This had caused the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill to only exist in legends. However, its effects were truly amazing, as it could even be called a Divine Pill. If any cultivator consumed it, his body constitution would be tremendously improved. Put it this way, even a pig would become a genius after consuming it.

Not only this, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was also a holy grail of medicine, and it could even make a dead person

become alive. Although it was somewhat over exaggerated, it also told how frightening this pill was. In other words, a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill could easily produce a peerless genius.

Today, Jiang Chen was going to concoct this pill underneath his Heavenly Tribulation. He had fulfilled all the conditions, as he could easily produce Nine Solar Holy Water with his Heavenly Saint Sword, and he had all the other supplementary ingredients to make it.

Tan Lang was suffering from severe injuries. Although he was nourished by the lightning energy within the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was still not enough to make him fully recover. Perhaps he would even become a completely useless man in the future. Jiang Chen had no idea how to save him from this fate. However, if Tan Lang was given a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, not only would he instantly recover from his injuries, his cultivation base would improve significantly as well, and his constitution would transform, turning him into a peerless genius; bringing him limitless potential.

Wasting no time, Jiang Chen immediately produced some Nine Solar Holy Water using his Heavenly Saint Sword. The Heavenly Tribulation would soon end, and he needed to put in all his effort to concoct as many Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills as possible. It was a rare and precious pill, and once he concocted a few of them, it would be a rare treasure that no one else in this realm had.

Chapter 523 - The Last Tribulation Bolt

Jiang Chen was a dexterous alchemist, and he acted with tremendous speed. Right at the very moment when the Nine Solar Holy Water was drawn down, he had taken out numerous herbs that were used to concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, then covered them all with the True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame, then he started melting those ingredients.

The higher level the pill was, the more difficult it would be to melt down its ingredients, and one would need to go through a tedious thought process in order to concoct it. Even an advanced alchemist would feel a headache at the stop of melting down these ingredients. This was because if there was a single mistake, it would severely affect the quality of the final product. In the fact of a true alchemist, any pill below 100% effectiveness was simply rubbish.

However, this was not a problem for Jiang Chen at all. The Great Soul Derivation skill was a frightening skill, and it had brought him the energy to instantly melt down hundreds of herbs at the same time, and extract the purest essence of every single one. Without such a skill, there was no way he would be able to concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill underneath Heavenly Tribulation.

Even for Jiang Chen, there was only one chance to concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. So, he needed to take this opportunity to concoct as many as possible. Once the Heavenly Tribulation ended, he would lose the opportunity to concoct this pill.

"What is brother Jiang doing?"

Inside the Heavenly Saint Sword, Tan Lang's mind was filled with curiosity toward Jiang Chen. The Freezing Hell Jail had nearly completely collapsed, and according to common sense, Jiang Chen should be leaving this place as soon as possible. However, not only did Jiang Chen not do that, he looked like he was going to concoct something underneath the frightening Heavenly Tribulation. Why was he so heavenly defying?

A dignified expression appeared on Jiang Chen's face. Even for him, this would be incredibly difficult. Not only did he need to concoct the pill while enduring the powerful heavenly pressure, he also had to defend himself from the devastating energy that came from the sky.

Popping sounds could be heard from the herbs being burned within the flames, as all kinds of impurities were extracted from them. The combination of the two flames had nearly reached the absolute peak of what any flame underneath the heavens could reach. Underneath Jiang Chen's control, no matter what object he wanted to refine, he could use these flames to burn them down.

Like a golden dragon, the Nine Solar Holy Water was swimming around freely within the scorching flames.

Boom!

The fifth tribulation bolt finally struck down. The crimson

tribulation bolt that had the diameter of a water bucket transformed into a Heavenly Dragon, and emanated a frightening aura. It descended toward Jiang Chen's head, flooding the entire space where Jiang Chen stood.

After this tribulation bolt descended, the entire Asura Palace began shaking. The expressions of Li Tianyang and a few others changed dramatically. They could easily imagine that the Freezing Hell Jail had been completely destroyed. The nodes connecting the Asura Palace and the Freezing Hell Jail had collapsed, revealing a few large holes in the spatial dimension.

“Damn it, the Freezing Hell Jail is completely destroyed.”

Even a respectable man like the Great Elder couldn't help but curse, not to mention how unsightly the expression on Li Tianyang's face was. Only the two of them knew about the secret of the Freezing Hell Jail. It wasn't just a simple jail, there were some secrets hidden within. However, no one except them were aware of these secrets.

“Damn it, if that object is destroyed, I swear I will cut that brat into a thousand pieces!”

Li Tianyang's eyes shone with a sinister gleam. All he could think about was the Freezing Hell Jail, but unfortunately, as the Heavenly Tribulation was getting stronger, he didn't have the guts to enter even with his Combat Emperor cultivation base. Thus, he was forced to wait outside.

“Palace Chief, that rascal will never make it through such a powerful Heavenly Tribulation. I’m guessing he will soon run away.”

The Great Elder said.

“No worries, we’ve locked down his aura. Once he exits the Freezing Hell Jail, he will still be somewhere in the Liang Province. No matter where he goes, his death will be inevitable.”

Li Tianyang said. As the Asura Palace’s Palace Chief, a mighty Combat Emperor, it had been a long time since someone made him this angry.

Within the Freezing Hell Jail, Jiang Chen stood in the midst of a storm. The space had shattered, causing to suffer from both Heavenly Tribulation and spatial pressure. If not for the fact that he had mastered the Spatial Shift, he would most likely have died by now.

Even so, Jiang Chen was still severely injured. His body was riddled with wounds and scars; his eyes were bleeding, and his body was swaying in the air, causing him to look like he was about to collapse at any moment. This was the first time he had been injured so badly since he began cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill.

"Brother Jiang!"

Inside the Heavenly Saint Sword, Tan Lang cried out in shock, but Jiang Chen didn't respond to his call.

“Damn it, this is bad, I've underestimated the strength of this Heavenly Tribulation.”

Jiang Chen cursed inwardly. He had previously guessed how strong the Heavenly Tribulation should be, and he should only be in his current stage after facing the sixth tribulation bolt. Although his injuries were rather serious, the Dragon Transformation skill gave him excellent protection, and also an incredible recovery ability, so he wasn't scared of this situation. However, he neglected the possibility of attracting a stronger tribulation after breaking through to the next level. After he broke through to the Second Grade Combat King realm, the Heavenly Tribulation became stronger as well. Although Jiang Chen's ability to defend against it had become stronger as a result of breaking through, but as the space shattered, he was severely injured.

If this went on, Jiang Chen would be in a really bad shape once the final tribulation bolt struck down. What he needed to do now was find a way to escape from this place. Otherwise, he might really be killed in this place.

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill at its maximum speed. After transforming twice, the Dragon Transformation skill now perfectly fit Jiang Chen. Following the circulation of the Dragon Transformation skill, Jiang Chen's injuries were constantly being recovered, causing him to feel much better.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath and flipped his palm, checking on the situation regarding the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills. A smile was brought to his lips. While facing the fifth tribulation bolt just now, he had extracted a sufficient amount of lightning energy.

If nothing went wrong, this portion was more than enough to produce seven Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills. It was an incredibly heavenly defying pill, and each pill could be used to buy out an entire city, and Jiang Chen had just made seven of them. If this was known by others, the entire Divine Continent would be in a tremendous turmoil.

“In order to complete the concoction of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, I’ll need the help of the last tribulation bolt. However, since the Freezing Hell Jail is completely destroyed right now, I really need to escape from this place. Otherwise, I will have no way of leaving later on.”

Jiang Chen ignored the injuries on his body. He had to face one last tribulation bolt, and it was also the last chance for him to escape. If he waited until the Heavenly Tribulation was over, it would be too late for him to escape. This was because he would be severely injured at that point of time, and would surely be captured by the Asura Palace.

“Heavenly Tribulation is going to end soon. Keep locking down on that brat’s aura, don’t let him run away!”

Li Tianyang shouted out loudly.

Inside the Freezing Hell Jail, the last tribulation bolt was currently forming. This tribulation bolt was twice as big as the previous one. This also meant that this last tribulation bolt was twice as powerful as the previous tribulation bolt. Faced with such tremendous power, even Jiang Chen wore a dignified expression. The Dragon Transformation skill did indeed bring him an incredible recovery ability, but it wasn't enough to offset the devastating strength of this last tribulation bolt. In his current state, it would be impossible for him to endure this last tribulation bolt without being severely injured.

Chapter 524 – Can't Escape

The Freezing Hell Jail was disintegrating and crumbling, and the entire space was constantly trembling. His dark hair fluttering violently, Jiang Chen stood like a god in the midst of the spatial turmoil ignoring the powerful storms that kept hitting his body. At the current moment, he had split his mind into four, each part focusing on something different. One part focused on concocting the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, another on defending himself from the Heavenly Tribulation, the third searching for spatial nodes he could use to escape, and the fourth figuring out ways to evade the Asura Palace's hunt.

Right at this moment, the Great Soul Derivation skill played an incredibly important role. Jiang Chen was using it at full capacity, which brought him extremely sensitive senses. Thus, even though his mind was split into four parts, he didn't feel tired at all. This was how frightening a powerful soul training skill could be to a man.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was hovering around Jiang Chen's body, greedily absorbing the lightning energy. There were three broken pieces of a whole residing inside of the current Heavenly Saint Sword, giving it the foundation of a Great Saint Weapon. Thus, it was not afraid of being destroyed by Heavenly Tribulation. In fact, it was using the Heavenly Tribulation's energy to temper its body, which greatly increased its quality.

After going through Heavenly Tribulation, even though Jiang Chen had just broken through to the Combat King realm, the Heavenly Saint Sword had become the highest grade existence among all King Weapons; just one grade inferior to ordinary

Emperor Weapons. And, following the improvement of Jiang Chen's cultivation base, it would sooner or later become an Emperor Weapon.

The sixth tribulation bolt had finally formed. It was like a lifelike crimson lightning dragon; resembling a real dragon. While flying circles above Jiang Chen's head, it gazed at Jiang Chen with a pair of extremely cold eyes, as if it was going to punish this guy who dared to defy the heavens.

With a thought in his mind, Jiang Chen moved with the Spatial Shift toward a spatial crack. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen sensed that two divine senses had locked down on him. They came from Li Tianyang and the Great Elder.

“Hmph! Trying to lock down on me, the greatest Saint? You're too green!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. A look of disdain leaked out from his eyes. Although his cultivation base was insufficient, he still had a bagful of tricks and skills. Thus, even if it was the divine sense of two Combat Emperors, they would never be able to completely lock down on him. He sent out a thread of his divine sense and merged it with the Great Soul Derivation skill, then transformed it into an invisible blade that instantly blocked Li Tianyang and the Great Elder's divine sense.

Outside the Freezing Hell Jail, Li Tianyang and the Great Elder both felt a shockwave hitting their divine sense, then they were knocked back by a tremendous force. The two men looked at each other, astonishment visible in their eyes. They never expected a

Combat King to have the ability to knock back their divine sense. This was unbelievable.

In the next moment, the invisible force that blocked their divine sense had disappeared. Upon sending their divine sense into the place again, they found out they had lost trace of Jiang Chen. The Freezing Hell Jail had turned into a void. The lightning was gone, and so was Jiang Chen, as if he had never been there before.

"He has escaped!"

The Great Elder cried out in shock.

"His Heavenly Tribulation has yet to end, and he couldn't have escaped far! Quickly, find out where ripples of the Heavenly Tribulation can be sensed, then we'll grab his tail again!"

Li Tianyang said out loudly.

"I'll go find it now."

After saying that, the Great Elder disappeared from the scene.

"I'll go as well."

Xiao Nanfeng disappeared from the scene as well. He was a Ninth Grade Combat King now, and with his extraordinary talent, even a First Grade Combat Emperor would find it hard to kill him. In the

Asura Palace, except for Li Tianyang and the Great Elder, Xiao Nanfeng was worthy of being called the strongest man.

While the Great Elder and Xiao Nanfeng had gone to hunt for Jiang Chen, Li Tianyang had rushed into the Freezing Hell Jail. He unleashed his Combat Emperor aura and dispersed all the void energy in this place. After that, flying with incredible speed and moving in a ghostly manner, he arrived at a secret place within the blink of an eye. Here, an invisible defense mechanism was found, but it was partly broken. Li Tianyang unleashed a divine beam and destroyed the defense mechanism completely. Then, he felt an extremely ice-cold aura bursting out from the other side of the defense mechanism.

It was biting cold, and even Li Tianyang couldn't help but shudder. He was well aware of how frightening this object was. Without hesitating, he quickly unleashed a gold-red armor, covering his entire body with it. Then, he took a step forward and saw a huge chunk of a crystal sitting undamaged inside. Within the body of this transparent crystal, there was a drop of water, and the ice-cold air was actually coming from this tiny drop of water. If Jiang Chen was here, he would definitely be able to tell how frightening this droplet was. Unreservedly speaking, the entire Freezing Hell Jail existed only because of this droplet; just like how the Black Ice Talisman had produced the boundless world of glaciers.

Upon seeing that the droplet was still intact, Li Tianyang finally let out a sigh of relief, then muttered, "The True Water is fortunately still here. With this, I can construct a second Freezing Hell Jail. Once I've cultivated my Worldly Water Emperor skill to the Dacheng stage, I'll absorb this True Water. At that point of

time, I'll be able to break through to the Minor Saint realm."

A smile emerged on Li Tianyang's face. After that, he unleashed numerous runes and sealed up the crystal. Then, with a sway of his body, he disappeared from the scene.

Previously, as Jiang Chen was forced to focus on several matters at the same time, as well as the Heavenly Tribulation, he never noticed that there was an ultimate treasure hiding in the Freezing Hell Jail. Of course, Jiang Chen couldn't be blamed for this. Firstly, he was not here to hunt for treasures, so he didn't pay any attention to this aspect. Secondly, he didn't possess Big Yellow's heaven-defying treasure hunting ability. If Big Yellow was here with him, the crystal would definitely have been found by Big Yellow, and they would have taken it away by now.

At the border of the Liang Province, in the skies above a desolate mountain range, dark clouds suddenly gathered. Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled within these clouds, and a thick crimson lightning bolt revealed itself in the sky.

"Look, what's that? It looks so frightening!"

"Not good, this is all too sudden! I'm sure something big is going to happen, we should leave this place quickly!"

A few cultivators happened to pass by the mountain range, and what they saw brought a dramatic change to their expression.

Although they had no idea what was going to happen, they could clearly feel the frightening power of the lightning in the sky, which was something they could never withstand.

A young man suddenly appeared out of nowhere. His clothes were tattered; his body was bathed in blood, and he looked to be in a disastrous state. A mystical looking sword was following him, like a shadow that would never separate from his body.

The young man was none other than Jiang Chen, who had just escaped from the Freezing Hell Jail. The spatial crack he found had directly led him to this place. However, the Heavenly Tribulation had followed him like a shadow. As a result, there was no way he could escape from the sixth tribulation bolt.

Graa!

The crimson Lightning Dragon opened its gigantic mouth and let out a raging roar. The few cultivators who happened to pass by and stood far away in the distance were instantly dumbstruck. At this point, they finally realized that someone was facing Heavenly Tribulation here. It was the legendary Heavenly Tribulation, and they were witnessing it with their own eyes!

"Haha, let's do this!"

Jiang Chen threw his head back and laughed. Even if this was the last tribulation bolt of the Intermediate Six Tribulation, Jiang Chen showed no signs of fear when facing it. The concoction of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills was nearly completed, and he

was facing the last step now, which was also the most important step.

Graa!

As if it had sensed Jiang Chen's provocation, the Lightning Dragon was enraged. Dragging its long tail, it brought along a vast ocean of lightning and simply bolted into Jiang Chen.

Boom!

The vast ocean of lightning had instantly flooded Jiang Chen. The last tribulation bolt was twice as powerful as the fifth. It destroyed everything along its way, and if a cultivator was placed in the middle of this ocean of lightning, the ending would be imaginable. Fortunately, it was Jiang Chen, the man who cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill who stood there. If he was replaced by any other ordinary Combat King, that Combat King would completely vanish from this world.

Boom!

The frightening lightning kept unleashing its mighty power, and it only showed signs of dismissing after a couple of minutes. It had created a huge turmoil which made it impossible for people not to notice. The Great Elder and Xiao Nanfeng, and even Li Tianyang who had arrived later sensed this, and was rushing over to this place. With their cultivation bases, it was incredibly easy to reach the location where Jiang Chen was facing his Heavenly Tribulation.

Cough, cough... Blergh...

The Intermediate Six Tribulation was finally over. Jiang Chen had successfully endured the entire tribulation. However, he was in an incredibly bad shape right now. He couldn't help but cough out blood. His shattered internal organs were mixed in with the blood he coughed out. His entire body was fully covered with blood, and his face was riddled with scars.

The injuries were extremely severe. If any other man had suffered from such injuries, he would have collapsed by now. However, Jiang Chen could still barely support his body and hover in the sky. He loosened his palm, revealing seven golden pills that shone brightly. Strong Yang energy and Lightning energy was leaking out from these pills, and shadows of dragons could be found within. One could easily tell that these pills were the best of the best.

Seven Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, they were the biggest result of Jiang Chen's Heavenly Tribulation. He was well aware of how bad his condition right now was, so he picked up a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill without hesitation and threw it into his mouth, then swallowed it into his stomach. His wounds were too severe, and if he just depended on the Dragon Transformation skill's ability to recover, then he had no idea when he would completely recover from his wounds. But with the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, this recovery process would be shortened. Indeed, in the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen had restored quite a lot of his Yuan energy.

He could no longer stay here.

This was Jiang Chen's first thought. He knew that the Heavenly Tribulation had definitely attracted the attention of those mighty warriors from the Asura Palace. So, he instantly grabbed the Heavenly Saint Sword and placed it into his Qi Sea. Then, he stepped out with the Spatial Shift and began flying as fast as he could. He was in a bad shape now, making him unable to even rip apart space and move quicker.

"Jiang Chen! Don't you dare run away again!"

A loud shout suddenly resounded behind his back, and a powerful energy wave burst out in front of Jiang Chen, preventing him from going any further. The man who blocked his way was none other than the Great Tycoon, the man who dressed like a scholar; Xiao Nanfeng.

At the same time, two figures appeared behind him. They were many times stronger than Xiao Nanfeng, and with one look, Jiang Chen could tell that they were both Combat Emperors. They were Li Tianyang and the Great Elder. Upon arriving, they instantly locked up the entire space, giving Jiang Chen no chance to escape from them again.

Chapter 525 – The Broken Sword Shows Its Might Once Again

Three powerful warriors had completely locked up this entire space, and Jiang Chen was completely surrounded. As his injuries were extremely severe, he didn't even have the strength to rip apart the space, let alone flee from this space which had been completely locked down. It was simply impossible.

Jiang Chen's heart sunk to the bottom, and his eyes became extremely cold and serious. He was aware of how strong these men were, and he would have no way of defeating them even if he was in top shape. He had always planned very carefully and taken every conceivable possibility into account, but this time, he had misjudged. The Heavenly Tribulation had gone far beyond his expectations, especially the sixth tribulation bolt, which had caused a huge commotion. Although he had escaped from the Asura Palace, the commotion caused by the sixth tribulation bolt had still attracted these three powerful warriors here. In front of them was an inevitable death, and it was the most desperate moment in his current, and even previous life. Although he was a man with an array of marvelous skills, none of them could help him in this situation, as he lacked the strength to use them.

Right now, what Jiang Chen needed was a quiet place, and at least half a month to fully recover. However, judging from the current situation, it would be impossible for him to have that. He had destroyed the Freezing Hell Jail, and these three guys would not let him off today.

“Jiang Chen, there is no way you can escape from us anymore.

You have destroyed the Freezing Hell Jail, which is an unforgivable crime, and only death can spare you from that sin. However, I, the Great Tycoon really admire you. The ability to attract Heavenly Tribulation only proves how monstrously talented you are. But unfortunately, today is your last day. An unprecedented mighty genius is destined to be killed while in his cradle.”

Standing not far away from Jiang Chen, Xiao Nanfeng said with a smile on his face. He felt delighted upon witnessing Jiang Chen’s current state. The thing a genius hated the most was when he saw someone even more talented than himself. Xiao Nanfeng claimed himself to be a man with extraordinary talent, not only within the Liang Province, but even throughout the entire Xuan Region; he was one of the most talented men. At such a young age, he had reached Ninth Grade Combat King realm. However, this Jiang Chen who appeared out of nowhere had just attracted Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm, spelling out that he was monstrously talented. A man with such talent made Xiao Nanfeng burn with raging jealousy.

“Hmph. You’re an asshole who poses as a person with high morals. Speaking even a single word to you is an insult to me.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, showing his disdain toward Xiao Nanfeng.

"What did you just say?"

Xiao Nanfeng was instantly enraged. What made him angry was not just Jiang Chen’s words, but also the way Jiang Chen looked at

him. He could tell from Jiang Chen's eyes that he was truly despising and disdainning him. Also, Jiang Chen showed no signs of fear toward Xiao Nanfeng either, which made Xiao Nanfeng feel no sense of accomplishment.

A mere Second Grade Combat King; a small-fry that was nothing in front of him, how dare this tiny ant despise Xiao Nanfeng? Who was he to look down on Xiao Nanfeng? Jiang Chen's behavior truly damaged Xiao Nanfeng's self-esteem.

“Stop pretending. I don't think you've forgotten about the miserable death of Zhuang Fan's wife and son yet. Of course, you might have forgotten. After all, it all happened three years ago, and perhaps you've done many things of similar nature in these three years. So, it's only natural that you won't remember that man called Zhuang Fan. Although I, Jiang Chen am not a hero or a man of moral integrity, I really look down on someone like you; a beast in human clothing who is worse than an animal. If I'm fortunate enough to survive this day, I will definitely kill you in the days to come.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold voice. He had never felt so disgusted with someone. In his mind, Xiao Nanfeng wasn't even qualified to be his enemy. Because, from the expression on Xiao Nanfeng's face, Jiang Chen found out that everything Zhuang Fan told him was true.

Li Tianyang and the Great Elder both furrowed their brows. They had no idea what Jiang Chen and Xiao Nanfeng were talking about. However, they could tell that Xiao Nanfeng must have done something unethical in the past. However, Xiao Nanfeng was after

all the number one genius of the Asura Palace; the key disciple they were cultivating for the future. As for this Jiang Chen, he wouldn't be able to escape even if given a pair of wings. Li Tianyang decided to capture him and bring him back for research, and see if he could make Jiang Chen his secondary self. That would be the best case scenario.

“You'll have no chance to do that, because you're going to die now!”

Bursting with killing intent, Xiao Nanfeng forcefully pushed his palm toward Jiang Chen. The extremely powerful force turned into an invisible wall and crushed into Jiang Chen. It was a frightening strike of a Ninth Grade Combat King, and with Jiang Chen's current shape, there no way he could withstand it. If this attack hit his body, even if he didn't explode into thousands of pieces, he would still die.

However, Jiang Chen would never resign himself to death. In an instant, he countered the attack with the True Dragon Palm, while forcibly using the Spatial Shift to dodge the attack. However, Xiao Nanfeng's attack was simply too strong, and since the space of this area had been completely locked down, he couldn't escape even with the Spatial Shift.

"Don't kill him!"

Li Tianyang shouted out loudly. He hastily struck out his palm, launching an attack into Xiao Nanfeng's attack. Before they came, he never thought that Xiao Nanfeng would be so straightforward and try to kill Jiang Chen. It would be a pity if Jiang Chen was

killed, as he was an abnormal genius who could attract Heavenly Tribulation. So, it meant that there were some secrets within this guy. Even if there weren't any secrets, just Jiang Chen's body alone would be an ultimate treasure.

Boom!

The two palm strike collided with each other, and the shockwaves that came from the collision instantly shattered the True Dragon Palm, and hit Jiang Chen's body. Although Li Tianyang stopped the attack, Jiang Chen was in a really bad shape right now, so the shockwave would be enough to kill him in an instant.

Jiang Chen was critically hit by the shockwave, forcing a mouthful of blood to exit his mouth. He could no longer hover in the sky, and thus began falling toward the ground. He could feel a tearing pain from all over his body, bringing a self-deprecating smile to his face. He was going to die again. Although he was given a second chance to life, it had already come to an end. What a pity.

Graaa!

Right at this moment, a roar so loud that even the heavens shook could be heard from a distance. The roar sounded like a dragon's cry mixed with a horse's neigh. It was extremely penetrative, and just this roar alone could easily make one's heart tremble, as if their soul was going to be ripped apart. In the following second, a tremendous figure descended from the sky. It was a big yellow dog with a huge, burly body. It stood over 30 meters tall, and resembled a small hill. The big yellow dog's body was glowing with

a golden light, making it look like a bright sun. A long, sharp dragon horn was visible on its forehead, as it was beaming with a scorching hot glaze.

"Big Yellow!"

It was giant who Jiang Chen was very familiar with; Big Yellow! However, Jiang Chen had never seen Big Yellow so big before. Also, Big Yellow was emanating the aura of a Third Grade Demon King. Jiang Chen could tell with just one look that Big Yellow must have activated some kind of secret technique, forcefully increasing his cultivation base by two grades.

Jiang Chen didn't feel delighted upon seeing Big Yellow arrive. Instead, he felt worried. Their enemies were two Combat Emperors and one Ninth Grade Combat King. Even though Big Yellow had temporarily increased his cultivation base by two grades, it was still not enough to help in this situation. His arrival was no different from bringing himself to death. Furthermore, even if they managed to escape, Big Yellow would be tremendously injured by using such a secret technique.

Jiang Chen's body was still falling down from the sky. He had lost all his strength, and was unable to support his body. His nerves had gone numb, and he could barely keep his eyes open using his strong will; staring at Big Yellow who had suddenly arrived.

Big Yellow spat out a golden beam, and with incredible speed, it arrived underneath Jiang Chen's body, pushing him from below and slowing down his falling speed. Jiang Chen's body could no

longer sustain any impacts. Although Big Yellow behaved thoughtlessly during normal days, he was actually someone thoughtful.

"Where did this dog come from?"

Li Tianyang furrowed his brows, but didn't really care about Big Yellow, who was just a Third Grade Demon King.

"This is the dog that followed Jiang Chen. Since it's here, we'll kill it."

Xiao Nanfeng said with intense killing intent. He hated Jiang Chen to the utmost degree. Although Li Tianyang had stopped him from killing Jiang Chen, he could still kill this dog to vent his anger.

"Wakaka, want to kill this master dog?! You're dreaming! Take a look at this master dog's exceptional Divine Sword!"

Big Yellow had obviously prepared himself. He opened his mouth and spat out a rusty, broken sword. It was the broken sword he found when Jiang Chen participated in the Qi Province competition in the Whirling Sun City. Big Yellow had been keeping it like it was the most precious treasure in the world. He had used it once before when dealing with Lord Bloodmoon. When Jiang Chen was trapped in the Blood Banner, Big Yellow had used this broken sword to help Jiang Chen kill Lord Bloodmoon. At that point of time, Big Yellow was only at the Mortal Core realm, and compared to his current Third Grade Demon King strength, the

gap was tremendous.

Buzz...

After the broken sword was revealed, it immediately began to violently tremble; producing buzzing sounds, as it was being controlled by Big Yellow. Numerous golden beams shot out from Big Yellow's body and penetrated into the broken sword, causing it to transform tremendously. The broken sword was now ten times bigger than before, and although it was still rusty, it was now emanating a mighty divine pressure. Although it was rather faint, it still made the people present feel that breathing was difficult with its presence.

“What? Why does this broken sword look so mystical? Even I can feel a pressure from it!”

Li Tianyang cried out in shock and said with a hint of disbelief in his tone.

“This broken sword is surely a precious treasure, we must make it ours!”

A greedy look leaked out from the Great Elder's eyes.

“What a mystical sword. Its aura is even stronger than that of the Heavenly Saint Sword at its peak! Could this broken sword be something from another realm? So, Big Yellow forcefully increased his cultivation base by two grades to use this broken sword.”

Jiang Chen was lit with a flame of comprehension and shock. He was currently relying on his strong will to prevent him from going unconscious.

Swoosh!

The broken sword hadn't fully transformed. Big Yellow knew that with his current strength, there was no way he could harness the true power of this broken sword. Thus, the dragon horn on his forehead moved. A lightning bolt shot out from his dragon horn and fell onto the broken sword.

Big Yellow didn't stop after doing this. He opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of blood; the blood essence of a Dragon Horse. Big Yellow was going all out, and only by doing this could he deal with the two Combat Emperors and the Ninth Grade Combat King.

The broken sword let out a violent cry, then unleashed three webs that were made up from sword energies and covered the three enemies. They were shining brightly, and they carried devastating energy; ripping apart every single inch of the space along its way. The three powerful warriors were astonished by its power.

After Big Yellow unleashed this attack, his big body instantly shrunk; returning to his original size. With both eyes closed, he too fell down from the sky.

Chapter 526 - Calamity

"Big Yellow!"

Seeing Big Yellow falling down from the sky, Jiang Chen let out a desperate cry. However, as if this cry had used up the last bit of his strength, he opened his mouth and spat out another mouthful of blood, then he closed his eyes as he lost consciousness as well. At the last moment before Jiang Chen's eyes closed, if one were to look closely, one could see that his eyes were moist. Touched, sad, angry, all kinds of emotions could be seen in his moistened eyes.

In the eyes of others, perhaps Big Yellow was just a mere demon beast. However, in Jiang Chen's mind, Big Yellow was his best friend; the brother who he could risk his life for. Although Big Yellow knew that he was going to face inevitable death, he still showed up without hesitating. He knew he was going to face two Combat Emperors, but he still stood out. Not only that, he even used his blood essence, as well as a forbidden technique that would bring him great harm; he showed up like a savior. This was because Big Yellow treated Jiang Chen as his very own brother as well, and he couldn't let Jiang Chen die without doing anything; he just could not do that. Therefore, he showed up, even though he had no idea what kind of ending awaited him. Perhaps it would be death, perhaps he and Jiang Chen would be killed in this place, and he came here to be buried with Jiang Chen. Big Yellow knew these things were most likely to happen, and yet, he still showed up by his own free will, knowing that it would most likely cost him his life.

This was the friendship between Big Yellow and Jiang Chen. No one else could ever understand it.

Bam, bam, bam...

On the other side, the three webs of sword had slashed through space, shattering it. Waves after waves of ice-cold spatial turbulence repeatedly blew out from the newly formed spatial cracks. Li Tianyang and the other two men were covered by the sword webs. Even with their strength, their eyes were filled with nothing but the dazzling web of swords. In their line of sight, aside from the sword beams flying all over the place, there was nothing else they could see, not even Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

"Don't let that guy run away again!"

Li Tianyang shouted out. He had now completely unleashed his aura of a Combat Emperor. He waved his hand and struck out with his palm, intending to destroy the web of swords in his way. Although he knew that there was no way for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to escape in their current conditions, he was still worried. He didn't want any accidents to occur. But unfortunately, the web of sword was more difficult to destroy than he expected. A strike containing all his strength was unable to destroy the web of sword. Instead, these razor sharp sword beams turned around and began flying toward him.

"What?!"

Li Tianyang shouted out in disbelief. It wasn't just him, Xiao Nanfeng and the Great Elder who were both in the same situation as him were greatly shocked as well. They couldn't imagine how an

attack unleashed by a Third Grade Demon King could temporarily trap all three of them. This was absurd! However, they knew that it wasn't that dog's mighty ability, but the broken sword used by it.

Using all of their strength, the three men restlessly fought against the web of swords. However, unnoticeable by them, an uninvited guest stealthily arrived at the scene. A monk wearing a golden kasaya entered the void at top speed, holding Jiang Chen in one hand, and Big Yellow in the other; he disappeared without a trace in an instant, as if he had never appeared.

Not long after the monk disappeared, Li Tianyang broke free from the web of swords, followed by the Great Elder, and then Xiao Nanfeng. The three men looked to be in rather unsightly states. After they destroyed the web of swords, they immediately probed the situation of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, but they found nothing.

"They've escaped."

The Great Elder said in an insidious tone.

"Impossible, Jiang Chen and that dog are both like arrows at the end of their flight, there is no way they could have escaped! I'm sure someone else were hidden here somewhere. Damn it, how come we never noticed this?!"

Xiao Nanfeng said with a ferocious expression. Knowing that Jiang Chen had escaped made him angry.

“We can’t catch up with them now. The space in this area has been destroyed by the web of swords, and there are spatial cracks everywhere, and we have no idea which direction they’re running in. However, Jiang Chen was severely injured today, so even if he is rescued by someone, I don’t think he can survive from his injuries. And, even if he survives, he will become a useless man. There is nothing for us to worry about.

The Great Elder said.

A gloomy expression appeared on Li Tianyang’s face. Jiang Chen’s escape ruined his plan. Whenever he thought of the Freezing Hell Jail’s destruction; the result of his hard work, he would feel a pain in his heart. The Freezing Hell Jail wasn’t just a simple jail. As Li Tianyang was cultivating the Worldly Water Emperor skill, the True Water he found brought him great benefits. However, as True Water was the coldest and heaviest water under the heavens, a single drop weighed 180,000 kilos, and was more than enough to crush a mountain. With Li Tianyang’s current cultivation base, it was impossible for him to absorb the True Water, as he couldn’t withstand the impact brought by it. That’s the reason why he had constructed the Freezing Hell Jail, so that he could absorb the ice-cold air inside to cultivate his skill. The Freezing Hell Jail had existed for a long period of time, and the ice-cold air inside had accumulated to a level where it had almost turned into a physical substance, which was of great benefit to his cultivation. However, it was now destroyed by Jiang Chen, and he would have to rebuild it from scratch.

“Pass down my orders; I want every part of the Liang Province to be thoroughly searched, I want that Jiang Chen. Also, search all

provinces connected to the Liang Province as well. He is suffering from severe injuries, and I refuse to believe he can run far away from us.”

Li Tianyang said with an extremely cold voice.

“If my guess is correct, it should be that stinking monk who rescued Jiang Chen and that big yellow dog. As long as we find that stinky monk, we’ll be able to get Jiang Chen. Let me handle this task.”

A sinister smile appeared on Xiao Nanfeng’s face. Someone had told him about what happened in the Chaotic Ocean, and Tyrant played a big role in that incident.

"Palace Chief, look!"

The Great Elder looked at a spot below them. Li Tianyang followed his gaze and looked below as well, and he could immediately see a rusty broken sword lying on the ground of the mountain range. After losing the support of Big Yellow’s energy, the broken sword had been returned to its rather ordinary appearance, which looked like a scrap metal.

Li Tianyang’s eyes flickered. With a sway of his body, he landed on the ground. He waved his hand, pulling the broken sword into his palm.

“This broken sword is really heavy! Just now, that dog used this

broken sword to attack us, allowing Jiang Chen to be rescued. Let me try and see what kind of treasure this broken sword is.”

Even with Li Tianyang’s senses, he couldn’t see anything special about this broken sword. Judging from its appearance, it was no different from a piece of scrap metal. He circulated his Yuan energy and sent it into the broken sword, but to his shock, even with his extremely powerful Yuan energy, he was unable to activate the broken sword, and it didn’t seem to respond at all.

“How could this be possible?! That dog is only a Third Grade Demon King, and isn’t even close to the Demon Emperor realm, so how could he possible unleash such mighty power from this broken sword?! Palace Chief is a true Combat Emperor, but you can’t even make this sword respond when using all you power... This is truly unusual.”

The Great Elder was really surprised.

“This is definitely a great treasure, only that I can’t use it with my current cultivation. If my guess is correct, that dog must have used some kind of secret technique. I’ll bring it back and do some research. With this broken sword, we won’t have to return empty handed.”

After saying that, Li Tianyang put the broken sword away.

After unleashing the power of the broken sword, Big Yellow fainted straightaway. Thus, he never had a chance to take it back. When Tyrant came here to rescue the two of them, his time to do

so was very limited, which left him with no time to take back the broken sword. Furthermore, when Tyrant arrived, the broken sword was still unleashing its power, so if he took it away, the web of sword would have disappeared, freeing the three powerful warriors. Then, none of them would be able to escape.

Li Tianyang and his subordinates left. The mountain range had been completely destroyed. In fact, when Jiang Chen was facing the sixth tribulation bolt, this place had pretty much been destroyed. The battle that came later simply destroyed this land so much that no grass could grow here in the future. So, for the next few dozen years, this place would be a desolate land.

Jian Province, a province neighboring the Liang Province, and one of the major provinces of the Xuan Region. After Tyrant escaped, he began rushing toward the Jin Province. He found a quiet and wet cave, and made it their temporary shelter. It was a rather spacious cave. A man and a dog were lying on the ground, both severely injured. In fact, they were currently in dying states.

Lying on the ground, Jiang Chen's face looked as pale as a sheet of paper, and he had stopped breathing. However, Tyrant could clearly sense that there was a force hiding inside of Jiang Chen's body, supporting his life. If it was any other person, he would have instantly died by being in such a condition.

Tyrant couldn't help but sigh upon thinking about Jiang Chen's incredible ability. When Jiang Chen told them he was going to rescue Tan Lang, he never thought Jiang Chen would use such an approach; using his Combat King cultivation base to attract Heavenly Tribulation. This made the monk feel very astonished.

He only knew this after Big Yellow told him.

After that, he turned to Big Yellow. Although Big Yellow was in a much better condition than Jiang Chen, it wasn't good either. Big Yellow had used a forbidden technique to forcefully increase his cultivation base, then he used his blood essence in order to unleash the power of the broken sword. Both these things brought him a devastating backlash, which put him into deep sleep. Fortunately, the bloodline in his body was still circulating normally, which helped Big Yellow recover at a constant speed. It was just that no one could know when Big Yellow would wake up. But at least, his life wasn't at risk. However, whether or not this would bring any negative effects to his future cultivation was still not certain. A backlash was extremely frightening, and the most terrifying backlash could cripple a cultivator straightaway. Thus, Big Yellow's future was in extreme danger.

As for Tan Lang, he was currently resting quietly within the Heavenly Saint Sword, and knew nothing about what was going on in the outside world. The Heavenly Saint Sword had previously returned to Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, and was lying there quietly.

“Brother Jiang is a true man. Venturing alone into the Asura Palace, such a heroic mission. Underneath the heavens, perhaps only he is capable of achieving this feat. I, this monk really admires his actions.”

Tyrant muttered to himself. He came from the remote Western Region, and was a rare genius on the Buddhist path. Although he was only twenty years old right now, he had already reached the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. He had never admired any

geniuses before, but today, he felt like prostrating himself in admiration for Jiang Chen.

After that, Tyrant began chanting in some Sanskrit sutra. He removed the beads from his neck, then used the beads to unleash countless golden beams into Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's body. He was using a Buddhist technique to heal both of them.

For Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, this was a true calamity; a life and death calamity.

Chapter 527 – Redeeming Interest

As Tyrant had laid down a formation outside the cave, nothing inside could be sensed by anyone outside. It was worth mentioning that some of the Buddhist techniques were pretty amazing. For example, the Concealing Formation set up by Tyrant. Unless someone who was an expert when it came to Buddhist techniques came, not even a Ninth Grade Combat King would be able to notice anything different about this cave without paying close attention. Also, as this was a pretty remote place, no one would really pay any attention to a rundown cave.

Also, this place wasn't in the Liang Province, it was in the Jin Province; no longer the territory of the four major powers. Thus, it was relatively safe.

What Tyrant needed to do now was assist Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in their recovery; do everything he possibly could.

Two days later. Tyrant was staring at the man and dog lying motionlessly on the ground. He couldn't help but let out a heavy sigh. A dense golden aura covered their bodies, making them look like two huge cocoons. It was a very gentle glow, which allowed them to calm their minds while being inside. Not only that, as Tyrant had a Minor Saint's sarira inside his body, it made the golden glow extremely pure, and provided an even bigger positive effect to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's injuries.

But unfortunately, as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were suffering from severe injuries, they were now in deep comas, and were showing no signs of waking up. Not only that, Jiang Chen's vitality

was extremely weak, and it showed no signs of getting better. If not for that mysterious force inside his body supporting him, he would be no different from a dead man.

That mysterious force came from the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill which Jiang Chen had consumed at the most critical moment. The Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was a mighty divine pill, and without the help of this pill, Jiang Chen would be in an even worse state. Although the Dragon Transformation skill provided him a great self-recovery ability, it had now stopped working completely as Jiang Chen was in an extremely bad condition.

As for Big Yellow, the backlash from using the forbidden technique as well as the loss of his blood essence was too serious, and it was a miracle that he hadn't died yet. However, since he had the support of the Dragon Horse bloodline, and the bloodline was continuously circulating in his body, his condition was much better when compared to Jiang Chen.

“Looks like the only solution is to return and let master save them. I can't save them with my ability.”

Tyrant murmured. Although he was a Fourth Grade Combat King, he felt helpless when faced with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's severe injuries. During the past two days, he had used every single method he knew about, but none had brought any positive results.

The monk could easily abandon Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, leaving them here to go on his way. However, he would never do something like that. Jiang Chen had previously saved his life, so he

had to save Jiang Chen no matter what, and he would give it his all.

After making up his mind, Tyrant waved his hand and placed both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow into his Qi Sea. After that, he walked out from the cave.

Three men flew by from the distance and stopped in the sky above this mountain range. The monk furrowed his brows as he looked at them. Without hesitating, he held his breath and looked at them carefully. They were all emanating powerful auras, and they were all Fifth Grade Combat Kings. Judging from the clothes they were wearing, they should be the geniuses from one of the four major powers in the Liang Province.

“Wen Hua, we’re in the Jin Province’s territory. Are you sure that monk will have come this far?”

One of the young men asked. He was a genius from the Invincible Sect.

“We can’t act rashly in the Jin Province, we should act with caution. Your Asura Palace has suffered a great loss this time, even the Freezing Hell Jail was destroyed. But, that Jiang Chen is indeed a frightening man. I never thought he’d be able to attract Heavenly Tribulation.”

Another young man who had a huge sword strapped behind his back said. His words carried a hint of exultation. He was from the Peerless Sword Faction. Currently, in order to hunt down the

monk, although the three of them had temporarily teamed up, their relationship was rather bad, as the three major powers were constantly fighting each other. So, as the Asura Palace had suffered a great loss, the other two major powers would naturally take pleasure in their misfortune.

“During the past two days, we’ve searched everywhere in the Liang Province. So, I’m guessing they’ve already left the Liang Province. The Great Tycoon has said that anyone who can capture that monk and Jiang Chen will be rewarded handsomely. As long as you two help me capture them, I’ll split the reward equally between the three of us.”

The young man from the Asura Palace called Wen Hua was actually the Sixth Tycoon. He was a man with a prestigious status and a formidable cultivation base. At his young age, he had reached the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. After the Freezing Hell Jail was destroyed, the Great Tycoon had ordered them to search for Jiang Chen and the monk. Also, he had offered a reward for whoever managed to capture them. That’s why Wen Hua had teamed up with these geniuses from the Peerless Sword Faction and Invincible Sect, which eventually brought them to Jiang Chen.

On the surface, these three major powers were of the righteous path, making them the Heavenly Devil Palace’s natural enemies. So, they naturally wouldn’t work with them.

“This mountain range looks really quiet, I don’t think there is anyone here. If we keep searching like this, it’ll be no different from looking for a needle in the ocean.”

The genius from the Invincible Sect said.

“Let’s scan this mountain range thoroughly with our divine sense.”

Wen Hua suggested.

Soon after, the three men all unleashed their divine sense, spreading it throughout the entire mountain range. The three Fifth Grade Combat Kings could easily search every single inch of this mountain range, and they could even see a tiny ant from high up.

Somewhere in the mountain range, with an insidious expression, Tyrant murmured, “Consider yourselves unlucky for bumping into your grandpa Tyrant today. Brother Jiang, Big Yellow, let this monk return help you redeem some interest first.”

After saying that, Tyrant turned into a trail of light and shot into the sky, appearing in front of the three men.

"You bastards! Your grandpa is here!"

Tyrant shouted out arrogantly. The image of an eminent monk from the Western Region was simply bullshit for Tyrant.

The three men who were attentively searching the mountain range were startled, and they stared at the monk who had appeared out of nowhere with astonishment. In an instant, great

joy emerged on their faces.

“Stinky monk, it’s really you! I never expected you to actually be hiding in this place! We’ve struck gold today!”

Wen Hua was really happy. According to what he had heard from someone, this monk had found a rare treasure in the Chaotic Ocean. So, if he was able to capture this monk, not only would he obtain that treasure, he could also take credit for finding him, which would lead to him being rewarded handsomely upon returning.

“Monk, you truly have guts! Not only did you not hide after seeing us, you instead showed yourself in front of us. Looks like you’re tired of living in this world!”

The genius from the Invincible Sect said while laughing out loud. He wasn’t taking Tyrant seriously. The monk was only a Fourth Grade Combat King, while they had three Fifth Grade Combat Kings here. They could easily crush this monk.

“You’re right. This monk does feel tired of living in this world. However, it seems that you three are more tired than I am. So, I’ve decided to save your souls from purgatory!”

A bright smile blossomed onto Tyrant’s face. No one knew why he looked so confident when faced with three Fifth Grade Combat Kings.

“I have often heard that those eminent monks of the Western Region are cultured people, so you’re no doubt a black sheep among them. I’ll give you a chance to live now, as long as you give me Jiang Chen, I’ll spare your life.”

Wen Hua said.

“Who needs your mercy? Why don’t you come and kill me now? If you’re that great, just kill me!”

What the monk said nearly made Wen Hua throw up a mouthful of blood. This monk was a weirdo, he was definitely the biggest weirdo they had ever met.

“Don’t waste your time talking to him, let’s just kill him. Since this monk is here, Jiang Chen must be hiding somewhere close-by as well.”

The genius from the Invincible Sect said in a cold manner.

After saying that, the genius of the Invincible Sect charged toward Tyrant. He was going at full speed, and was attacking aggressively. He waved both hands and unleashed numerous runes, which weaved into a large silver-colored shield, then bashed the shield toward Tyrant.

No one knew how much force this strike contained, but it had instantly shattered the space surrounding it. It was so powerful that it could instantly destroy a huge mountain.

However, the monk seemed unhurried, and no signs of panicking could be seen on his face. At the same time, a golden energy wave surged out from his body and towered into the sky, transforming into a huge golden beam. After that, the monk let out a wild roar and unleashed his Fudo Seal. It was a clear sign that the monk had no intention of showing any mercy to these people.

Boom!

From the mighty power of the Fudo Seal, one could tell where Tyrant's confidence came from. At this point of time, Tyrant's cultivation base had improved significantly compared to when he was in the Chaotic Ocean. He was now a peak Fourth Grade Combat King, and he was half a step into the Fifth Grade Combat King realm.

And this was all because of the frightening sarira. It had improved Tyrant's physique by a lot. Furthermore, the sarira was residing within his body, and it was constantly merging with the monk, meaning that Tyrant's cultivation base was in a state where it was constantly being improved. He could enter the Fifth Grade Combat King realm at any time, or perhaps even go higher.

Back when he was in the Chaotic Ocean, with his Fourth Grade Combat King cultivation, Tyrant was able to instantly kill those Fourth Grade Combat King geniuses. This proved that he did indeed possess the ability to fight Fifth Grade Combat Kings. Now, with the increase to his overall strength, Fifth Grade Combat Kings were nothing much to him. Although Tyrant wasn't as abnormal as Jiang Chen, who was able to kill those a few realms higher than

himself, he had no problems killing someone who was only one realm higher than himself.

The Fudo Seal collided with the silver shield. The shockwave from the collision of the two attacks instantly ripped the space apart. The Fudo Seal was one of the three supreme Buddhist Seals, and it possessed the fiercest power of them all. The shield unleashed by the genius from the Invincible Sect was instantly destroyed; it was so weak that it couldn't even withstand a single blow.

Arghh...

After the Fudo Seal destroyed the shield, its power wasn't reduced at all, and it kept pushing further into the genius. The genius from the Invincible Sect felt as if a gigantic mountain was crushing into him, and he couldn't hold up against it even with all his strength. He let out a miserable shriek, as one of his arms was twisted and broken by the seal. His forehead was bathed in sweat.

"Impossible, how can this monk be so strong?!"

The genius of the Invincible Sect couldn't hold back his shock.

"This monk is too strong; a tough nut to crack. We need to fight him together, take out your weapons; don't give him any chance to fight back!"

Wen Hua roared out. A large saber made from some unknown

materials suddenly appeared in his hand, and it shone brightly. With just one look, one could easily tell that it was a rare King Weapon.

Chapter 528 - Western Region

Wen Hua and the genius from the Peerless Sword Faction were struck with astonishment. They couldn't believe what they had just witnessed. To their knowledge, the monk was just a Fourth Grade Combat King. No matter how much of a genius he was, it was impossible for him to be a match for three Fifth Grade Combat Kings. However, who could have thought that the monk's frightening strength would go beyond their imagination? The powerful warrior of the Invincible Sect couldn't even withstand a single strike from him, and had one of his arms broken by him. Thus, none of them dared hesitate any longer.

Clang!

Most of the disciples from the Peerless Sword Faction cultivated sword skills. The genius pulled out his precious sword that was strapped behind his back. Then, he and Wen Hua unleashed numerous dazzling sword and saber beams toward Tyrant.

On the other side, the severely injured genius from the Invincible Sect dared not relax. While enduring the severe pain coming from his broken arm, he drew out his weapon as well. Although the three men weren't from the same sect, their relationship was privately quite good. Thus, they could cooperate pretty well. The three men's teamwork brought a significant boost to their spirit, and their overall strength improved by a lot as well. The cooperation of three Fifth Grade Combat Kings was not something any ordinary man could deal with.

The space once again began to tremble as a result of their

powerful attacks. Countless cracks appeared in the air, while the Spatial Energy leaking out from the King Weapons here wreaked havoc in the entire place. The place quickly became a chaotic battlefield.

Although he was surrounded by the attacks of these three powerful men, no signs of nervousness could be found on Tyrant's face. Instead, a smile emerged on his face. With his overall strength, he had no reason to fear these three men. Since the beginning, Tyrant had yet to take out his combat weapon. But now, in order to defeat these three geniuses, he quickly pulled out the golden beads that hung around his neck.

After the Buddhist beads were taken down, they immediately began emanating a dazzling glow. Numerous golden Sanskrit symbols could be seen on the surfaces of these beads. Driven by Tyrant, the beads started expanding at top speed. Each bead looked like a resplendent gigantic disc; extremely majestic.

“Ten Thousand Buddhas!”

Tyrant roared out loudly. His voice was incredibly loud, as he shouted out using the Buddhist technique Vajra Lion's Roar. Wave after wave of golden ripples surged through the air, spreading across the scene. However, the frightening part about this attack wasn't this roar, but the chain of beads. Like a mighty barrier, the beads formed a golden field. Following Tyrant's subsiding voice, numerous dazzling golden beams shot out from the beads. They looked like razor sharp beads capable of destroying anything that got in their way. They were slicing through the space as if they were cutting through butter.

Clang, clang, clang...

The golden beams that shot out from the beads clashed into the three men's powerful King Weapons, producing loud clanging sounds and a large amount of sparks. The great impact pushed the three powerful warriors back, making them feel unwell as their blood was violently tumbling about inside their bodies.

"Impossible, how could this monk be so strong?! Even the three of us are no match when teamed up against him!"

Wen Hua was truly astonished. It looked like his eagerness for success had caused him to make a huge mistake. This monk was far tougher to deal with than he had imagined. Judging from his ability, it would take at least a Sixth Grade, or even a Seventh Grade Combat King to capture this monk.

Ha!

Tyrant once again roared out. In an instant, the golden beams that had shot out from his beads became much denser, and eventually transformed into a golden ocean. Finally, the golden beams weaved together and formed a huge golden Buddhist seal. Like a huge mountain, it forcefully charged into the three men.

Boom!

It was a powerful attack. The three men instantly lost the grip of

their weapons. At the same time, the genius from the Invincible Sect who had previously been wounded let out a miserable shriek, as his twisted arm exploded into a clump mist. It was completely destroyed.

Wen Hua and the other genius from the Peerless Sword Faction were in no better states. They had thrown up a few mouthfuls of blood, staining their chest crimson, and their auras were in messy states. Tyrant's attack had severely wounded all of them in an instant, making them resemble arrows at the entire of their flights. They had lost all ability to fight against Tyrant.

The three men looked at each other and saw the same shock in each other's eyes. Almost at the same time, the three men shouted out a single word, "Run!"

Yes, running away if you were no match for the enemy, this was always the case. If they didn't run away, staying here would be equal to waiting to be slaughtered.

It was extremely easy to escape when a Combat King decided to do so, as they had all mastered Spatial Laws, which allowed them to escape through entering the void. But unfortunately, the three weren't in any good shape right now. If they chose to run away while they were still in top shape, even Tyrant would be unable to stop them. But now, it was a completely different story.

"Where are you going? Grandpa told you that I wanted to save your souls from purgatory, and I have to do it. Grandpa is a man who keeps his words, and I can't let you three little punks ruin my flawless reputation."

Tyrant mentioned his reputation. He suddenly felt as if he was a man who always kept his words. At least, it was like that this time. Since he said he wanted to save their souls from purgatory, he had to do it no matter what. Otherwise, it would be a huge shame to his reputation.

Therefore, right when the three men were about to flee, Tyrant moved. He forcefully threw out the gigantic beads, making them fly with incredible speed, then collide with the head of the Invincible Sect genius.

Bam!

The genius from the Invincible Sect couldn't even put up his defense. His head instantly exploded when the beads hit it, and died on the spot. Meanwhile, the beads didn't slow down at all, and continued its course toward the genius from the Peerless Sword Faction.

The genius unleashed a layer of Yuan energy to try and defend himself from the beads. But unfortunately, he was too weak right now, so there was no way he could defend himself. These beads had been personally crafted by Tyrant's master, and he had carried them with him since he was young. Once it was used to attack an enemy, the mighty power would be beyond imagination.

In the end, the genius from the Peerless Sword Faction was unable to escape from his ill fate. The beads hit his waist, causing him to break into two. He died miserably on the spot.

Seeing this, the Sixth Tycoon Wen Hua was filled with great fear. He dared not hesitate any longer, he immediately ripped a crack in the space and stepped into the void.

“Kaka, don’t run away from your grandpa!”

Tyrant had been prepared for this, and he wouldn’t give Wen Hua any chance to run away. He had no good opinion of the people from the Asura Palace because of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s pitiful conditions; that were caused by the Asura Palace. He called back the beads and held them in his hand, then made half of them penetrate into the void and hook onto Wen Hua’s neck. Then, he forcefully pulled the beads, dragon Wen Hua out from the void.

Wen Hua’s face turned green as he was trapped by the beads. He was trembling violently. No one wanted to die, especially those who were standing face to face with death. As one of the Asura Palace’s 13 Tycoons, he held great power and status, and he had a good life, and an even better future. So, he naturally didn’t want to die.

"No... please, don't kill me."

Wen Hua was very scared. He had witnessed Tyrant’s strength, and he knew that the monk could kill him as easily as flipping his palm.

"Give me a reason why I shouldn't kill you."

The monk asked in a serious manner.

Wen Hua was startled. Yes, he couldn't think of even a single reason why the monk shouldn't kill him. With their hostile relationship, they were supposed to kill each other. If their positions were reversed; if the monk was in his hands, he would never spare this monk. And, not only would he not spare this monk, he would make the monk regret staying alive.

“Can't think of any? Actually, this monk is a merciful man. If it was Jiang Chen, he would definitely not let you go. However, I'll be merciful, and save your soul from purgatory.”

After saying that, the monk pulled the beads and forcefully broke Wen Hua's neck, causing his head to fly high into the sky.

"Amitabha!"

Tyrant placed the beads back on his neck. Then, he clasped both palms together in front of his chest and said in an utmost serious manner, “Brother Jiang, I have redeemed some interest for you. Now, I'll bring you to the Western Region. Once you've fully recovered, I believe you'll come back here for revenge.”

After that, without spending another second in this place, Tyrant ripped a crack in space and stepped into it, then disappeared without a trace.

The Sixth Tycoon had died a tragic death. He thought that with the help of the other two powerful warriors, he would be able to seize the reward. However, he never expected the monk to be so strong. Even though the monk was only a peak Fourth Grade Combat King, he was capable of instantly killing a Fifth Grade Combat King.

Tyrant came from the remote Western Region. There were a total of eight major regions in the Divine Continent. The Xuan Region was located in the east, while the Western Region was located opposite of the Xuan Region, in the west. The Liang Province was also located at the eastmost side of the Xuan Region. So, in order to travel from the Liang Province to the Western Region, even with Tyrant's speed, it would not be a matter of one or two days.

The Divine Continent was an extremely vast land, as it was the heart of the Saint Origin realm, making it a place the Southern Continent and Eastern Continent couldn't compare with. As a matter of fact, the Southern and Eastern Continent combined were actually smaller than the Xuan Region. Fortunately, the monk was a Combat King who had mastered the Spatial Laws, so he was able to enter the void and jump through space. If it was an ordinary cultivator who traveled by flight, the journey from the Xuan Region to the Western Region would at least take a few months.

The journey from the Xuan Region to the Western Region wasn't as simple as one would imagine. This was because some major powers didn't allow people to enter them freely, and some major powers of those regions would even construct Spatial Gates, just like the Teleport Formation found in the Island of Ice, and use it as a means of making income. So, for those cultivators who wished to

travel to other major regions, they would have to pay with either Earth Restoration Pills or Heavenly Restoration Pills to use those Spatial Gates to travel between the major regions. With that, not only would it save them time, it would also save them a lot of trouble.

Because the journey from the Xuan Region to the Western Region was long, there was a possibility for him to bump into all sorts of trouble along the way. The Xuan Region was just an ordinary region when compared to the other eight major regions. Some relatively powerful regions would have some extremely powerful powers residing within, and it would be a headache if any conflicts arose with them.

Furthermore, Tyrant wanted to rush back and save Jiang Chen, so he couldn't afford wasting any time. He had brought some fortune with him, so he had no issues paying for the Spatial Gate.

Seven days later, after travelling through a few major regions, Tyrant finally arrived in the Western Region. It was a paradise that belonged to the Buddhists. It was the smallest region in the entire Divine Continent; a half enclosed region. However, no one dared to underestimate the Western Region. Even though they had become weaker over time, their foundation was still very powerful.

Chapter 529 – Greenlotus Mountain, Old Monk

After entering the Western Region, one could smell a different kind of aura lingering in the air. This place could be considered the kingdom of Buddhism, although there were many other clans in this place, and there were even genuine devils entrenched on the border of the Western Region. The Buddhists were the natural enemies of the devils. In fact, the main reason why the Western Region's power had decayed was because of the intense battles between them and the devils. Of course, the devils' power was decaying as well.

Dong... Dong...

Harmonious sounds of bells ringing could be heard from anywhere in the Western Region. They came from the Great Leiyin Temple. Just listening to the sound for a brief moment would make someone feel completely relaxed; throwing away all worries and trouble. This was the Holy Land of Buddhism with a long history of legacy. Although there was a lot of slaughter in this land as well, it had mostly been washed away by the Buddhist rays, making the air clear and fresh.

However, upon arriving at the Western Region, Tyrant seemed spiritless and dejected, and a sorrowful expression was visible on his face. However, he quickly adjusted his emotions, then started flying at top speed. His ultimate goal was to save Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. If not for this, he wouldn't have come back to this place at all. This was because he didn't want to see the look of disappointment on his master's face.

There was a desolate mountain range in a corner of the Western Region. A lonely hill standing tall could be seen in the center of this mountain range. It was a hill with an amazing scenery, green waters, and lush vegetation everywhere. Even the natural Yuan energy was extremely dense. It contrasted sharply against the desolate mountain range, sticking out like a sore thumb.

Tyrant appeared on the borders of this mountain range. He seemed to be muttering something to himself as he strode toward the tall hill. Soon, he arrived in front of the tall hill. An invisible formation was covering the entire hill, and no ordinary man could see it with naked eyes. If Jiang Chen was here, he would be able to tell that this invisible formation was created by a Minor Saint.

The monk arrived in front of the formation and took out a talisman. He then waved the talisman in his hand, revealing a crack in the formation, then walked through the crack. After Tyrant entered the crack, the formation immediately restored itself to its original form.

Because of this formation, it was impossible for any ordinary man to enter this tall hill. Tyrant was obviously very familiar with this place.

Upon setting foot onto the tall hill, one would immediately discover that this tall hill was supposed to be taller than its current height. Apparently, its peak had been sliced off by a powerful warrior with one strike, eventually creating the current flat field on top of this hill. A temple was visible on this flat field. It was a small temple, but it was elegant.

A huge stone tablet stood thirty meters tall halfway up the hill, and one word was forcefully written on it, 'Greenlotus'. The name of this hill was Greenlotus Mountain. Anyone in the Western Region who knew of Ancestor Greenlotus would know why this hill was given this name.

The entire hill appeared to be very quiet, and not a single man could be seen. No auras could be sensed either.

Tyrant knew his way well. With a leap, he set foot on top of the hill.

The temple's main gate was wide open. Tyrant walked straight into it. After passing through the gate, a golden palace was revealed to him. Although it had been built many years ago, it still emanated a bright golden glow, filling the place with a holy aura. The gate leading into the palace was open as well, and Tyrant strode into it without hesitating.

The place was spacious, but also rather empty. A sublime statue stood in the center of the palace. It was a statue of an eminent monk, and its entire body was coated in gold. The monk had a face giving of a sense of kindness, and he looked to be in his fifties. He was neither fat nor skinny. He was seen holding one hand in front of his chest, and he wore a bright smile on his face. Nine circular scars could be seen on his forehead. It was a lifelike statue, and it was as if it could come back to life at any time. However, no aura could be sensed from the statue, proving that it truly was a statue.

If Jiang Chen was awake right now, he would definitely recognize this statue.

Tyrant went down on his knees in front of the statue and respectfully kowtowed three times. He was acting completely differently compared to when he was in the Xuan Region, becoming someone with a solemn expression.

“En, not bad. The first thing you did after coming back is kowtowing to your Ancestor Master.”

A voice suddenly rang through the palace. It was a deep and resounding voice. It obviously came from an eminent monk. Whether it was his attainments to Buddhism or his cultivation base, Tyrant had no way of comparing to this monk.

As his voice subsided, an old monk suddenly appeared in the palace. The way this old monk appeared was rather bizarre, as no fluctuations in space could be sensed. It was as if he was a ghost who had just appeared out of thin air. Judging from this, his cultivation base must be quite good.

The old monk wore a yellow robe of primitive simplicity. He looked to be in his seventies, and he had a long, white beard. His eyes were calm, and no emotional fluctuations could be seen on his face. This entire temple on Greenlotus Mountain only had two residents; the master and the disciple. After Tyrant had left this place, the old monk had been the only one to reside in this place.

"Master."

Tyrant kowtowed toward the old monk in a respectful manner.

“Fourth Grade Combat King; you have broken through two stages since you left, not bad. However, this is far from enough, as the burden on your shoulders is enormous. Master has told you before; in order for you to mature, you’ll have to walk through a path filled with hardships. Master won’t provide you any aid during this process. No, why have you come back? Do you want to stay in this deserted temple and live a boring life?”

The old monk said with a calm voice. However, it wasn’t hard to tell that he was disappointed in Tyrant. Sometimes, disappointment came from huge expectations, just like how the old monk had huge expectations for Tyrant. Even though Tyrant had proved himself to be an outstanding cultivator among those of his age, even if he wasn’t inferior to those super geniuses from the Great Leiyin Temple, his current achievements were far from meeting the old monk’s expectations.

“Master, the Great Leiyin Temple has invited you many times, so why do you keep rejecting them? What’s the point of staying in this place? With your strength, you can go wherever you please in this world. Also, every time I ask you about what happened to Ancestor Master, you never answered. You just kept telling me to cultivate.”

Tyrant was a stubborn man. He didn’t understand why his master did this. The Great Leiyin Temple was a supreme Buddhist existence. Anyone following the Buddhist path would feel prideful for being able to join the Great Leiyin Temple. However, his

master had turned down every single invitation from them.

“You know nothing. The Great Leiyin Temple is far more complicated than you can imagine. This is a sinister world, and you’re too young, Tyrant. You’re a man endowed by nature with unusual intelligence, and you should feel proud that you’re able to inherit from your Ancestor Master. I have my reasons for staying here. As for those questions you asked me, I’ll give you the answers once you’re stronger than me.”

The old monk said.

“Master, you’re a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, when can I possibly become stronger than you? Furthermore, what kind of secret requires me to become a Great Saint before you can tell me?”

Tyrant was puzzled. It was extremely difficult to become a Great Saint, and it wasn’t something that could be attained just by relying on one’s innate talent.

“That’s why you shouldn’t waste any time and neglect your cultivation. No matter how long it’ll take, master will always wait for the day to come. Before you leave, master told you not to come back before you reach the Combat Emperor realm. Once you become a Combat Emperor, master will have something for you. If you die in the outside world, that will be your fate. However, you’re only a Fourth Grade Combat King, so why did you come back? Are you trying to receive praise from master?”

The old monk said, a hint of anger in his tone. It seemed like he

was a bit exasperated at Tyrant's failure to meet his expectations.

Tyrant finally remembered why he came back. He came back in order to save Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. He got a bit sidetracked, and couldn't help but ask those questions after seeing the statue of his Ancestor Master. He only remembered his purpose upon seeing his master get angry.

"Master, there is a reason for why I came back this time. Master, please take a look."

Tyrant stood up and waved his hand, taking Jiang Chen and Big Yellow out from his Qi Sea, then placed them on the ground.

The old monk rested his eyes on Jiang Chen's face, then his eyes lit up. For some unknown reason, he actually sensed a familiar aura from this young man. Even though Jiang Chen was in a deep coma, the vague expression on his face still brought a familiar feeling to this old monk. However, the old monk was certain he had never met this young man before, so where did that sense of familiarity come from? This was truly strange.

"Master, this man is Jiang Chen. He and this big yellow dog are both friends your disciple met in the Xuan Region. When I was in the Chaotic Ocean, I found a sarira, and while I was in secluded cultivation trying to absorb the sarira, some enemies found me and tried to attack me. It was these two who risked their lives to save me. Later on, both of them were attacked, and now suffer from severe injuries. Your disciple failed to save them, and that's why I came back to master, hoping you can save them."

Tyrant explained what happened back in the Liang Province.

The old monk was startled upon hearing what happened, but a vague expression of joy quickly emerged on his face. It had been a long time since any outsider was permitted to entire Greenlotus Mountain. However, the old monk wasn't angry that Tyrant had brought outsiders here. Putting aside the fact that the monk felt a sense of familiarity from Jiang Chen, and had no mental repulsion, Tyrant's kind attitude made the old monk feel gratitude. This little disciple of his had been wild and intractable since young, and although Tyrant had just ventured into the real world, he had made himself a friend of life and death; this was something the old monk wanted to see.

Especially when Tyrant could befriend a genius; that made him even happier, as it would be of great benefit to Tyrant's future cultivation.

"You said you found a sarira?"

The old monk sent his divine sense into Tyrant's body, then retracted it.

"Excellent, your luck is truly good. The sarira was left behind by a Third Grade Minor Saint. No wonder you've progressed so quickly. Your physique has been modified and improved; this is a fortune that belongs solely to yourself. I believe that you can break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm whenever you want."

The old monk was happy with the news. He then squatted down next to Jiang Chen and threw out an examining look. With just one look, he was shocked, “Why is there such a strong and pure lightning energy within his body?”

Chapter 530 - Lotus Sutra

The old monk was struck with astonishment. No man could have such pure lightning energy in his body, except for those born with lightning physiques, or those geniuses who were cultivating lightning skills. However, such a person's lightning energy would quiet down while in a dying state, making it impossible for outsiders to sense it. However, the lightning energy he sensed in Jiang Chen's body was extremely pure, and it contained a pure Yang characteristic at the same time. Also, it was stored within Jiang Chen's body and could be easily sensed, and was not purposely being controlled by Jiang Chen.

This was truly mysterious. How could a dying man have such strong lightning energy within his body?

Of course, Jiang Chen wasn't someone who could be compared with those geniuses who had a lightning physique. He had just faced Heavenly Tribulation, absorbing a vast amount of lightning energy. Not only that, he had also consumed a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, and it was this pill that was working in his body right now. So, even though Jiang Chen had lost his consciousness and was now in a dying state, the pure lightning energy was still circulating within his body.

“Master, he just faced Heavenly Tribulation not long before this. The lightning energy within his body must have been absorbed during that process. Also, most of his injuries were caused by the Heavenly Tribulation, and he was attacked by a Ninth Grade Combat King shortly after. It really is a miracle that he is still alive right now.”

Tyrant said.

“What?! Did you just say he faced Heavenly Tribulation not long before this? Are you telling me attracted Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm?”

For the first time, the old monk cried out in shock. As an eminent monk, he rarely experienced such strong emotional fluctuations. The calm and steady old monk had forgotten when he last became so agitated. This was the first time he had seen a genius who could attract Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm. So, just couldn't control his emotions.

At his current level, he was well aware of how frightening Heavenly Tribulation was, and he knew the source of it. By attracting Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm, it proved that this young man possessed monstrous talent, far beyond what ordinary geniuses could ever compare with.

However, there was another thing that amazed this old monk. Not only had Jiang Chen faced Heavenly Tribulation, he was also attacked by a Ninth Grade Combat King, and he survived all of this. Although he looked no different from a dead man at the moment, the old monk could still tell that this young man was a live, and that a mysterious force was supporting him.

“That's right, brother Jiang is an amazing man. He was able to kill Fourth Grade Combat Kings when he was a First Grade Combat King. He is a man your disciple can only look up to. Also, he used

the Heavenly Tribulation to destroy the Freezing Hell Jail, a place that belongs to a powerful sect in the Liang Province. Your disciple really admires him, so master, please save his life. This is your disciple's only reason for coming back this time."

Ever since he had been born, aside from his own master, this was the first time Tyrant had been so concerned about the life and safety of another man.

"Alright, let me have a look."

The old monk was agitated. He squatted down again and began to carefully examine Jiang Chen's injuries. He couldn't ignore a peerless genius who could attract Heavenly Tribulation, and he was really happy that his disciple could befriend such a genius.

The old monk was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. It was just like Tyrant had said earlier; a man like this could go anywhere he pleased. He was a true Buddhist, and thus, his knowledge and judgment were far beyond that of any ordinary man.

After the old monk examined Jiang Chen's injuries, he couldn't help but furrow his brows, "His injuries are very severe. All his internal organs are destroyed, and even his soul is in deep coma. If it was any other ordinary man, an injury like this would have resulted in death long ago. However, there is an energy that is continuously circulating inside his body. I'm guessing he must have consumed some kind of life-saving pill before entering a coma. Not only that, it seems that there is another mysterious, yet subtle force supporting him. It's a really miraculous and mysterious force, even your master can't tell what it is."

"Master, can he be saved?"

Tyrant asked impatiently.

"I'm not so certain about whether or not we can save him. Under normal circumstances, such injuries would definitely kill almost any person in this world. It is a miracle that he's still showing signs of life. This man has a very strong will, and as he has consumed some kind of powerful pill, it provides treatment to his injuries. There is nothing much your master can do. No matter what, your master will try to help him with the Lotus Sutra, and hope I can wake his soul from slumber. As long as his soul awakens, I believe he will regain consciousness by himself."

The old monk said.

His words immediately brought an excited expression to Tyrant's face. He was well aware of his master's strength. Since his master was a true Buddhist, an eminent monk; a man who never tells lies, and never brags. Since his master said Jiang Chen could be cured, Tyrant believe it with his whole heart.

"However, with such severe injuries, everything will still depend on himself. He has a strong will, a monstrous talent and an extremely strong physique, and I can tell that his will to stay alive is strong. Although your master can help him with the Lotus Sutra, in the end, it all goes back to himself."

For some unknown reason, the more he looked at this young

man, the more he felt as if they had met somewhere before. However, he just couldn't recall when or where, and he could even confirm that he had never met this young man before. It was a truly curious feeling.

“Master, can you also look at Big Yellow? In order to save Jiang Chen, he used a forbidden technique to forcefully increase his cultivation base by two stages, then used his blood essence to control a mysterious broken sword which seemed really amazing. His actions gave your disciple an opportunity to save both of them. He suffered a tremendous backlash, and is severely injured as well.”

Tyrant said.

After listening to what Tyrant told him, an amazed yet puzzled look could be seen in the old monk's eyes. Normally, those techniques used to temporarily increase one's cultivation base were all forbidden techniques, and no one would use it unless it was a critical moment. However, a secret technique like this was rare, and extremely precious, and techniques that could forcefully increase the cultivation base by two realms were even rarer. However, this dog actually knew a technique like that. It seemed he had an amazing background as well.

The old monk's eyes landed on Big Yellow's body. Slowly, he stretched out his shining arm and placed it on top of Big Yellow's forehead.

In the following second, the old monk's expression changed dramatically, “He possesses a rare and vigorous Divine Beast

bloodline. Your master once met a real Divine Beast, a Qilin, and its blood like was just as vigorous as this dog's. However, I'm sure this dog's bloodline isn't that of a Qilin, but your master is unable to tell what kind of Divine Beast this dog is. However, it's no doubt a really powerful bloodline, and his future achievements will be limitless. No wonder he could use such a forbidden technique."

The old monk could no longer remain calm. The man and dog brought back by his disciple were extremely monstrous, and the dog was an existence that possessed a complete Divine Beast bloodline. It was truly frightening.

"Indeed, Big Yellow is a mystical being."

Tyrant nodded his head. He had no doubts about this, as he had witnessed it with his own eyes.

"You said he used a broken sword to repel two First Grade Combat Emperors and a Ninth Grade Combat King? Where is that broken sword? Can your master have a look?"

The old monk was shocked yet curious. He knew the difference between a Combat King and a Combat Emperor, and even though Big Yellow was genuine Divine Beast, it was impossible for him to fight against a Combat Emperor as a mere Third Grade Demon King, and even repel them. The only possible explanation was that broken sword. It must be a mystical weapon; a truly rare treasure.

"The broken sword belongs to Big Yellow. However, as the situation was really pressing, I'm afraid it now is in the hands of

the Asura Palace.”

Tyrant said.

The old monk felt it was a pity. Although he wasn't a man completely indifferent to worldly temptations, he wasn't a greedy man either; just curious. However, he also knew that some treasures could only be used by Divine Beasts, while no other beings could even activate the treasure. So, although the broken sword was in the hands of the Asura Palace, it would be no different than scrap metal to them.

After that, the old monk started to pay close attention to Big Yellow's injury. Upon completion of his inspection, he couldn't help but furrow his brows. The man and dog in front of him were both severely injured. The backlash was extremely severe, and although his vital signs were distinct, and looked to be much better than Jiang Chen, it would still be very difficult for Big Yellow to completely awaken.

“The Divine Beast bloodline is extremely powerful, so this dog won't die. Even if your master doesn't help him, he will most like awaken by relying on his bloodline. Perhaps he'll activate an even stronger ability of his bloodline. The injury is not necessarily a disaster for this dog, and there's a high possibility that it's a great opportunity for him. However, your master isn't sure how long this dog is going to slumber.”

Although the old monk was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, he had been studying the path of Buddhism throughout his entire life, so he didn't know much about other things, and he even lacked

sufficient knowledge regarding Divine Beasts. That's why there wasn't much he could do to help Big Yellow. However, the result of his diagnosis still made Tyrant feel relaxed. At least, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow wouldn't die.

“Your master will now use the Lotus Sutra to help both of them. The Lotus Sutra is a sacred Buddhist Sutra. It represents holiness and dignity, and can be used to help cleanse a man's soul. I'll use this sutra to assist Jiang Chen in the awakening of his soul. The rest will be up to himself.”

This was the only thing the old monk could do as things stood.

The old monk closed his eyes and began chanting. Countless runes started emerging from his mouth. Each runes was a Sanskrit that carried the quintessence of Buddhism; it was a mystical scene. The runes fell onto Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's body, completely covering them up and making them look like two huge golden cocoons.

Tyrant sat straight on the other side, his palms put together devoutly and attentively as he worked on comprehending the philosophy behind the Lotus Sutra. For him, every time he listened to his master's lecture, he would always benefit greatly.

A serene atmosphere prevailed in the palace, and only Buddhist glows were lingering around. The old monk stopped after he finished chanting the Lotus Sutra. However, all those Sanskrit were still hovering in the air; floating around Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's bodies.

Within Jiang Chen's subconscious mind, he felt his slumbering soul floating into a kingdom full of golden rays. There were eminent monks and Buddhists everywhere, and he even saw Sovereign Bodhisattva. It was a kingdom of Buddhism; sacred and peaceful, a place in harmony with the rest of the world. His soul was being cleansed within this sacred kingdom.

Chapter 531 – Transformation Of The Dragon Transformation Skill, Nirvanic Rebirth!

The soul was currently being cleansed. For any cultivator, it was an extremely rare experience. Buddhist Sutras were profound and powerful, and the Lotus Sutra was one of the miraculous Sutras. It didn't possess any offensive power, and it was strictly used to help others. The results it brought became greater depending on the cultivation base of the person using it.

Jiang Chen's soul was entirely submerged in a Kingdom of Buddhism like this. It was a true paradise; no slaughter, no bloodshed; the entire place was filled with brightness, entirely freeing one's soul from worries.

The old monk was still inside the palace, carefully watching any change that happened to Jiang Chen. Tyrant was there as well, not only because he was worried about Jiang Chen's condition, but also because he could learn the essence of this Lotus Sutra. Although it wouldn't be able to bring any benefits to his cultivation base, it could bring a transformation to his mental state, and this was something very important. The mental state was very important to a cultivator, and following the improvement of their cultivation base, the importance became much more obvious.

Perfect silence prevailed in the Greenlotus Mountain. It seemed like this place was always like this, and had not once been lively before. Peaceful and lonely; the old monk guarded this place, living a near secluded life. This place was a peaceful paradise, and as long

as one lived here, he would always feel tranquil and indifferent.

Within the palace, the golden Sanskrit was still hovering in the air, filling the space with a bright golden light. Big Yellow seemed to be sleeping even more peacefully, as his tightly furrowed brows had become relaxed upon hearing the Lotus Sutra. Jiang Chen also had a look of joy on his face.

In the blink of an eye, three days passed. Counting the time from when Tyrant left the Xuan Region, ten days had passed. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had both been sleeping for ten days, and this was the longest they had ever slept. They were lying in this place, aloof from the world.

However, they couldn't keep on like this forever, even though they had yet to show any signs of waking up.

Buzz...

Right at this moment, a buzzing sound could suddenly been heard from Tyrant. Numerous golden glows transformed into countless vortexes and appeared above Tyrant's head. Meanwhile, the strength of his aura started rising. In the blink of an eye, he broke through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm.

The old monk's eyes lit up as he witnessed the transformation. A look of praise leaked out from his eyes, "This is the credit of the sarira. This kid's luck is quite good, the sarira has once again improved his physique, which will allow him to easily break through to the Combat Emperor realm without any issues."

The old monk had a pair of sharp eyes, so he was able to see even the smallest changes in Tyrant. The reason why Tyrant could cultivate so quickly was the sarira. After absorbing the sarira, although he didn't break through several realms at once, it made breaking through much easier and relaxing. With the sarira residing in his body, it could be said that Tyrant was progressing at every second, and that he would stand at new heights every new day. Just like now, because of the impact of the Lotus Sutra, he broke straight through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. And, it was far from being the end, as Tyrant's cultivation base would improve with each passing day, and it was highly possible that he would break through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm in just a few days.

“Master, this Lotus Sutra is truly amazing, it enlightened me deeply about the path of Buddhism. Master, what other remarkable techniques and Sutras do you know? Why don't you teach them to your disciple?”

Tyrant showed the old monk a rather crafty smile.

“Hmph. There are plenty of things I haven't taught you yet. However, the time isn't right yet, as you are still too weak. Teaching you those skills would bring you nothing good.”

The old monk glared snappishly at Tyrant. Tyrant spat out his tongue in response. However, he knew that everything his master did was for his own good.

Another three days passed. After thirteen days of deadly silence, Jiang Chen finally showed some progress. With the help of the Lotus Sutra, Jiang Chen's Great Soul Derivation skill had started circulating by itself, and because Jiang Chen's soul was already strong, his sleeping soul finally woke up.

Jiang Chen's soul left the incorporeal Buddhist Kingdom and woke up in his own body. In that instant, the golden Sanskrit that was hovering around Jiang Chen's body shattered, as if they had just been hit by a tremendous force.

"Master, what is going on?"

A look of worry emerged on Tyrant's face.

"Haha, this man's soul is too strong. Initially, I thought that even with the Lotus Sutra's help, it would take at least two months for his soul to awaken. But unexpectedly, it only took him six days, and he has awakened by himself. This is amazing, he's truly worthy of being the abnormal monster attracted Heavenly Tribulation."

The old monk joyfully laughed out, unable to help but praise Jiang Chen. Even with his vast knowledge and experience, he had never seen someone so abnormally talented like Jiang Chen.

"Does this mean that brother Jiang will soon awaken?"

A look of excitement emerged on Tyrant's face.

“Of course not. His soul has awakened, meaning that he won’t die this time. It will still take time for him to recover from his injuries. As for how long it’ll take, that’s really hard to tell. According to his injuries, perhaps it’ll take at least half a year. However, he’s a man with extraordinary talent, and can’t be judged by normal standards. Perhaps the duration will be greatly shortened.”

The old monk had initially estimated that it would take two months for Jiang Chen’s soul to awaken, but it had only taken Jiang Chen six days. Therefore, as for how long it would take Jiang Chen to fully recover, the old monk had lost his confidence to give a resolute answer. An abnormal monster like Jiang Chen could never be judged by normal standards.

After Jiang Chen’s soul awakened, the old monk felt an even stronger sense of familiarity from him, especially from his soul. Suddenly, the old monk’s expression changed slightly.

“This guy’s name is Jiang Chen, and his name was also Jiang Chen... could it be? No, impossible, this is absolutely impossible! The greatest Saint underneath the heavens passed away on the Saint Cliff a hundred years ago, and his body was completely destroyed, all that remains is his legend! It looks like I’m overthinking this. This young man is a genius who gives me a feeling of the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, that’s why I find him so familiar.”

The old monk shook his head. The Greatest Saint underneath the heavens had long ago vanished in the course of history, and it was

impossible for him to still exist in this world. And, if he really was still alive, there was no way he could remain unheard of for over a hundred years. Also, this young genius in front of him was only a Combat King, the gap between him and the greatest Saint was not just small. It just happened that both men had the same name, as there were plenty of people named Jiang Chen.

Upon recalling this greatest Saint underneath the heavens, the old monk couldn't help but feel mixed emotions. Many years ago, when he was still following his master, the old monk had once met the greatest Saint. He was deeply overwhelmed by the bearing of the greatest Saint.

Of course, the old monk would never know the truth. Thus young man lying in front of him was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint underneath the heavens. The feeling of familiarity that came from Jiang Chen's soul was all because of this.

After Jiang Chen's soul awakened, aside from the Great Soul Derivation skill, the most crucial Dragon Transformation skill started working by itself as well. Not only that, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill that had been accumulated in his body had started taking effect.

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard from Jiang Chen's body. Previously, he had nearly lost all the blood in his body, but now, following the circulation of the Dragon Transformation skill, treads of crimson blood essence started appearing in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea. The Dragon Transformation skill was indeed a miraculous

skill, it was as if it wasn't just a skill by itself, but a rare sentient treasure.

This tiny tread of blood essence came from the Dragon Transformation skill. Although it was an incorporeal skill, not only was it able to teach True Dragon skills to Jiang Chen, it was able to provide him blood essence. This was really mystical.

Rumble...

Following the appearance of this blood essence, a powerful energy instantly burst out from it. Soon after, this tread of blood essence began swimming around in Jiang Chen's body, while the Dragon Transformation skill continued circulating at top speed. Jiang Chen's misfortune had become a blessing in disguise, because his Dragon Transformation skill had once again begun to evolve.

Roar~

Like real dragons, the Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea roared out at the same time. Wherever the blood essence passed, the blood in Jiang Chen's body would be replaced. New blood was being generated at a steady pace, while the injuries within his body were recovering at incredible speed. All the shattered internal organs had also started regenerating by themselves.

The tremendous energy leaking out from Jiang Chen's body nearly brought down the roof of the palace. Countless incorporeal, blood red shadows of dragons could be seen lingering around Jiang

Chen's body, as if they were protecting their master.

Staring with astonishment, both the old monk and Tyrant were dumbstruck by what they were witnessing.

“Heavens! What is happening inside his body? Why is there such a mystical scene? Those shadow dragons look like real dragons!”

Although the old monk's experience and knowledge was vast, he had never seen anything like this before.

“Brother Jiang is a true dragon among all mortals. Looks like the severe injury is a blessing disguised as misfortune.”

Tyrant's eyes flickered. He was very happy for Jiang Chen.

“I'm guessing he's cultivating some kind of really frightening skill. Let me see what exactly is happening within his body.”

The old monk was completely stunned. He quickly sent out his divine sense and tried sending it into Jiang Chen's body, but to his extreme shock, right when his divine sense entered Jiang Chen's body, it was instantly knocked back by a powerful force.

The old monk's body shook, and his face turned pale.

"Master, what happened?"

Tyrant worriedly asked.

“There is an unknown force in his body that’s blocking my divine sense. If I didn’t pull it out just in time, perhaps the force would have shattered my divine sense. I could feel that it was a very ancient force, as if it was a living being from the ancient era. This is truly frightening.”

The old monk was still in a state of shock. Although he was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, the aura inside Jiang Chen’s body felt like it came from the ancient era. It was extremely powerful, sacred and supreme; causing anyone who sensed it to feel like bowing down in front of him.

It was a sacred existence, and no one was allowed to challenge it.

Jiang Chen was still lying on the palace’s ground. More and more shadow dragons appeared over his body. A tremendous change was happening inside his body. All his internal organs were constantly being regenerated, while all his injuries were being healed at an incredible speed.

The Dragon Transformation skill had once again transformed. It had changed every single drop of blood inside Jiang Chen’s body, making him full of vitality once again. Not only that, following the transformation of the Dragon Transformation skill, another message appeared in Jiang Chen’s mind.

【Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal】, it was another powerful True Dragon Skill!

Chapter 532 - Dragon Scale

Every time the Dragon Transformation skill transformed, it would always bring Jiang Chen a powerful True Dragon combat skill. The first time, it brought the True Dragon Palm and True Dragon Flame. The second time, it was the Azure Dragon's Five Steps, and currently, the third time, the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, and each skill was stronger than the previous. The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal could be considered a supreme True Dragon combat skill, because the transformation Jiang Chen experienced this time was completely different from the previous two times. This time, he could be considered to have been completely reborn. The blood essence that came from the Dragon Transformation skill had once again modified his body, as it exchanged every single drop of blood in his body, making his physique even more monstrous.

This was a perfect example of a blessing coming disguised as a misfortune. Since he had reincarnated to this world, Jiang Chen was destined to become a man with a great future. No matter where he went, no matter what situation he faced, he would always be blessed by fortune. Thus, even inevitable death had turned into a tremendous blessing for him. Without this disaster, it would have taken the Dragon Transformation skill ages to transform for the third time.

After cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill for such a long time, Jiang Chen had truly began to understand this divine skill, and had gained complete acceptance from the skill itself. It was a skill that came with its own sentience; mysterious and unpredictable. Even Jiang Chen himself couldn't predict what the future development of the Dragon Transformation skill would be, and he couldn't imagine what realm he would be able to reach with

the Dragon Transformation skill. However, there was one thing he was certain of, and that was whenever the Dragon Transformation skill transformed, its circulation would become much faster, and it would eventually bring more benefits to Jiang Chen. Each evolution would make the engagement between it and Jiang Chen more perfect. Just like this time, blood essence had come straight out of the skill itself. This was something unprecedented, and it could be considered a miracle.

It was difficult to imagine what kind of tremendous benefits the Dragon Transformation skill would bring to Jiang Chen after the fourth, fifth, or even further transformations down the road. Meanwhile, more secrets would appear within the Dragon Transformation skill after each transformation.

The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, as its name implied, this powerful combat skill was related to the five elements. The Five Elements Combat Dragon seal was comprised of five combat skills; the Golden Dragon Seal, Azure Dragon Seal, Water Dragon Seal, Fire Dragon Seal, and the Earth Dragon Seal.

Each seal was interconnected with the Five Elements, and the mutual promotion and restraint between the five elements made the strength of this combat skill unstoppable, so much stronger than the True Dragon Palm. As for the actual strength of this combat skill, it would be directly affected by the five elements that Jiang Chen found, meaning that this combat skill wasn't easy to master. The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal was different from the True Dragon Palm and Azure Dragon's Five Steps. The True Dragon Palm and Azure Dragon's Five Steps were both printed directly into Jiang Chen's mind, and he was able to use them straightaway, and they would become more powerful following the

strength of his cultivation base. However, this wasn't the case for the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal. Jiang Chen was only provided the cultivation method of this combat skill, so he had to work on his own to cultivate this skill.

During the next few days, Jiang Chen had yet to awaken. However, his aura was becoming stronger and stronger, while the dragon shadows lingering around his body became denser. Dragon roars had been echoing throughout the Greenlotus Mountain, as if countless dragons from the ancient era had really descended onto this tiny mountain.

From the first day since Jiang Chen entered the state of transformation, the old monk and Tyrant had been staring at him without blinking their eyes. The shock on their faces grew stronger with each passing day, as they couldn't believe that a man could undergo such a tremendous transformation.

“Master, Jiang Chen's blood is extremely vigorous, it's giving me an impression that he is not a human, but a real Heavenly Dragon.”

Tyrant was extremely shocked. How could a man emit such a pure and sacred aura, and possess such extremely powerful Qi and Blood that went beyond any normal human being. If he wasn't seeing this himself, he wouldn't have believed it to be real.

“Frightening, this is truly frightening. Could he be the reincarnation of an ancient True Dragon? That's impossible, I can clearly sense a human aura in his body. I'm guessing he's cultivating some kind of special skill. However, does such a

frightening skill really exist in this world?”

The old monk was completely stunned. Even with his experience, he was unable to accept what was happening in front of his own eyes. However, as Jiang Chen was a special man who could even attract Heavenly Tribulation, it seemed like nothing was impossible when it came to him. In fact, the old monk was really happy. He had decided to maintain a good relationship with this abnormal genius. For his lifelong goal; for Tyrant's future path, and the responsibility Tyrant had to bear, if this young man could help him out, he believed that his dreams would come true one day.

Jiang Chen's transformation was becoming more and more obvious, and it had been going on for more than a whole month, but he had yet to show any signs of waking up. However, his vitality had become extremely vigorous; his body was brimming with energy, and all his internal organs had completely recovered. His eyebrows seemed like a pair of razor sharp sword, and even though he was lying there quietly, he was portraying an imposing imagine, making all those who looked at him feel like bowing their heads.

Crack...

During the following days, some transformations started happening on Jiang Chen's body once again. Numerous blood red scales emerged on his chest, then his arms, and then his legs. Eventually, many blood red scales could be seen on Jiang Chen's body. These scales were glowing with a blood-like glaze, and they looked mystical and sturdy. However, what really shocked the old

monk and Tyrant was that these scales weren't something like an armor, or something formed by his Yuan energy, they had truly grown from inside Jiang Chen's body, as if they were all connected to Jiang Chen's flash and blood.

"Master, what are these?"

Tyrant was once again struck with great shock. During this month, Tyrant had been progressing every single day. With the help of the sarira, his cultivation base had reached the peak of the Fifth Grade Combat King realm, and was just one step away from the Sixth Grade. In fact, he could break through at any time. This was the frightening benefits brought by a sarira, and was also the thing that made Tyrant so amazing. He didn't really need to do anything, and his cultivation would just increase significantly every single day. A situation like this would truly make people envious.

"Dragon scales! Oh heavens, there are dragon scales growing on his body! He really is a monster! My disciple, let me tell you this. The Saint Origin realm is just a single plane in this universe, a small world amongst thousands of other parallel worlds. Once upon a time, this plane was completely isolated, and the Great Saint realm was the highest realm that could be reached. It had been like this until one hundred years ago, when the Greatest Saint underneath the heavens used his sword to cut open the gates to the Immortal Realm, opening up a path for all the Saints in the Saint Origin realm. During the past one hundred years, many Great Saints with strong foundations left this realm to venture into the other realms. A supreme existence like a True Dragon would never exist in the Saint Origin realm. I'm guessing that the skill Jiang Chen is currently cultivating is strong related to those True

Dragons. This is truly frightening, if news about this spreads out, I have no idea how many mighty powerhouses will be alerted, and Jiang Chen will definitely become the center of attention. Those families with ancient legacies, those super powerful sects and clans of the Divine Continent, all of them will focus on Jiang Chen. If that really happens, Jiang Chen will be in great danger.”

The old monk could no longer keep his calm, because he had finally recognized the transformation of Jiang Chen. Although there were many cultivation and combat skills that bore the name of the dragon, and some which even allowed the cultivator to transform into a dragon, even powerful Flood Dragons, none of those were genuine Heavenly Dragons. However, the dragon scales that appeared on Jiang Chen’s body were genuine dragon scales! If this was known by others, it would definitely cause a mighty commotion.

“Indeed, brother Jiang is a man full of mysteries. I hope master can keep this secret for brother Jiang.”

Tyrant placed his palms together devoutly and said to the old monk.

"Of course I will."

The old monk said in a solemn manner. He knew that the storm brought by a heaven-defying cultivation skill would be unimaginable. Also, he could see further than Tyrant, so he wanted to befriend Jiang Chen, so of course he had to keep this secret for Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had gone through a huge transformation. When the dragon scales growing on his body reached a certain number, they stopped growing further. These dragon scales didn't fully cover his body, there weren't any scales from his neck to the top of his head, and they were absent from some other parts of his body as well. This was because Jiang Chen's cultivation had yet to reach the required level. Since the beginning, it could be said that he had to form 100,000 Dragon Marks in order to hit the peak, and only then could he transform into a dragon and soar through the heavens.

One hundred thousand marks! Currently, Jiang Chen only had slightly over 22,000 Dragon Marks. There was still a long way to go before reaching the goal. Furthermore, the more Jiang Chen came to understand the Dragon Transformation skill, the more he felt the unusual ability of this skill. He had a feeling that even if he finally formed 100,000 Dragon Marks, he would still be far from reaching the peak of the Dragon Transformation skill. The skill was far more mystical than he could ever have imagined, and it seemed that the secret hidden in this skill was not a common one either.

43 days had passed since Jiang Chen entered a coma. During these days, the Asura Palace had been searching everywhere for Jiang Chen and the monk. They had nearly searched through every single inch of the entire Liang Province, as well as a few neighboring provinces. The other three major powers of the Liang Province were also searching for the men. However, it was as if Jiang Chen and the monk had completely vanished from this world, as no one could find any traces of them.

The news about the destruction of the Freezing Hell Jail were

also heard by many. A man capable of attracting Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm stunned many people, and Jiang Chen's name thus started spreading across the entire Xuan Region like a wild forest fire. Many people from different provinces had heard about this man, Jiang Chen, who had attracted Heavenly Tribulation. No one could remain calm upon hearing the news, there were even some major powers of the Xuan Province who had started placing their attention on Jiang Chen.

Many people were guessing that Jiang Chen must have died by now. According to someone who had witnessed what happened that day, both Combat Emperors as well as the Great Tycoon from the Asura Palace had attacked Jiang Chen together, knocking him, who had been badly injured by the Heavenly Tribulation down from the sky. That's the reason why many people thought Jiang Chen was now dead.

Some other people had different opinions, and thought that Jiang Chen was still alive. An abnormal monster who could attract Heavenly Tribulation would not be killed so easily. However, regardless of whether or not he was still alive, he had become really famous. Perhaps he set the record for fastest rise to fame. His name was first heard by all in the Chaotic Ocean, then the entire Liang Province, and then eventually, the entire Xuan Region.

While everyone in the Xuan Region were talking about Jiang Chen, the man was still in deep sleep in the remote Western Region. Within the palace on Greenlotus Mountain, the dragon shadows hovering around Jiang Chen's body had disappeared, and the dragon scales on his body had also disappeared. The entire palace had returned to its original peace. Quietly motionlessly,

Jiang Chen was still lying on the ground. He looked just like any ordinary human. He had yet to awaken, but his vitality had become extremely vigorous.

Chapter 533 - Fourth Grade Combat King

Jiang Chen's condition had completely stabilized. Not only that, he had once again gone through an extremely important transformation. Meanwhile, there were still Sanskrit from the Lotus Sutra hovering around Big Yellow's body, but he was showing no signs of being about to wake up. He had suffered badly from the backlashes, and it would be extremely difficult for him to fully recover. After all, unlike Jiang Chen, he didn't have the Dragon Transformation skill to help him out. Although the Dragon Horse bloodline was mystical as well, it was also in a state of deep sleep.

“Master, since brother Jiang has recovered, and he is showing signs of vigorous vitality, why hasn't he woken up yet?”

Tyrant asked.

“He has obtained huge benefits from the transformation, and I think he's in the middle of digesting it. I believe it won't take long for him to fully wake up.”

The old monk nodded his head with a smile. He no longer worried about Jiang Chen's condition. An abnormal genius like this wouldn't die so easily. He was a man with a great destiny, and his future achievements would be limitless.

The old monk had a pair of sharp eyes that allowed him to derive an accurate conclusion. Although he had no idea what kind of heaven-defying skill Jiang Chen was cultivating, Jiang Chen's

current condition was extremely good.

Just like what the old monk had said, Jiang Chen was currently digesting what he was given this time. Currently, the energy inside his body was in a mess. The lightning energy accumulated in his body from the Heavenly Tribulation, the brand new energy brought by the evolution of the Dragon Transformation skill, the energy that came from the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, it would take some time for Jiang Chen to completely digest all these energies.

In the blink of an eye, half a month had passed. At this point of time, Jiang Chen had completely vanished from the Liang Province, and he had been completely silent for two whole months. During these two months, not only had Jiang Chen's name been spoken of in every single corner of the Liang Province, even the entire Xuan Region had heard his name. All those superpowers in the Xuan Region had learned about this young abnormal genius who attracted Heavenly Tribulation. There were even some superpowers who were trying to contact Jiang Chen in order to recruit him. However, Jiang Chen had truly disappeared from everyone's sights. Many people were guessing that he was dead, and pitied the fall of this peerless genius. If a man like that was still alive, he would definitely become a big shot in the future.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen who was located at the remote Western Region suddenly opened his eyes. He moved and sat straight up. His eyes were as dazzling as the brightest stars, and two bright beams shot out like the sharpest blade, instantly ripping apart space.

Jiang Chen didn't pay any attention to his surroundings. He threw his head back and roared into the sky. The roar sounded like a heaven-shaking dragon's cry, shaking the minds of all those who heard it. After that, an extremely powerful energy surged within Jiang Chen's body and shot out in all directions.

What Jiang Chen wanted to do now was break through to the next realm. The Dragon Transformation skill had given him a new life. Such a transformation had brought him tremendous benefits. At this point of time, the energy accumulated within his body had completely erupted, and was pushing its way crazily like numerous wild beasts inside his body. Jiang Chen had to settle these raging energies as soon as possible.

The Dragon Transformation skill was circulating at top speed, and it was twice as fast as it was before the third transformation. Under the Dragon Transformation skill's high-speed circulation, those energies started turning into countless new Dragon Marks. In just a couple of minutes, 1,900 brand new Dragon Marks had formed. Together with the original Dragon Marks in his body, he now had a total of 24,000 Dragon Marks in his body, and that the amount required for him to break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm.

At the same time, the huge amount of Mortal and Earth Yuan Pills started burning like they cost nothing, as Jiang Chen had started absorbing them straightaway. The process of cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill was a process with endless consumption, and he would never have enough energy pills to consume. The amount of Yuan energy pills required for Jiang Chen to break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm was equal to the amount it took for an ordinary cultivator to break

through to the Ninth Grade Combat King realm from the Eight Grade Combat King realm, or perhaps even more than that. The difference between them was just huge.

But fortunately, Jiang Chen's fortune was quite good. He still had a lot of Yuan pills in his possession. Also, he had robbed quite a lot of pills when he was in the Chaotic Ocean, so he had no worries about the amount of pills required for breaking through.

"He has broken through to the Third Grade Combat King realm!"

Tyrant cried out in shock. When he first met Jiang Chen two months ago, Jiang Chen had just broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm. Only two months had passed, and Jiang Chen had just broken through to the Third Grade Combat King realm. Also, judging from Jiang Chen's momentum, it seemed that he would just stop there.

"Keep watching, he's going to break through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm."

The old monk's eyes flickered.

"Breaking through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm from the Third Grade is much more difficult than going from the Second Grade to the Third Grade. I wonder if brother Jiang can do it."

Tyrant stared at Jiang Chen without blinking his eyes. The Combat King realm was divided into nine grades, and there was a

gap after every third gap. So, the gap between the Third Grade and the Fourth Grade was much bigger than the gap between the second and third.

But for Jiang Chen, this was nothing he needed to worry about. The formidable Heavenly Tribulation, the Dragon Transformation skill's transformation, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, all these were more than enough to let Jiang Chen successfully break through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm.

Buzz...

The energy inside his Qi Sea was rolling around like the fiercest tsunami, and new Dragon Marks were continuously forming. In just ten minutes, another 2,000 Dragon Marks were formed. Jiang Chen suddenly let out a shout, causing the remaining Yuan energy pills inside his Qi Sea to start burning crazily. Throughout the path of cultivation, every single breakthrough would be supported by a large amount of energy pills. Just like Tyrant had said, it was much more difficult to break through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, as the amount of energy required was much greater compared to the amount needed to break through to the Third Grade Combat King realm from the Second Grade.

After reaching the Combat King realm, Mortal Yuan Pills were no longer sufficient. No matter how many of them were burned, they just did not help at all. And for Jiang Chen, even Earth Yuan Pills weren't that good; only Heavenly Yuan Pills could come in handy.

However, Heavenly Yuan Pills were extremely precious. Even an ordinary Combat King wouldn't have too many of them. Only

those Seventh Grade Combat Kings and above would use Heavenly Yuan Pills as base supply. Although Jiang Chen had robbed many people, he only had a limited amount of Heavenly Restoration Pills right now. That's why he was mostly consuming Earth Yuan Pills.

Countless energy pills were being consumed, as Jiang Chen was like a bottomless hole. His Qi Sea was at least ten times bigger than that of cultivators the same level as him. If Tyrant and the old monk knew about his frightening rate of consumption, they would definitely be shocked. Jiang Chen was simply the king of consumption; a genuine bottomless hole. No cultivator could withstand the horrifying consumption of his.

Jiang Chen's aura began rising to new heights as he broke through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. He was now many times stronger than before.

"Fourth Grade Combat King, so quick!"

Tyrant gasped in surprise. This was the man who broke through at the fastest pace he had ever seen. Jiang Chen never gave Tyrant a chance to mentally prepare himself.

The old monk was still faring better than Tyrant, but he was still obviously shocked.

However, it had yet to end. After Jiang Chen broke through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, his aura didn't stop rising. The remaining energy was still being used to form new Dragon Marks. Jiang Chen had also absorbed all those demon souls he

obtained in the Freezing Hell Jail. However, at his current level, absorbing those low-grade demon souls could no longer bring him good results.

Half an hour later, Jiang Chen's aura finally came to a stop; reaching the peak of the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. He now had a total of 17,500 Dragon Marks in his body, and only needed 500 more to break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm.

Realizing that Jiang Chen had finally stopped, the old monk and Tyrant sighed out in relief simultaneously. If Jiang Chen kept pushing forth and broke through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm in one go, perhaps both of them would have fainted on the spot. No matter how much of an abnormal genius Jiang Chen was, having such grand results was too much for them to accept. Since when was breaking through to a higher grade so easy? For all ordinary cultivators, even geniuses who possessed extraordinary talent, moving up a single grade in one or two years was already an amazing result. Breaking through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm from the First Grade in just two months like Jiang Chen had done, it was truly something that could make people's jaw drop in awe.

Jiang Chen was rather satisfied with his condition after breaking through to the peak Fourth Grade Combat King realm. However, he was now facing new troubles; he was running low on Yuan energy pills. According to his estimations, he had enough to support him until the Fifth Grade Combat King realm, then he would be completely broke. As the Dragon Transformation skill required an enormous amount of energy, he couldn't proceed further without the support of much Yuan energy.

“Looks like I need to find a way to obtain some Heavenly Yuan Pills.”

Jiang Chen inwardly said. No matter what, the more Yuan energy pills he had, the better. This wasn't something he could neglect. What he needed next was Heavenly Yuan Pills, as Mortal Yuan Pills were completely useless to him, while Earth Yuan Pills were barely sufficient.

After everything went back to normal, Jiang Chen let out a long sigh then slowly opened his eyes. When he opened his eyes, two bald heads were revealed to him; one old and one young. He didn't know the old monk, however, his eyes still landed on the old monk after his eyes opened. This was because his senses allowed him to see that this old monk was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

"Brother Jiang, you're awake!"

Tyrant happily said. It hadn't been easy, as he had waited for this moment for two months.

"Who is this?"

Jiang Chen felt he needed to know something. He had been sleeping for a long time, so he knew nothing about what was going on in the outside world.

“Brother Jiang, we're at Greenlotus Mountain in the Western Region. This is my master, Great Master Ran Feng. It's my master

who woke your soul using the Lotus Sutra, that's why you could recover in such a short amount of time."

Tyrant introduced his Master to Jiang Chen at once.

Jiang Chen was startled for a brief moment. He never thought Tyrant would bring him to the Western Region. It looked like it was Tyrant who saved him and Big Yellow that day. The Western Region was the most important land for Buddhism, and Jiang Chen never knew Tyrant had such a strong master.

Jiang Chen dared not show neglect. No matter what, this old monk had saved his life. He quickly stood up from the ground, placed his palms together and said, "Thank you, Great Master, for saving my life. Jiang Chen can never thank you enough for your kindness."

Chapter 534 - Suspended Animation

“Don’t mention it, little friend. You’ve saved my disciple’s life, and I would never put my hands in my sleeves and look on. Furthermore, I didn’t actually provide much help. It was that strong will of yours as well as that mysterious power that made you awaken, you should be congratulated.”

Great Master Ran Feng said with a smile. Jiang Chen had a very good first impression of this Great Master Ran Feng. This wasn’t just because the old monk had helped save his life, but also because this monk didn’t behave arrogantly, even though he was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. In the Divine Continent, a Saint was a supreme existence; a person who truly stood at the pinnacle. Let alone a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, even a First Grade Minor Saint would be respected no matter where he went. Without exception, all these existences were arrogant.

Judging from this alone, Great Master Ran Feng was a true eminent monk. No ordinary people could compare with his state of mind.

“Brother Jiang, it’s good that you have finally recovered. However, Big Yellow isn’t as lucky as you.”

While saying that, Tyrant moved his glance over to Big Yellow who was still lying on the floor.

"Big Yellow!"

Jiang Chen cried out in shock. Only now did he remember Big Yellow. When they were at the mountain range near the border of the Liang Province, Big Yellow had stood out at the very last moment to defend against the three powerful warriors from the Asura Palace, and had suffered from a severe backlash. Jiang Chen could still clearly remember Big Yellow falling down from the sky, not looking good.

Jiang Chen turned around and saw Big Yellow lying quietly on the floor. Numerous Sanskrit were still hovering around his body, but Big Yellow had fallen into deep sleep. If this was in the past, Jiang Chen would be really happy to see Big Yellow sleeping, because for this dog, sleeping also meant cultivation, and whenever he slept, he would always break through to a higher realm.

However, when he stared at Big Yellow quietly lying on the floor, Jiang Chen didn't feel happy at all. He quickly squatted down next to Big Yellow, then sent out his soul energy with the help of the Great Soul Derivation Skill, sending it into Big Yellow's body to examine his condition from top to bottom.

In fact, Big Yellow's injuries weren't very severe. All his internal organs were still intact, but his blood was extremely calm. It seemed he had lost too much of his blood essence, causing his vitality to become extremely weak, as if it was going to disappear at any time. All of this was caused by the backlash of forcefully using a forbidden technique and the broken sword. It was the most frightening backlash, and it had put Big Yellow into a deep suspended animation.

On the face of it, Big Yellow had died, as his vitality was extremely weak, but he was still alive. However, this kind of suspended animation was extremely terrifying, because if he was left in such a state for too long and didn't awaken, he would eventually die for real, and would never come back to life again.

“This dog possesses the bloodline of a Divine Beast, but he unfortunately suffered a severe backlash, and was placed in suspended animation. It's a tricky situation, and all I can do to help is use the Lotus Sutra. However, judging from the results so far, it doesn't seem like the Lotus Sutra has brought any positive results. His bloodline needs to be awakened, unlike your situation, where your soul needed to awaken.”

Great Master Ren Feng said.

“You're right. What we needed to do now is revive him from his false death state. As long as we can revive his Divine Beast bloodline, everything else should be easy to handle.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Compared to Great Master Ran Feng, he had a clearer picture of Big Yellow's condition.

After that, Jiang Chen clenched his fingers into the shape of a sword and shot out a razor sharp golden beam from his fingertips, aiming it at his arm and sliced through it. A large cut was made, and blood instantly burst out from the wound. Throughout the entire process, Jiang Chen ever frown a little.

Without hesitating, he sent the blood dripping out from his

wound into Big Yellow's mouth. The fresh blood turned into a straight line, like a stream of running water and flowed into Big Yellow's mouth at a steady pace.

"Brother Jiang, what are you doing?"

Tyrant was stunned by Jiang Chen's action. Jiang Chen had just recovered, but he was giving away his blood. It wasn't something good for Jiang Chen.

"Little friend, your blood contains pure Yang energy, and you've just gone through Heavenly Tribulation, making it a holy medicine. You're trying to use your own blood to awaken his bloodline. Little friend, you're a man with a true nature. However, you're a human, and he is a demon. Although your blood would help him somewhat, I don't think the results will be significant."

Great Master Ran Feng said. His eyes were full of approval as he looked at Jiang Chen. In order to save a demon, Jiang Chen didn't give it a second thought, and straightaway gave away his own blood. This showed that Jiang Chen was a man of true nature; a man who cherished his friendship. It was really nice that his disciple was able to befriend a genius like this.

"As long as this can provide even the slightest bit of help to him, I don't mind giving all my blood."

Jiang Chen's expression still remained indifferent. He knew better than Great Master Ran Feng how to save Big Yellow. As the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, no Ninth Grade Minor

Saint could compare with his knowledge and experience.

Jiang Chen was also clear about his own blood. He could clearly feel that his blood had changed after the latest transformation, and that it would definitely help Big Yellow's Dragon Horse bloodline.

After letting Big Yellow absorb some of his blood, Jiang Chen took out a pill and fed it to Big Yellow. When the pill entered Big Yellow's body, it instantly transformed into numerous streams of energy and began flowing through Big Yellow's entire body. The energy was so strong that anybody could sense it from outside.

“Little friend, what kind of pill is that? Why have even I never seen it before?”

Great Master Ran Feng couldn't hold his astonishment, and thus asked. With his experience, it was rare for him to encounter something unknown. He had never seen any pills that resembled the one Jiang Chen just fed to Big Yellow.

Great Master Ran Feng could clearly sense the rarity and strength of the pill, and it also contained the aura of Nine Solar Holy Water; emanating the purest Yang energy.

“This is a Nine Solar Lightning Dragon Pill. I concocted it while facing Heavenly Tribulation. I suppose great master has heard of it before. Using my blood and this pill, I'm sure I can make Big Yellow leave his state of suspended animation. Although he won't awaken any time soon, I can guarantee that no accidents will befall him.”

In order for Big Yellow's bloodline to awaken, the blood essence of some special demon, such as the Flaming Stallion was needed. However, before finding such a demon, Jiang Chen needed to stabilize Big Yellow's condition. The Lotus Sutra alone was far from sufficient.

“What?! Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill?!”

Great Master Ran Feng cried out in shock upon hearing the name of the pill, unable to remain calm. He stared at Jiang Chen with eyes wide open; his eminent monk image completely gone. All that remained on his face was a startled expression.

Tyrant was stunned as well. This was the first time he had seen his master react so hugely toward something, and nearly lose all manner. Tyrant had never heard about the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill before, but judging from its name, it must be an extraordinary pill. Otherwise, his master wouldn't have reacted in such a manner.

“That's right, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He had no reason to lie to Great Master Ran Feng.

“Heavens, that's a pill that only exists in legends! I never thought it could really be concocted, and not only that, it was concocted by a Combat King! If this pill is revealed to the public, I'm sure every single person in the Divine Continent will lose their minds and

fight for it.”

Great Master Ran Feng was really excited, he felt as if his life was well worth living up to this point due to the fact that he could witness a sacred pill such as the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill.

Chapter 535 - A Painful Topic

Great Master Ran Feng couldn't keep calm. Anyone who knew about the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill would become extremely agitated. The requirements to concoct this pill were too severe. First, Nine Solar Holy Water, which was a rare ingredient, and hard to obtain. The second part; the most critical one, the alchemist himself had to concoct this pill while facing Heavenly Tribulation. Throughout the entire Divine Continent, there had never been an alchemist capable of achieving this.

However, this young man in front of him had accomplished this seemingly impossible task. This caused Great Master Ran Feng's already high impression of Jiang Chen to reach new levels. This was a true abnormal monster.

"Little friend, you're really an amazing man."

Great Master Ren Feng said, his tone filled with mixed emotions.

After feeding Big Yellow the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, Jiang Chen finally felt somewhat relaxed. It wasn't until now that he ran his eyes across the spacious hall. While examining his surroundings, he saw a statue placed in the front of the hall. When he saw the face of the statue, his expression instantly changed.

"Ancestor Greenlotus!"

Jiang Chen cried out in shock. In his previous life, he had very few friends, and Ancestor Greenlotus was definitely one of them.

Furthermore, Ancestor Greenlotus had once saved his life, so although he had only met him a few times, their relationship was quite deep.

Jiang Chen's reaction startled Great Master Ran Feng and Tyrant. Ancestor Greenlotus was a man who existed hundreds of years ago, but Jiang Chen could actually recognize him. Buddhists rarely interacted with the outside world, let alone a mighty existence like Ancestor Greenlotus.

“Little friend, you know my master?”

Great Master Ran Feng was surprised by Jiang Chen's response.

Jiang Chen realized now that he had lost his cool and called out Ancestor Greenlotus's name. Now he had to find a way to explain his reaction. However, he couldn't just tell them the fact that he was reincarnated, as it was a fake that would shake this entire world. Being reincarnated and the Dragon Transformation skill, those were his biggest secrets. For an old monster who had lived two lives like him, he knew that such secrets could only be known by himself, and no one else. Otherwise, it had potential to cause a tremendous commotion.

After recognizing Ancestor Greenlotus, Jiang Chen finally remembered this old monk. When Ancestor Greenlotus met Jiang Chen many years ago, a juvenile monk was following him. Ancestor Greenlotus told him that the juvenile monk was his disciple. However, Jiang Chen didn't pay much attention to that young monk, and never asked him for his name. He didn't expect that that young monk had now grown into an old monk, and was

standing right in front of him. This junior from many years ago had now become his senior.

Jiang Chen also finally understood why Tyrant knew the Fudo Seal. His judgment back in the Chaotic Ocean was correct, Tyrant did indeed have a relationship with Ancestor Greenlotus.

Without changing his expression, Jiang Chen said, “Ancestor Greenlotus is the greatest Buddhist Saint. Many years ago, he saved my ancestors life, causing my ancestor to owe him a debt of gratitude. Therefore, Ancestor Greenlotus is the savior of my Jiang family. We have a drawing of Ancestor Greenlotus at our home, that’s why I was able to recognize him.”

“Amitabha, good, good. I never expected little friend’s ancestor to have connection with my master. This is destiny.”

Great Master Ran Feng did not doubt Jiang Chen’s words. He was well aware of what kind of person Ancestor Greenlotus was. Ancestor Greenlotus had traveled the entire Saint Origin realm throughout his life, and had saved many people. A nobody like Jiang Chen’s ancestor would surely hang up a portrait of Ancestor Greenlotus and worship it. Perhaps the ancestor of Jiang Chen’s family would never have imagined that he would have such a heaven-defying descendant.

Great Master Ran Feng was very happy. He was happy to know a genius like Jiang Chen, and now, to learn that his master had once saved Jiang Chen’s ancestor, he was even happier.

“More than one hundred years ago, the greatest Saint underneath the heavens used his sword to cut open the gateway to the Realm of Immortals; creating a new path for all Saints in the Saint Origin realm. With Ancestor Greenlotus’s cultivation base, I’m certain he has ascended into the Realm of Immortals.”

Jiang Chen carefully probed.

“That’s for sure. Ancestor Master was a man with mighty strength and a formidable cultivation base. After the greatest Saint fell on the Saint Cliff, he was the first man to rush over to that place, and also the first person to ascend.”

It was Tyrant who answered the question. His words carried a prideful undertone. Having such a formidable Ancestor Master, Tyrant would naturally feel proud about it.

Great Master Ran Feng placed his palms together in a devour manner and bowed toward Ancestor Greenlotus’s statue. However, Jiang Chen could clearly see a vague sadness from Great Master Ran Feng’s expression, and there was even slight anger mixed in. This was abnormal; an eminent monk like Great Master Ran Feng would never easily show his emotions, and would not easily become angry. However, upon mentioning Ancestor Greenlotus’s ascension, his expression immediately became uneasy.

What did this tell Jiang Chen? It meant that something wasn’t right about Ancestor Greenlotus’s ascension.

“Could it be that Greenlotus hasn’t ascended?”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but furrow his brows. Other people might not know anything about Ancestor Greenlotus's strength, but he was well aware. Ancestor Greenlotus was worthy of being called the stronger Buddhist. As the greatest Saint himself, Jiang Chen had never admired anyone but Ancestor Greenlotus. He had always felt that if he and Ancestor Greenlotus were to fight, his odds of winning would only be 60%. If they had to find out who the second strongest Saint underneath the heavens was, it would definitely be Ancestor Greenlotus.

Furthermore, there was one thing that puzzled Jiang Chen. Just now, he had used the Great Soul Derivation skill to scan the entire mountain. Throughout the entire mountain, there was only Great Master Ran Feng and his disciple. After Tyrant left, Great Master Ran Feng was the only one remaining in this place.

This situation troubled Jiang Chen's mind. With Ancestor Greenlotus's status, his descendants should be enjoying good treatment in the Western Region. How could the Great Lei Yin Temple make them stay on such a lousy mountain? Even if taking Ancestor Greenlotus out of the equation, Great Master Ran Feng himself was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, and a man with such strength should have a supreme position in the Great Lei Yin Temple.

Jiang Chen came to the conclusion that Great Master Ran Feng must have hidden something from Tyrant. Jiang Chen had no idea what had happened after he died at the Saint Cliff. Over a hundred years had passed since then, and now, the entire structure of the Saint Origin Realm had experienced a tremendous change. Most of the mighty warriors from his era had ascended into the Immortal

Realm.

Jiang Chen really wished to ask what happened to Ancestor Greenlotus. However, since Great Master Ran Feng had even hidden it from Tyrant, it must be a painful topic to touch, so he would most likely not tell Jiang Chen either. Perhaps Great Master Ran Feng felt that the time to expose the secret was not right. He was waiting for Tyrant to mature. In fact, with Jiang Chen and Tyrant's current strength, even if they knew the truth, there was nothing they could do, as they were simply too weak.

“Great Master, my ancestor owes a debt of gratitude to Ancestor Greenlotus, and you've saved my life. In the future, if there is anything you need my help with, I, Jiang Chen will definitely do it wholeheartedly.”

Jiang Chen didn't continue asking about Ancestor Greenlotus, but instead made a promise. In this world, there weren't many people who could obtain such a promise from Jiang Chen.

Upon hearing Jiang Chen's words, an agitated look emerged on Great Master Ran Feng's face. He felt really excited. With his sharp eyes, he was certain that this young man in front of him would definitely achieve extraordinary things in the future. If he was able to obtain Jiang Chen's help, then he would have a bigger chance at fulfilling his dream.

“Being able to receive such words from our little friend, this old monk feels content.”

Great Master Ran Feng responded with a smile. With his Nine Grade Minor Saint cultivation, it was uncommon to speak so politely to a mere Fourth Grade Combat King. However, what Great Master Ran Feng saw was Jiang Chen's future.

"Tyrant, thank you for saving me."

Jiang Chen patted Tyrant on his shoulder. Although he had fainted that day, he could guess what had happened. Big Yellow withstood the attacks of the three powerful warriors, but without Tyrant, he and Big Yellow would most likely be in the hands of the Asura Palace at this time.

"I don't want to take any credit in this, all credit should go to Big Yellow. It was he who sensed the Heavenly Tribulation that day and brought me to you. Also, that guy accurately found the location of where you were, and with that mysterious sword of his, he actually took on and withstood those three powerful warriors from the Asura Palace for a short time, giving me the chance to save both of you. It's a shame we had to leave that mysterious broken sword behind. I'm guessing it's in the hands of the Asura Palace now."

Tyrant told Jiang Chen what happened that day.

Jiang Chen wasn't surprised to hear that Big Yellow was able to accurately find the location where he was facing Heavenly Tribulation. Big Yellow was a miraculous being, and no matter what he did, Jiang Chen would not be surprised. Jiang Chen also knew about the broken sword. He and Big Yellow found it in the Whirling Sun City, and Big Yellow had treated it like the most

precious treasure; not even letting Jiang Chen peek at it. When they were fighting Lord Bloodmoon, Big Yellow had used the broken sword to deal with the Blood Banner. Now, he even used it to trap Combat Emperors.

“Hmph! Asura Palace, I’ll resolve our score sooner or later. Big Yellow’s treasure is not something you can possess!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed as killing intent began leaking out from his eyes. It was destined for Jiang Chen and the Asura Palace to have a life and death relationship. He had to seek revenge for Big Yellow, and he also had to retrieve that broken sword no matter what, as it belonged to Big Yellow.

Jiang Chen also had a feeling that except for Big Yellow, no one could use that broken sword. Even he, the greatest Saint underneath the heavens was unable to tell what kind of treasure that sword was, so it would be borderline impossible for anyone else to try and use it.

“Oh right, while I was escaping their hunt, I bumped into the Sixth Tycoon, as well as two other geniuses from the Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction. I killed all of them, redeeming some interest for you. Hehe.”

Tyrant smiled.

"Excellent job!"

Jiang Chen stretched his hand and touched Tyrant's bald head. After passing through trials of life and death, and because of Ancestor Greenlotus, their relationship now was quite good.

“Oh right, did you manage to save Tan Lang from the Asura Palace?”

Tyrant suddenly thought of Tan Lang.

“Damn it, I completely forgot about him!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. After staying inside of the Heavenly Saint Sword for so long, Tan Lang must have been driven crazy by boredom.

Chapter 536 - Visitor From The Great Leiyin Temple

Upon thinking about Tan Lang, Jiang Chen immediately took out the Heavenly Saint Sword. Within the sword's inner space, Tan Lang was sitting with legs crossed; immersed in a state of cultivation. Lightning was vaguely flickering around his body, making him look somewhat mysterious. It looked like Tan Lang did not waste his time during this period, and wasn't driven by boredom, as he was restlessly healing himself.

"Tan Lang, come out."

Jiang Chen sent his divine sense to Tan Lang. At the same time, he opened up the Heavenly Saint Sword's inner space. Tan Lang opened his eyes when he heard Jiang Chen's call, the came out from the inner space. When he saw that Jiang Chen was still alive, and sensed his formidable aura, a look of surprise emerged on his face. After Jiang Chen entered a deep coma, the Heavenly Saint Sword's inner space had been completely isolated from the outside world. Tan Lang had no idea what was happening outside. The last thing he remembered was when Jiang Chen faced Heavenly Tribulation, and three powerful men assaulting him at the same time. It was a hopeless situation, but judging from the current scene, it seemed that nothing had happened to Jiang Chen.

"Jiang Chen, you're alright! This is fantastic!"

Tan Lang said, his tone filled with joy. Soon after, he noticed the scenery surrounding him. There were two monks, one young and one old. He didn't know who the old monk was, but he

remembered the young monk. That very day in the Chaotic Ocean, it was this guy who took away the treasure and slaughtered the geniuses of the four major powers. It was a savage monk, truly worthy of being called the strongest Pirate Lord in the Chaotic Ocean.

“Let me introduce you. This is Tyrant, you’ve met him before. You can just call him monk. This is Great Master Ran Feng, Tyrant’s master. We’re now in the Western Region...”

Jiang Chen introduced Tyrant and Great Master Ran Feng to Tan Lang. After that, using his divine sense, he explained everything that had happened during this period to Tan Lang. There wasn’t much for him to tell Tan Lang, as Jiang Chen had been in a coma during this period. What he focused on was the relationship between him and Tyrant.

After being told by Jiang Chen what happened, Tan Lang couldn’t help but sigh. When he recalled what happened in the Liang Province, it seemed as if a generation had passed by. He never imagined that he would one day befriend the strongest Pirate Lord. As for Great Master Ran Feng, Jiang Chen didn’t tell Tan Lang his current cultivation. With Tan Lang’s abilities, it was natural that he would be unable to sense it. He could only feel that this old monk was a remarkable person; a man too deep to fathom. At least, he was much stronger than Tyrant. Otherwise, how could he be Tyrant’s master?

The remote Western Region; the Kingdom of Buddhism. Tan Lang had never been at this place before. Whenever he thought about his encounters back in the Asura Palace, his emotions would

be mixed up, especially when he thought about the torture he suffered in the Freezing Hell Jail. It simply made him feel awful.

Never in his wildest dreams did he think that he, a disciple of the Asura Palace, would one day become a life and death enemy of his own sect. After listening to Jiang Chen's story of how he escaped, and taking Jiang Chen's character into consideration, Tan Lang was almost certain that the scores between Jiang Chen and the Asura Palace would be resolved by death; nothing else.

"Junior greets Great Master Ren Feng."

Tan Lang bowed deeply toward Great Master Ran Feng. As a junior, he had to act politely and respectfully to an eminent monk.

"This little friend is also injured."

Great Master Ran Feng said after giving Tan Lang an examining look.

"I was badly injured and dying, if not for brother Jiang's help and lightning energy to temper my body, I would most likely be a dead man right now. I have recovered a lot. At least, I can move around freely. However, it will be really difficult for my cultivation base to recover."

Tan Lang laughed wryly. To be honest, Tan Lang was happy to be able to stand upright in one piece and talk. The moment he entered the Freezing Hell Jail, he had given up all hope of staying

alive. Now, after spending so much time healing himself in the Heavenly Saint Sword's inner space, his broken legs had recovered. However, his internal injuries were very bad, and it would be near impossible for him to fully recover his cultivation base.

“Compared to little friend Jiang and Big Yellow, your injuries are nothing serious. It's actually very simple for you to recover, all we need is...”

Before Great Master Ran Feng could finish speaking, he suddenly paused and furrowed his brows. After that, with a sway of his body, he instantly disappeared from the hall. This made Tan Lang dumbfounded. This old monk's cultivation was unfathomable, and he stood right in front of the old monk, but he couldn't even figure out how the old monk suddenly disappeared, as there were no fluctuation in the hall. With strength like this, perhaps even the Asura Palace Chief would be unable to compare.

"Ran Feng, your old friend is here again."

Right after Great Master Ran Feng disappeared, a vigorous voice a vigorous voice could be heard outside Greenlotus Mountain. Apparently, the reason why Great Master Ran Feng suddenly disappeared was because he sensed that someone was here.

From the voice and aura coming from this man, Jiang Chen could tell that this man's cultivation base was not any weaker than Great Master Ran Feng's; also a Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

"He is from the Great Leiyin Temple."

Tyrant said.

"Do the people from the Great Leiyin Temple come here often?"

Jiang Chen asked. Just now, the man said he had come again, so it was obvious that he had come here more than once.

"I heard that the Great Leiyin Temple is a sacred place for Buddhism, and that their strength is beyond speculation, to the point where even those mighty clans of the Divine Continent don't want to offend them."

Tan Lang was shocked. The Great Leiyin Temple was a superpower who solely dominated a major region, an existence that stood at the pinnacle of the Divine Continent. It was not something a small power like the Asura Palace could ever compare with.

"Over the years, the Great Leiyin Temple has many times sent their men here to invite my master to join them, and they also promised many benefits. However, my master rejected them. He has no interest in joining the Great Leiyin Temple, and he only wants to guard this place because it was the place left behind by my Ancestor Master."

While saying that, Tyrant's eyes fell upon the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus.

"Let's go and check it out."

Jiang Chen said.

"No, master always sends me away whenever he meets with visitors from the Great Leiyin Temple. Even if we go out now, as long as my master doesn't want us to know what they're talking about, we wouldn't be able to hear anything even if we stood right in front of them."

Tyrant shook his head and rejected the suggestion.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He once more felt that Great Master Ran Feng's behavior was strange. The Great Leiyin Temple was the holy land of Buddhism; a supreme existence! So, could they really do something shady? Great Master Ran Feng treated Tyrant like he was his father, and Jiang Chen could feel the extraordinary care and expectations Great Master Ran Feng had for Tyrant. However, when it came to anything related to Ancestor Greenlotus, and the matter between him and the Great Leiyin Temple, Great Master Ran Feng refused to let Tyrant know anything.

Jiang Chen was thinking that there must be a special reason why the Great Leiyin Temple repeatedly came to Greenlotus Mountain to invite Great Master Ran Feng. Otherwise, although a Ninth Grade Minor Saint was precious, the Great Leiyin Temple wouldn't pay so much attention to him, much less repeatedly invite him.

What Tyrant said was correct. With Great Master Ran Feng and the visitor's strength, as long as they didn't want to let anyone hear what they were talking about, Tyrant would hear nothing even if he stood right next to them. However, although Tyrant couldn't hear what they said, it didn't mean that Jiang Chen couldn't. The miraculous abilities brought by the Great Soul Derivation skill were far beyond what anyone could imagine.

Secretly, Jiang Chen circulated the Great Soul Derivation skill and sent out his soul energy. Soundless and undetectable, it covered the entire Greenlotus Mountain. From the feedback of the soul energy, Jiang Chen noticed two monks standing face to face at the peak of the mountain. One of them was Great Master Ran Feng, while the other was a monk wearing a golden kasaya; decorous in appearance, portraying a distinguished image. He also looked to be about as old as Great Master Ran Feng, and his cultivation base was also the same. One could tell he was an eminent monk with just one look.

“Ran Feng, my old friend, it's been quite some time since we've met. You look healthy!”

The visitor teased.

“Yuan Ji, if you're here for a good chat, I'll spread my arms and welcome you sincerely. However, if you're here to advise me to join the Great Leiyin Temple, you should leave now.”

Great Master Ren Feng straightforwardly said.

Great Master Yuan Ji's expression did not change upon hearing those words. It clearly wasn't the first time he had been given the cold-shoulder treatment.

“Ran Feng, you're too stubborn. In the entire Western Region, perhaps you're the only one with the courage to repeatedly reject the Great Leiyin Temple's invitation. I'm here with utmost sincerity.”

Yuan Ji said.

“It's nothing more than offering me a position in the Great Leiyin Temple, a monk will never be interested in that. Let's stop beating around the bush, as it does not fit the true Buddhist nature. I know why you guys from the Great Leiyin Temple repeatedly invite me; you're looking for the Sutra left behind by my master.”

Great Master Ren Feng said.

“Ancestor Greenlotus is the sovereign of Buddhism; the pride of Buddhism, and that Sutra is the most powerful Buddhist Sutra. That seal and the cultivation method of those three major seals, they should all belong to the Great Leiyin Temple. If my old friend Ran Feng could contribute the Sutra and the three major seals, we might be able to relive the glory of Buddhism.”

Yuan Ji said.

“My master is not dead yet, and I have no rights to make any

decision regarding his belongings, let alone the fact that the Sutra is not with me.”

Ran Feng straightforwardly rejected the suggestion.

“Ran Feng, I suggest you give up your hope. Ancestor Greenlotus has become history, just like the Greatest Saint underneath the heavens all those years ago. No one were able to do anything about it. You’ve placed your hopes on that little monk, but something that even the Great Leiyin Temple failed to accomplish, no matter how amazing that little monk’s talent is, I’m afraid he won’t be able to fulfill your dreams.”

Yuan Ji started sounding impatient. For many years, he had truly tasted the stubbornness of Great Master Ran Feng.

“It’s the Greenlotus Mountain’s matters, we don’t need the Great Leiyin Temple to worry for us.”

Great Master Ran Feng’s tone became aggressive. He had been disturbed by Great Master Yuan Ji for many years, and he had started feeling sick of it.

“Ran Feng, I suggest you give it some good thoughts. Rather than cultivating that little monk, why don’t you rely on the Great Leiyin Temple? As long as you can contribute the Sutra to the Great Leiyin Temple, I’m sure Buddhism will rise once more, and it’s highly possible that we’ll have a second Ancestor Greenlotus. If you want Ancestor Greenlotus to see daylight once more, the Great Leiyin Temple is much more dependable than that little monk.”

After saying that, Yuan Ji stepped into the sky and disappeared without a trace.

Chapter 537 - Fire Dragon Seal

Staring at Yuan Ji's disappearing back, Great Master Ran Feng let out a helpless sigh. Of course, he knew that relying on the Great Leiyin Temple was the better choice, but he also knew that the Great Leiyin Temple only wanted the Sutra and those three major seals. Once they received those things, they wouldn't be bothered by Great Master Ran Feng's problems any longer.

Swoosh!

A shadow flickered, and Jiang Chen revealed himself next to Great Master Ran Feng. Without much emotion, he said, "The Great Leiyin Temple only wants this Greenlotus Mountain and that Sutra left behind by Ancestor Greenlotus. However, the Great Leiyin Temple is the supreme holy land of Buddhism, the existence that rules over the Western Region. It will do you no good to reject them too many times. They are determined to get the Sutra and those three major seals, but they're also constrained by the Buddhist teachings, as well as Ancestor Greenlotus's reputation. That's why they keep inviting you. However, this situation won't last much longer."

Jiang Chen's words startled Great Master Ran Feng. With an astonished expression, he stared at Jiang Chen and said, "You, you could hear our conversation?!"

Great Master Ran Feng couldn't suppress his shock. Every time he talked with Yuan Ji, he would seal up his surroundings, making it so that even an Eight Grade Minor Saint would be unable to hear what they were talking about. However, Jiang Chen was just a

mere Fourth Grade Combat King, and he was able to hear what they were talking about clearly. However, when he recalled that Jiang Chen was a man who could attract Heavenly Tribulation, he knew that there must be something mysterious about Jiang Chen.

“I didn’t mean to do it. I hope Great Master won’t blame me.”

From their conversation, Jiang Chen realized that Ancestor Greenlotus might not have ascended at all. The reason why Great Master Ran Feng trained Tyrant and placed so much hope in him was because of Ancestor Greenlotus. However, since Great Master Ran Feng didn’t want to tell them the true story, Jiang Chen wouldn’t ask either. After all, Jiang Chen was still very weak, and once he grew stronger, if Ancestor Greenlotus had really gotten himself into trouble, he wouldn’t just cross his arms and look on.

“Ancestor did leave behind an ancient Buddhist Sutra, as well as three great seals. I’ve taught Tyrant the Fudo Seal, and once he reaches the Combat Emperor realm, I will teach him the other two as well, including that ancient Sutra. However, the Great Leiyin Temple has been vying for the ancient Sutra for a long time, and this really worries me.”

Great Master Ran Feng sighed. He wasn’t angry that Jiang Chen had eavesdropped on their conversation. Truthfully, he would only become happy upon seeing Jiang Chen do amazing things.

Right at this moment, Tyrant and Tan Lang had also come out from the hall and arrived in front of Great Master Ran Feng and Jiang Chen. The two men didn’t say anything, because Tyrant knew his master well. Unless his master wanted to tell him

something, he wouldn't get anything from asking him.

Jiang Chen's eyes landed on Tyrant, and a smile emerged on his face. "Great Master, I do have a plan."

"Oh? Little friend, tell me about it."

Great Master Ran Feng turned to Jiang Chen. In regards to this young man, he dared not underestimate him.

"Why don't you let Tyrant join the Great Leiyin Temple? With this, Tyrant will become a disciple of the Great Leiyin Temple. With the Great Leiyin Temple's status, and taking Ancestor Greenlotus's reputation into account, even if they have ill intentions, they wouldn't act on them in a flagrant manner. Furthermore, there are two benefits for letting Tyrant join the Great Leiyin Temple. First, you're showing them that you haven't turned your back against them. Second, Tyrant would benefit greatly. What do you think?"

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing this, Great Master Ran Feng and Tyrant's eyes lit up. Jiang Chen's plan was indeed a good one. The ancient Sutra and the three great seals were all with Great Master Ran Feng, and as long as he didn't join the Great Leiyin Temple, they wouldn't be able to openly take them from it. Meanwhile, letting Tyrant join the Great Leiyin Temple would show them Great Master Ran Feng's attitude, which would also indirectly shut their mouths. In the future, peace would once more return to Greenlotus Mountain.

“Master, what brother Jiang said is correct. I can go to the Great Leiyin Temple and become a disciple there. After that, I’ll leave the Western Region and continue my training. This is a win-win situation, and it can also let you live in peace.”

Tyrant agreed with Jiang Chen’s suggestion.

“Alright. I’ll bring you to the Great Leiyin Temple tomorrow. With my disciple’s talent, even if you’re at the Great Leiyin Temple, you won’t be weaker than any of their geniuses.”

Great Master Ren Feng nodded his head.

After that, Jiang Chen flipped his palm, revealing three pills. When the pills were revealed, Greenlotus Mountain was instantly filled with a strong fragrance of herbs. The three pills immediately attracted the eyes of Great Master Ran Feng, Tyrant and Tan Lang. The pills were emanating a pure Yang aura, and shadows of dragon and lightning strikes could be seen flickering within them, as if the pills were alive.

“What?! Three more Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills?”

Great Master Ran Feng was the first one to cry out in shock. Previously, he had seen Jiang Chen take out one Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, and that alone struck him with great astonishment. But now, Jiang Chen had taken out three more of them. He felt as if the world he knew had been turned upside down. Damn it, since when could Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon

Pills be produced in mass quantity?!

“When I was facing Heavenly Tribulation, I concocted a few of these pills. I only have a limited quantity, so here are three of them; one for each of you.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen sent the pills toward the three men. Without hesitating, they quickly picked up the pill. Upon holding it, they immediately felt a scorching hot sensation coming from the pill. Pure energy threads squeezed through their palms and entered their bodies. It was a refreshing feeling.

“Little friend, this treasure is too precious, I can’t take it.”

Great Master Ran Feng was somewhat excited. Being able to personally witness and hold a pill like this, even a Ninth Grade Minor Saint would be unable to contain his excitement.

“Great Master, please don’t refuse it. Since I’m willing to give it to you, it means that I’m not treating you like an outside. Although the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill is a precious pill, every individual can only consume one pill throughout his entire life, as consuming a second one will bring no effects at all, and would be wasted. I previously consumed one, so I’ll have to give the remaining pills to other people. If Great Master can received help from this pill, I’m sure breaking through to the Great Saint realm will no longer be a problem. At that point of time, the Great Leiyin Temple will have to think twice before doing anything to you.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

Great Master Ran Feng felt like he had a hard time breathing normally. What Jiang Chen said was right, he had been stuck at the Ninth Grade Minor Saint realm for a very long time. With his talent, perhaps he would have no chance of breaking through to the Great Saint Realm for the rest of his life. However, with the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, his constitution would improve tremendously, and he would sooner or later be able to break through to the Great Saint realm. The Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was a peerless pill, and it had unimaginable effects to cultivators in any realm, including the Great Saint realm.

If Great Master Ran Feng managed to break through to the Great Saint realm, the Great Leiyin Temple would be cautious of him, and they would have to think twice before trying anything against him.

“Little friend, thank you for giving me this pill. I will engrave your kindness in my heart forever.”

Great Master Ran Feng said with utmost sincerity. Although Jiang Chen had told them that the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills could only be consumed once per lifetime, and that that was the reason why he gave them his remaining pills, even an idiot could tell that what he said was just an excuse. Who would give out such precious pills so simply? Even if he had no use for them, he could still exchange them for many things he might need. Thus, Great Master Ran Feng could only remember Jiang Chen’s kindness in his heart.

For Jiang Chen, one way or another, he had to help the successor

of Ancestor Greenlotus, let alone the fact that he and Tyrant found each other as kindred spirits, and thus became brothers.

“Little Chen, you’re really generous. Since we’re so friendly now, why don’t you shave your head and become a monk as well?”

Tyrant said with a smile.

"Get lost!"

Jiang Chen delivered a powerful kick to Tyrant’s butt, knocking him away. It was a misfortune for Buddhist’s everywhere to know that such a guy was a follower of the Buddhist path.

“Great Master, you guys can consume the pills now, I need to help Big Yellow with his condition. Once everything here is stable, I’ll have to leave.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Little friend, why are you in such a rush?”

Great Master Ren Feng asked.

“There are some things that need to be settled. I’ve been staying low for too long.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his aura. Since he had broken through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, it was time for him to make his comeback. The Liang Province would definitely shake under his feet. Once Jiang Chen returned; there would be no peace. He had to seek revenge for Big Yellow, and he had to retrieve Big Yellow's broken sword.

After that, Great Master Ran Feng, Tyrant and Tan Lang went straight into secluded cultivation, and began absorbing the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. After Great Master Ran Feng consumed the pill, he would soon be able to break through to the Great Saint realm. At that point of time, Buddhism would have one more Great Saint. As for Tyrant, he had previously absorbed the sarira, and now, with the absorption of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, his constitution would reach new heights. With that, he would break through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm, or perhaps even the peak of the Sixth Grade. At that point of time, he would be able to kill Seventh Grade Combat Kings.

As for Tan Lang, after having his body strengthened by the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, his constitution would experience a tremendous transformation. He could already be considered a genius, and at that point of time, not only would he fully recover, his cultivation base would improve significantly as well.

While the three men were in secluded cultivation, Jiang Chen also kept himself busy. Using his Yuan energy, helped Big Yellow recuperate. After that, he simply placed Big Yellow into his Qi Sea.

“Big Yellow, I'll definitely make you wake up as soon as possible. I'm going to bring a storm to the Liang Province, and fight all

those powerful warriors of the Xuan Region. It would be a pity if you're not there with me.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

After that, Jiang Chen calmed his mind down and began focusing on the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal. According to the description, in order to cultivate this skill, Jiang Chen would have to find spirits of the Five Elements, only then could he master the skill. However, spirits of the Five Elements were extremely hard to find, and he might not be able to find them all even if he searched the entire Saint Origin realm.

Of course, even if he couldn't find spirits of the Five Elements, he could also use other objects containing one of the five elements as replacement. The cultivation of the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal by itself was a process of gradual transformations.

The first seal Jiang Chen wanted to cultivate was the Fire Dragon Seal. This was because he possessed the Fire Spirit of the Five Elements. The True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame, both of them were kings of fire. The combination of the two flames was more than enough for Jiang Chen to cultivate the Fire Dragon Seal to its peak level.

Jiang Chen circulated the Fire Dragon Seal. Working together with the True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame, in an instant, an extremely mysterious looking Fire Dragon made its debut. The body of this Fire Dragon quickly became bigger, and it eventually transformed into a huge Fire Dragon Seal, looking extremely frightening. Influenced by the Fire Dragon Seal, the

temperature of the entire Greenlotus Mountain shot up significantly.

Chapter 538 - Leaving

Swoosh!

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen left Greenlotus Mountain. The Fire Dragon Seal in his hand had completely formed up, and it was extremely heavy. A large Fire Dragon could be seen within the seal, and it was as if it would come alive at any time.

Ha!

Jiang Chen shouted as the Fire Dragon Seal left his hand and rammed into a desolate mountain not far from him.

Boom!

The seal that was roughly 30 meters in diameter forcefully rammed into the mountain, instantly shattering it. Even the Greenlotus Mountain was violently shaking. Countless rock fragments shot out in all directions, but were met with a vast ocean of flames, and vanished instantly because of the scorching flames.

The scorching flames soared up into the sky. A mountain had just been destroyed by this seal alone, leaving behind a huge and deep crater on the ground, raging flames dancing violently inside. Half of the mountain had been turned to ash because of the flames, while the other half had shattered into countless fragments that had scattered across the place. The scene was like that of the end of the world; extremely frightening!

Great Master Ran Feng who was in the middle of secluded cultivation suddenly opened his eyes. With a thought, he immediately found out what had just happened, as the image of the entire Greenlotus Mountain appeared in his mind. A look of astonishment appeared on his face.

“Such a powerful Combat Seal! It just leveled a mountain! With the strength of this attack, I think even a Seventh Grade Combat King would be killed on the spot, and it’s capable of taking on Eighth Grade Combat Kings. He is indeed a peerless genius. At the peak of the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, he is able of unleashing an attack with power than can normally only be shown by an Eighth Grade Combat King, what a genius!”

Great Master Ran Feng couldn’t restrain his shock. If Tyrant was a genius, then Jiang Chen was a monster who completely went beyond the boundaries of genius. Since Greenlotus Mountain and Jiang Chen had a friendly relationship now, it made Great Master Ran Feng see a light of hope. Perhaps relying on Jiang Chen was much better than relying on the Great Leiyin Temple.

As for the mountain that Jiang Chen had just destroyed, Great Master Ran Feng wasn’t bothered by it at all. He knew Jiang Chen was cultivating a combat skill. Thus, even if Jiang Chen destroyed all the desolate mountains in this area, he wouldn’t mind at all. All these desolate mountains were there for decoration, and the destruction of them wouldn’t affect the foundations of the Greenlotus Mountain at all.

Hovering high up in the sky, Jiang Chen looked down into the

raging ocean of flames underneath him. He waved his arm, tearing a huge crack in space that sucked all the flames into the void. With that, peace once again returned to Greenlotus Mountain. A faint smile could be seen on Jiang Chen's face; he was very happy with the strength of the Fire Dragon Seal.

“The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal is really frightening, the strength of this Fire Dragon Seal alone can easily match the power of the last step of Azure Dragon's Five Steps, and it will grow even stronger as I continue walking on this path of cultivation. Not only that, the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seals are mutually reinforcing each other, and with this characteristic, I'm sure this skill will become even stronger in the future. It looks like I need to look for things related to the Spirit of the Five Elements, so that I can cultivate the other four seals as well.”

Jiang Chen really liked this Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal. It was such a frightening combat skill, and it was really suitable for someone like him who was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill. It was extremely powerful. After Jiang Chen broke through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, he became able to perfectly unleash the last step of the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. However, the Azure Dragon's Five Steps was only an offensive combat skill, but on the other side, not only did the Fire Dragon Seal come with a lot of power, it also came with the ability of elemental restraint. It was very simple, if an enemy was cultivating a water or ice elemental skill fought with Jiang Chen, the Fire Dragon Soul would be able to greatly restrain his enemy.

Not only this, the Fire Dragon Seal was also great against all devils, as devils leaned more toward the Yin side. Hence, they would fear someone like Jiang Chen who possessed the purest

Yang energy. This was also the reason why Buddhists were rivals of all devils. All Buddhist skills possessed pure Yang characteristics; the existence hated the most by devils.

Most importantly, the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seals was not just a simple combat skill, cultivating it would also bring tremendous benefits to Jiang Chen. In order to cultivate this skill to perfection, he would have to find genuine spirits of the Five Elements; the most frightening ones of the Five Elements under the heavens. Imaginable, if Jiang Chen really absorbed all of them; what level would he really achieve?

What were Spirits of the Five Elements? Heaven and Earth's Dark Gold, Tree of Life, Heaven and Earth's True Water, World's True Earth. As for the fire element, Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame were the kings of all flames, hence, they could be considered as Spirits of Flame. The other four Elemental Spirits would be Jiang Chen's targets from now on. However, it was destined for this to take a lot of time, as these spirits were extremely rare and hard to find. No one knew where they existed. He could only depend on his own luck.

For the time after that, Jiang Chen didn't continue cultivating, but instead took his time to enjoy the scenery in the Western Region; adjusting his mood and preparing himself for his return to the Xuan Region.

The next day, with the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, Tyrant successfully broke through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm, and managed to reach the peak of the Sixth Grade in one go. He was just one step away from the Seventh Grade. With

his strong foundations that came from the sarira and Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, he could break through to the Seventh Grade Combat King realm at any time.

As planned, Great Master Ran Feng brought Tyrant to the Great Leiyin Temple. Jiang Chen didn't follow them, as he wasn't interested in the Great Leiyin Temple at the moment. Tan Lang hadn't come out of secluded cultivation yet. His condition was pretty bad, so it wouldn't be an easy task for him to fully recover, even with the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. It would take him at least three days to absorb the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill.

Later that day, Great Master Ran Feng brought Tyrant back from the Great Leiyin Temple. Both of them wore smiles.

"Great Master, how was it?"

Jiang Chen asked. Although Great Master Ran Feng had yet to break through to the Great Saint realm after absorbing the pill, his transformation was obvious. He seemed full of vigor right now, and if he kept his momentum going, he would sooner or later break through.

"It's just as Little Chen said. In regards to my master taking the initiative to visit them, the Great Leiyin Temple expressed great surprise. Even their Great Saint Buddhist came out to welcome us. I'm not a disciple of the Great Leiyin Temple, but we have a deal with them. I'm only a disciple in name, and I will temporarily not be cultivating there. In fact, many disciples of the Great Leiyin Temple are training outside the temple, so it's perfectly normal."

Tyrant said.

“This is the best outcome. Once Tan Lang awakens, we’ll return to the Xuan Region.”

Jiang Chen said.

"Alright. This time we must wreak havoc, wakaka..."

Tyrant heartily laughed out. It looked like he was a guy who craved to see the world plunged into chaos. No matter where he went; he wouldn’t settle for peace. In fact, from how he became the strongest Pirate Lord, one could easily tell what kind of person Tyrant was.

“Little friend Jiang Chen, I’ll have no worries if my disciple follows you. Here, take this talisman. I hope it can provide you some aid during a critical moment.”

Great Master Ran Feng took out a golden talisman fully covered with Sanskrit and placed it on top of Jiang Chen’s palm.

“Little Chen, you’re better than me. When I last left this place, master didn’t even give me a hair.”

Tyrant jealously said. However, he knew his master was trying to train him. During this training, he wouldn’t receive any aid from

his master.

"Thank you, Great Master."

Jiang Chen cupped his fist and thanked Great Master Ran Feng. Others might not recognize this talisman, but Jiang Chen could. It was a Source of Combat Strength Talisman, formed from a thread of Great Master Ran Feng's divine sense. This divine sense wasn't an ordinary divine sense, it cost a huge amount of spirit and energy of the cultivator to make. Even a Great Saint would rarely produce such a talisman. Also, the value of this talisman was unimaginable. When it was activated, it would unleash a full strength attack of a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. An attack like this could destroy the entire Asura Palace in one go.

Therefore, Jiang Chen didn't reject the gift. He had too many enemies, and with a life-saving trump card like this, it made him feel more confident. Of course, Jiang Chen wouldn't use this Source of Combat Strength Talisman unless he was at a most critical moment. It was his life-saving trump card, so he would naturally only use it at the most critical moment.

During the next two days, Great Master Ran Feng used Buddhist healing techniques to help treat Tan Lang. Soon, when the third day arrived, Tan Lang had finally fully recovered. Not only was he completely healed, his constitution had experienced a tremendous transformation, and his cultivation had skyrocketed. He was now a Fourth Grade Combat King, the same as Jiang Chen. This was a typical example of a blessing coming disguised as a misfortune.

The current Tan Lang was also very frightening now. After his

constitution transformed, his talent could easily make him the number one genius of the Asura Palace. Even the Great Tycoon Xiao Nanfeng couldn't be compared with him.

"Thank you, brother Jiang. Thank you, Great Master."

Tan Lang bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen and Great Master Ran Feng, expressing his sincerity. Without Jiang Chen and Great Master Ran Feng, he wouldn't have been able to recover in such a short period of time, and would never have been able to find a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill; a heaven-defying pill that allowed him to break through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm.

Late in the evening, outside Greenlotus Mountain, Jiang Chen, Tan Lang and Tyrant were saying their farewells to Great Master Ran Feng.

"Master, we're leaving now. Don't stay locked up on this mountain, when you have free time, go look for those eminent monks of the Great Leiyin Temple and have a chat with them. Don't get yourself killed by the devil called boredom."

Tyrant said.

The old monk glared at Tyrant. Sometime, he felt really speechless when it came to this disciple of his.

"Great Master, we're leaving now."

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Great Master Ran Feng, then turned around and left with Tyrant and Tan Lang. His trip to the Western Region had been fruitful. Not only had his cultivation improved hugely, he had also met the successors of Ancestor Greenlotus.

Chapter 539 – Heavenly Tower

Outside Greenlotus Mountain, three men were flying by in the sky. Filled with mixed emotions, Tan Lang said, “It feels like ages has passed.”

It was rather natural for Tan Lang to have such feelings, and it wasn't an overstatement. The day he was thrown in the Freezing Hell Jail, he believed that his life was gone, and that he had no future other than death in the Freezing Hell Jail. He never expected that he would come to the Western Region, safe and sound.

“Soon, we'll go back to the Liang Province. We have to get back what we've lost. No enemy of me will have a good ending.”

Jiang Chen's words were arrogant and unruly; not taking the Liang Province seriously. No matter how small the Liang Province was, there were still Combat Emperors residing within. If any other Fourth Grade Combat King had spoken those words, people would think that he is joking. However, since it came from Jiang Chen's mouth, Tan Lang and Tyrant had no doubts at all, as they knew how frightening Jiang Chen was. In Jiang Chen's mind, the Liang Province truly did not mean anything. Sooner or later, his name would be heard by the entire Divine Continent.

“It's a pity that Big Yellow is still in a coma. If not for him saving us at the most critical moment, we might all be dead by now.”

Tan Lang said. His heart was filled with gratitude whenever he

thought of Big Yellow.

“Little Chen, you’ve given Big Yellow your blood and a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, he should’ve woken up by now, so why is he still showing no signs of waking up? This is really making me worry.”

Tyrant worriedly said.

“Big Yellow’s condition is different from mine. His condition is largely caused by the backlashes he suffered, that’s why normal healing pills won’t work for him. The only way to wake him up is by awakening his sleeping bloodline. Big Yellow has the bloodline of the Divine Beast Dragon Horse, so we need to find a similar bloodline and use it to wake him up. For example, a unique beast such as the Flaming Stallion. As long as Big Yellow is fed with its blood essence and demon soul, he will awaken. Also, reawakening his bloodline will cause him to be tempered because of the life and death experience, which will cause it to evolve; bringing Big Yellow tremendous benefits.”

Jiang Chen explained. When they were in the Southern Continent, Big Yellow had absorbed the bloodline and demon soul of a Flaming Stallion. Unfortunately, a unique beast like the Flaming Stallion was incredibly rare. What Big Yellow needed right now was a bloodline like that, and it was the only thing capable of waking him up.

"Flaming Stallion."

Tan Lang's eyes flickered, "The Sect Chief of the Invincible Sect owns a ride. It isn't a Flaming Stallion, but a Ferghana Stallion. Will that be of any help to Big Yellow?"

"Yes, of course, it helps! The Ferghana Stallion and Flaming Stallion belongs to the unique Combat Stallion species, they are both extremely rare and unique beasts. The Ferghana Stallion's body is solid crimson, and its bloodline is extremely pure. If Big Yellow is given the blood essence and demon soul of the Ferghana Stallion, he will definitely recover."

A look of surprise appeared on Jiang Chen's face. He knew the solution to helping Big Yellow, but he just couldn't find the suitable items. Now, by knowing about the existence of a Ferghana Stallion, it also meant he had a clear target. For Big Yellow, the benefits brought by a Ferghana Stallion were much better than the benefits brought by a Flaming Stallion. Big Yellow had already absorbed a Flaming Stallion before, so he already had its bloodline in his body. Thus, the effects would be much weaker from absorbing another one. However, if it was a Ferghana Stallion, it would be a completely different story. The pure bloodline of a Ferghana Stallion could definitely help wake up Big Yellow's bloodline, allowing him to stand at the pinnacle.

"Then what are we waiting for? The Invincible Sect isn't a good power either, they were also hunting for us. Once we make our comeback, we'll treat them like we're going to treat the Asura Palace; show no mercy! So what if it's the ride of the Invincible Sect's Sect Chief? We won't be polite!"

Tyrant quickly voiced out his opinion. It looked like there wasn't

anybody or any powers in this world he wouldn't dare offend.

“However, that Ferghana Stallion has never left the Sect Chief, so it'll be difficult for us to find an opportunity to capture it. Also, I heard that it's an Eighth Grade Demon King, or perhaps even a Ninth Grade Demon King. With our overall strength, I don't think it'll be easy for us to capture it.”

Tan Lang said with a frown on his face.

“Don't worry. Since it's my prey, I will definitely capture it sooner or later. After all, Big Yellow is in a stable condition right now.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. For him, the stronger the enemy, the happier he was. He loved challenges. Putting aside his hostile relationship with the Invincible Sect, even if there wasn't anything between them; as long as it was related to Big Yellow's survival, Jiang Chen would capture that Ferghana Stallion no matter what. He would do it for his brother; even if it ended up placing him against the entire world, Jiang Chen wouldn't even frown.

“Since that's the case, are we going back to the Liang Province now?”

Tan Lang asked.

“We're not in a rush. Before we return to the Liang Province, I need to prepare something. I need a huge amount of Heavenly

Yuan Pills. Monk, do you know where we can get a lot of Heavenly Yuan Pills?”

Jiang Chen turned to Tyrant and asked. What he needed now wasn't Spirits of the Five Elements, but pills that could provide him Yuan energy, Heavenly Yuan Pills. His previous breakthroughs had depleted his savings, and he didn't have enough pills to break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. Jiang Chen's was currently at the peak Fourth Grade Combat King realm, and he had just faced Heavenly Tribulation and experienced the third transformation of the Dragon Transformation skill; both making his foundation even stronger. Therefore, as long as he had enough energy from demon souls or other sources, he could break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm at any time. At that point of time, without the support of a huge amount of Heavenly Yuan Pills, the situation would become incredibly awkward. Therefore, he had to stockpile a huge amount of Heavenly Yuan Pills. Not only for breaking through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm, but also for breaking through to the Combat Emperor realm.

“A lot of Heavenly Yuan Pills? I know a famous place in the Western Region called the Heavenly Tower, a big chamber of commerce. Their main business is trading of treasures, and they occasionally hold major scale auctions. If you need a lot of Heavenly Yuan Pills, this Heavenly Tower is definitely the right choice. However, the Heavenly Tower is also one of the major powers of the Western Region, and they are protected by at least a Minor Saint. No one dares to mess around with them. So, if you need a lot of Heavenly Yuan Pills, you'll need to buy them with sufficient treasures.”

Tyrant said.

“Alright, we’ll go to this Heavenly Tower. Once I have the Heavenly Yuan Pills I need, we’ll return to the Xuan Region.”

Jiang Chen said.

"Alright."

Tyrant nodded his head, then began flying in another direction. Although the Western Region was a small region compared to the other major regions, it was still very big. From their current position, it would still take them some time to reach the Heavenly Tower.

“Little Chen, how many Heavenly Yuan Pills do you need? I still have some with me.”

Tyrant asked.

"About ten million."

Jiang Chen casually estimated and gave out a number. It was a conservative estimation. If he wanted to break through to the Combat Emperor realm from the Fourth Grade Combat King realm, this amount was the basic requirement. Jiang Chen didn’t want to waste his time later on searching for Heavenly Yuan Pills, so he wanted to get all he needed from the Heavenly Tower in one go.

"What?!"

Tyrant and Tan Lang simultaneously cried out in shock. Both of them staggered in the air, nearly falling down. Ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills! Not Earth Yuan Pills or Mortal Yuan Pills! A single Heavenly Yuan Pill was equal to 10,000 Earth Yuan Pills! Ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills, was Jiang Chen going to eat them like candy? Even if that was the case, he wouldn't be able to finish them at all!

"It's merely ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills, do you guys really have to be so shocked?"

Jiang Chen speechlessly rolled his eyes.

Merely ten million.

The two men nearly fainted. Did this guy know the true value of ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills? And he even said 'merely'? Was he nuts or what?

"Damn it, I really want to know what kind of treasure you're going to use in exchange for ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills. Don't tell me you still have a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill?"

Tyrant looked at Jiang Chen in shock.

“What a joke, I’ll be courting dead if I take out one of this. Let’s go, I do have some treasures to exchange.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. He did still have two Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, but a pill like this could never be shown to the public, as it might bring him a fatal disaster. No matter how reputable the Heavenly Tower was, when faced with a treasure like the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, no one would be able to suppress their greed.

“Oh right, monk, is this Heavenly Tower run by monks as well?”

Tan Lang curiously asked.

“You idiot, don’t tell me you really think that the Western Region only has monks? The Western Region is famous for Buddhism, but it doesn’t mean that there are only monks here. This is a large region, and if we only had monks here, it would bring huge trouble. There are many big powers established by ordinary humans, there are even kingdoms and dynasties. The Heavenly Tower is just one of them, it’s the power underneath the Heavenly Sect.

Tyrant glared at Tan Lang and explained.

“I did think that there were only monks in the Western Region.”

Tan Lang laughed. If Tyrant hadn’t explained this to him, he really would have thought that there were only Buddhists in the

Western Region. In fact, it wasn't just Tan Lang. Many people believed that the Western Region was a region belonging to Buddhists, and that aside from Buddhists, no other powers existed in this place.

The Heavenly City; the only city existing in the heart of the Western Region! It was a prosperous city, yet also a big and ancient city. The reason why it was called the Heavenly City was solely because of the Heavenly Tower. A big and domineering force could easily change everything.

It was midnight when they arrived in the Heavenly City. But, for a prosperous city like this, there basically wasn't any difference between day and night. Even though it was midnight at the moment, the entire city was bright lit up like it was broad daylight.

“Let's land here and enter the city by foot. Only Combat Emperors are allowed to fly in this place, so we shouldn't get ourselves into unnecessary trouble.”

Tyrant reminded everyone.

Jiang Chen nodded his head and descended from the sky. His main purpose here was to find Heavenly Yuan Pills, and he didn't want to get involved with unnecessary trouble. Also, with his current cultivation, it was rather difficult for him to deal with the four major powers of the Liang Province, let alone this Heavenly Tower.

The three men smoothly entered the city and found the Heavenly

Tower. It was a chamber of commerce covering a large area of land; a tall golden tower in the center of the city, brightly illuminated. Even at this hour of the day, it was still packed with people who came for business.

Chapter 540 - The Miserable Guard

In front of the Heavenly Tower's main entrance, two extremely burly men could be seen standing; one on each side. They were both Combat Soul warriors. Upon seeing Jiang Chen and the other two approaching the entrance, one of the two burly men stretched out his arm and stopped them.

"Come tomorrow if you're here to trade."

The burly man said in an impolite manner. Although he knew that the three people in front of him were Combat Kings, he still behaved arrogantly. This showed how strong the Heavenly Tower's foundation was. In this Heavenly City, no one ever dared to cause trouble; even a Combat Emperor would have to suppress his pride in this place.

"Why can they enter, but I, your father cannot?"

The monk couldn't accept such treatment. He clearly saw other people entering the Heavenly Tower just now, but when it came to their turn, they were asked to come the next day. Wasn't this discrimination?

"They're all distinguished guests of the Heavenly Tower, that's why they can come at any time. But, you're not, so hurry up and leave this place, come back at daytime."

The burly man said in a rude manner.

Tyrant was immediately enraged, and it looked like he was about to give the burly man two slaps. However, he was pulled back by Jiang Chen before he could do anything. This monk knew no control to his strength, and if he killed this man with his slap, they would be in a bad situation.

Jiang Chen strode up to the burly man. He narrowed his eyes which were emitting an ice-cold glow and stared at the man, causing the man to feel a chill running down his back. The man couldn't help but gulp, then move his eyes away as he lost the courage to stare at Jiang Chen.

“Tell your manager that there's a big customer here; ask him to come out and greet us.”

Jiang Chen placed his hands behind his back and portrayed an imposing image.

“Kid, let me warn you; you better not show you arrogance in this place. Open your eyes and look around before you talk. Who are you? You're not worth the time of our manager! What a joke!”

The other guard shouted at Jiang Chen. They had been working as guards of the Heavenly Tower for many years, but they had never seen such an arrogant young man. Asking their manager to welcome him personally? He really had no idea what his own status was.

Clasp!

Right after the burly man's words left his mouth, a strong palm slapped his face, forcing him to spin around three times before coming to a stop. Half of his face instantly became swollen.

"You... you dare slap me?"

The burly man pointed his finger at Jiang Chen and said in a furious manner. Outrageous, this was completely insane! Who gave this young man the audacity to slap a guard of the Heavenly Tower?! This was ridiculous! This young man was done for, there was no way he could leave the Heavenly Tower alive today!

Clasp!

Jiang Chen replied with yet another slap. The two slaps turned his face into a pig's face. This was the result of Jiang Chen showing mercy. Otherwise, he could have easily destroyed this burly man's head with a single slap.

"What an insect! Fuck!"

Tyrant strode over while cursing, then delivered a powerful kick to the guard's stomach, sending him flying away. The burly man felt extremely depressed. Not only had he been slapped twice, he now had to withstand a kick as well. These two guys were simply lawless, as they the courage to beat up someone at the entrance of the Heavenly Tower.

Tan Lang shook his head and laughed. This monk was truly amazing, he didn't look like an eminent monk at all, but instead a hooligan wearing a kasaya.

The other burly man had been frightened by Jiang Chen's gaze, and after witnessing his partner's face turning into a pig's face, he was so scared that he didn't even have the courage to speak. He could only clench his jaw tightly in anger. Working for the Heavenly Tower had always been something he was proud about, but now someone actually beat up the Heavenly Tower's people. This was simply an act of not showing any respect to the Heavenly Tower.

"Hand this thing to your manager, let him come here and welcome us at once. We'll only wait for three minutes, if he doesn't show himself by then, we'll leave after that."

Jiang Chen casually waved his arm, tossing a small jade bottle over. It was golden jade bottle emitting a faint golden light. The burly man grabbed the bottle. Upon holding it, he found out that it was really heavy, and he could sense threads of pure Yang energy coming out from it. It looked like there was a really valuable treasure inside the bottle.

"You,- you guys wait here."

After saying that, the burly man turned around and entered the Heavenly Tower, not forgetting to murmur, "Damn it, how dare you beat a man of the Heavenly Tower?! I'll tell the manager about this, he will chop you all into pieces for sure!"

On the Heavenly Tower's top floor, inside a spacious meeting hall, an old man in a gray robe was sitting comfortably in a rattan chair. He was holding a cup of hot tea in his hand; looking relaxed.

He was one of the Heavenly Tower's managers, and could only be considered a lowest rank manager. He was a Fifth Grade Combat King, not someone who could easily be offended.

Right at this moment, the burly man came into the meeting hall in a flurried manner.

“Why do you look so panicked? Don't you know the rules? Is this a place you can come into?!”

The old man scolded the burly man.

“Manager Liu, there are three lunatics at our entrance. They've beaten the other guard, and even asked you to welcome them personally.”

The burly man explained what happened at the entrance to the old man.

“Hmph! What a bunch of reckless rascals; how dare they act lawlessly in the Heavenly Tower, do they not know what this place is?!”

Manager Liu coldly harrumphed with an angry expression on his face. Although the guards weren't important personnel, they still belonged to the Heavenly Tower. So, having their guards beaten was like having the Heavenly Tower's face beaten.

"That kid also asked me to show you this. He said if you don't personally greet him within three minutes, he'll leave right away."

The burly man handed the jade bottle to manager Liu. When manager Liu opened up the jade bottle, he instantly sensed a pure Yang energy leaking out from it. Without hesitating, he sent out his divine sense. Upon realizing what was contained inside the jade bottle, his expression changed dramatically. He stood up from his chair immediately and asked the burly man with a loud voice, "Where is this man?!"

"He is still at the entrance."

The burly man was startled. He never expected to see Manager Liu react in such a way. Could the contents within the jade bottle be something extremely valuable?

Indeed, it was a priceless treasure. What was contained within the jade bottle was a drop of genuine Nine Solar Holy Water. This Nine Solar Holy Water was a rare treasure; a true holy object underneath the heavens. Just a single drop was more than enough to strength a person's constitution. This, describing it as a peerless treasure was natural and right.

Swoosh!

Right after the burly man finished speaking, Manager Liu vanished from where he was. The burly man shuddered, realizing that he might run into huge trouble as he had offended someone he shouldn't have. He was well aware of what kind of person Manager Liu was, and someone who could make him react like this must be someone with an uncommon background.

Outside the Heavenly Tower, Jiang Chen stood leisurely with a confident expression on his face. As long as the people in the Heavenly Tower weren't idiots, they would definitely send someone to greet him upon seeing the Nine Solar Holy Water. If the Heavenly Tower rejected this offer, there would still be plenty of people who would want to do business with Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen was well aware of how precious Nine Solar Holy Water was. But for him, it was nothing. Back in the days, with just a broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, the Nangong Family was able to produce a lot of Nine Solar Holy Water. Now, Jiang Chen possessed three parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and he could easily draw out any amount of Nine Solar Holy Water he wanted.

“Little Chen, what is the thing you gave them? Will it work?”

Tyrant whispered.

“Don't worry, nothing works better than this.”

Jiang Chen said with utmost confidence.

Tyrant and Tan Lang were still in doubt. They had beaten someone here, and if Jiang Chen couldn't take out a treasure the Heavenly Tower would be interested in, they would be in trouble.

Not long after that, a figure suddenly appeared outside the entrance in a ghostly manner. It was Manager Liu.

“Manager Liu, these are the ones who beat me!”

The pig faced guard looked at Manager Liu like he was looking at his savior. Without hesitating, he pointed his finger at Jiang Chen.

"Get lost!"

Without saying anything else, Manager Liu simply delivered another slap to the guard's face. The guard let out a miserable shriek as he was thrown onto the ground; his two front teeth being broken by the slap. He felt really depressed now, as he thought his savior had arrived, but instead, the savior had teamed up with the enemy to slap him another time. He felt like killing himself right now.

Manager Liu moved his glance over to Jiang Chen. After seeing that Jiang Chen was a Fourth Grade Combat King, he cupped his fist and said, “My name is Liu Hong, a junior manager of this place. Young master, please follow me.”

A Fourth Grade Combat King, even if he was a young Fourth

Grade Combat King genius, the Heavenly Tower would pay no attention to him. However, there was no way the Heavenly Tower would pay no attention to Nine Solar Holy Water. The Heavenly Tower was in for business, and a big trade like this was something they dreamt of.

"En."

Jiang Chen placed both hands behind his back and walked into the Heavenly Tower in an imposing manner. Tyrant and Tan Lang looked at each other, and couldn't help but give Jiang Chen a big thumbs up. This guy was really amazing; he could even alert the manager of the Heavenly Tower, causing him to come out and welcome him personally.

"Both of you, please follow me too."

Li Hong made a welcoming gesture to Tyrant and Tan Lang as well. When his eyes landed on Tyrant's face, he couldn't help but feel startled for a brief moment. He could tell with just one look that although this monk was really young, he was already a Sixth Grade Combat King. Throughout the entire Western Region, perhaps only the Great Leiyin Temple could cultivate such a genius. Thus, he didn't dare show any neglect.

Following Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Tan Lang entered the Heavenly Tower, and they immediately bumped into the guard who passed on the message earlier.

"Guard the entrance properly! You better sharpen your

judgment!"

Liu Hong scolded the burly man. The burly man instantly broke into a cold sweat, blaming himself for his misjudgment. He was just wondering what kind of treasure was inside that jade bottle.

"Little Chen, stop making us guess. What kind of treasure was in that jade bottle?"

Tyrant couldn't restrain his curiosity any longer.

"A drop of Nine Solar Holy Water."

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulder and answered.

Tyrant and Tan Lang exchanged glances once more. No wonder the Heavenly Tower treated them so well. It was obvious that the Heavenly Tower had a huge demand for Nine Solar Holy Water. In regards to why Jiang Chen could take out Nine Solar Holy Water, both men should feel really surprised. However, they seemed calm, not surprised at all. After all, Jiang Chen was able to take Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, so taking out Nine Solar Holy Water didn't mean much.

Chapter 541 - Two Senior Managers

The Heavenly Tower's main hall was splendidly decorated and looked magnificent. Two sweet looking girls wearing revealing outfits had been waiting at the entrance of the main hall. When they saw Manager Liu bringing Jiang Chen and the other two men over, they quickly bowed down. This was treatment that only a distinguished guest could enjoy.

Of course, Jiang Chen couldn't be interested in girls like these. He simply walked away after looking at them once. Although he didn't show any interest in these girls, it didn't mean that others were like him.

“Aiyo! You're pretty good looking, little girl! If you can make me happy, I'll reward you handsomely!”

The monk stared at one of the girl's chest with his lustful eyes, not forgetting to take the opportunity to stroke her silky smooth face.

Damn you! Jiang Chen rolled his eyes on the spot. This too shameful, if the monk hadn't followed him in here, he would definitely tell others that he didn't know this monk. No matter what, he had to pretend he didn't know this monk. At least, he wasn't a goof friend of this lustful monk.

Fuck! This place is the Western Region; the heart of Buddhism! You're wearing a kasaya and a string of Buddhist beads around your neck, there's even nine scars on your head! Can't you at least

give some face to other Buddhists?! Even if you don't want to give face, you shouldn't work to remove theirs! Even Tan Lang was left speechless. Tan Lang knew that Tyrant was a shameless monk, but he never expected him to be a lustful monk.

The young girl who had her face touched by the monk was startled as well. Apparently, even she didn't expect this. The other two men didn't show any interest in her, but instead, a monk did. Nevertheless, this was a handsome monk.

Manager Liu's face twitched violently. At this very moment, he knew that this monk wasn't any genius from the Great Leiyin Temple, and perhaps he might be a fake monk. How could a Buddhist Monk say such lustful words and touch a girl like this? This was something only a hooligan would do!

In fact, Manager Liu called upon these two girls to serve Jiang Chen and Tan Lang, he never prepared one for the monk. If he knew about this earlier, he would ordered three girls to come here instead.

“Great Master, you're a follower of Buddhism, I never thought you'd be interested in girls.”

Manager Liu said.

“Amitabha. Mister, what you said is rather inaccurate. For us monks, Buddha lives in our hearts. My mentality has long ago reached the pinnacle of Buddhism. Hence, I won't be distracted by these worldly matters.”

The monk said in a serious manner.

Cough...

Jiang Chen coughed a few times, then simply turned his head away from the monk.

“Haha, do whatever one pleases! Great Master, you’re a man with true nature! Why are you both still standing there? Quickly, serve tea to our distinguished guests!”

Manager Liu turned to the two girls and said. After that, he showed a welcoming gesture to Jiang Chen, “Young master, please have a seat.”

Manager Liu was a smart man. As a business man, the most important quality he had was his judgment. Just now when they were at the main entrance, he had seen that this young man in white was the actual leader of this trio, although his cultivation wasn’t as strong as the monk’s.

Jiang Chen accepted the invitation and sat down on a rattan chair, and Tan Lang sat down on the chair beside him. An exquisitely made crystal table was placed between them. Meanwhile, Tyrant was sitting alone opposite of Jiang Chen and Tan Lang, his lustful eyes still lingering on the chest of that young girl.

Both girls flipped their palms. Like a magic trick, they took out an exquisite tea set and placed them on top of the table between Jiang Chen and Tan Lang.

“Young master, this is the Heavenly Tower’s best quality tea. Only our distinguished guests have the privilege of enjoying this.”

Manager Liu said with a smile.

Jiang Chen grabbed the cup of tea and took a sip. The tea’s fragrance followed the liquid into his mouth, making him feel refreshed. It was indeed a good tea. However, before Jiang Chen could gulp down the tea, it all burst out from his mouth because of what Tyrant said.

"Do you have wine here?"

The monk asked in a serious manner.

Pu!

Tan Lang also began coughing. Manager Liu nearly fainted. He once again gave the monk a thorough look. Could this guy really be a monk?

Jiang Chen had an impulse to leave this place immediately, but he still restrained the impulse because of the Heavenly Yuan Pills. This monk was worse than Big Yellow; he was just too cheap.

“Wine and meat passes through the intestines, while Buddha remains in the heart. Drinking tea is too boorish, how can it be compared with the regalness of drinking wine?”

The monk said with a serious expression, as if it was perfectly normal for a monk like him to come to the Heavenly Tower and ask for wine.

“Hurry up, serve the best wine to our Great Master

Manager Liu was considered a straightforward man. He didn't care whether or not this was a real monk, and he didn't care whether or not a monk could drink wine. What he needed to do now was fulfill the request of his distinguished guest; satisfy them.

Like magic, the young girl once again pulled out a crystal jade bottle that contained the Heavenly Tower's best wine, then she handed it over to the monk. The monk wasted no time and immediately opened up the bottle. A strong and fragrant smell instantly sprayed into his face. The monk threw his head back and gulped down a few mouthfuls of wine, making him look like a chivalrous knight; not forgetting to praise the wine loudly afterwards.

Jiang Chen held his forehead with his palm. He couldn't stand this any longer.

“Manager Liu, the reason why I came here is to exchange for some Heavenly Yuan Pills. Can we discuss this?”

Jiang Chen quickly changed the topic to his purpose here. He really didn't want to watch the monk drinking wine.

Hearing this, Liu Hong's eyes instantly lit up. He had been waiting for Jiang Chen to start the conversation. Since this young man could take out a drop of Nine Solar Holy Water, he must have some more with him. A treasure like this was rare even for the Heavenly Tower.

Also, Jiang Chen was looking for Heavenly Yuan Pills, not some rare and precious treasures. In fact, the Heavenly Tower never ran out of Heavenly Yuan Pills. In his mind, exchanging Nine Solar Holy Water for Heavenly Yuan Pills was something only an idiot would do. Of course, Liu Hong would never say that in front of Jiang Chen, unless he first turned into an idiot.

"Heavenly Yuan Pills? No problem, I can take care of that. Oh right, may I know your name?"

Liu Hong asked.

"Jiang Chen."

Jiang Chen told him his name.

"May I know how many drops of Nine Solar Holy Water young master Jiang has? I can make the decision on anything related to Heavenly Yuan Pills."

Liu Hong said. He was only interested in Nine Solar Holy Water now.

“How many Heavenly Restoration Pills can I get for one drop of Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Jiang Chen asked.

Liu Hong pondered for a brief moment, then he continued, “I can tell that young master is a straightforward man. We, the Heavenly Tower does business in a straightforward manner as well. We’ll give 100,000 Heavenly Yuan Pills per drop. What does young master Jiang think about this price?”

Hearing this, Jiang Chen nodded his head and said, “That’s a fair price. I need ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills.”

Nine Solar Holy Water didn’t hold much value for him. Furthermore, the exchange ratio was quite fair.

"What?! Ten million?"

Liu Hong exclaimed, "You really have that much Nine Solar Holy Water?"

Liu Hong never expected Jiang Chen to straightforwardly ask for ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills, which was equal to one hundred

drops of Nine Solar Holy Water. Where did this young man find so many drops? Since when did a precious treasure like the Nine Solar Holy Water become so common?

“I have enough Nine Solar Holy Water. I’m running out of time, so I don’t want to waste more time here. The Nine Solar Holy Water here is enough for ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills.”

Jiang Chen casually pulled out a small pot filled with Nine Solar Holy Water; one hundred drops.

“Damn it! Why does this guy have so much Nine Solar Holy Water! So insane!”

The wine in Tyrant’s mouth nearly burst out. Initially, he thought that Jiang Chen was just joking about needing ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills. He never expected Jiang Chen to actually be serious, and even take out so many drops of Nine Solar Holy Water.

Seeing this huge amount of Nine Solar Holy Water, Liu Hong became extremely agitated. With this amount of Nine Solar Holy Water, the Heavenly Sect would be able to produce more geniuses. However, the price for it was not a small amount, and because he was just a junior manager, he couldn’t make a decision right now.

“Young master Jiang, ten million is a huge sum, and you’re asking for Heavenly Yuan Pills, not Earth Yuan Pills. I need to seek approval from my superiors.”

Liu Hong told Jiang Chen.

“Don’t let me wait for too long, my patience is limited. If the Heavenly Tower doesn’t want this trade, I believe that there are many others who will happily deal with me.”

Jiang Chen said.

"Of course, I won't let young master wait for too long."

After saying that, with a sway of his body, Liu Hong immediately disappeared.

Within the main hall, Jiang Chen was enjoying the tea by himself, while the monk continue drinking his wine and flirting with the young girl. Jiang Chen and Tan Lang both pretended they weren’t close with the monk.

Not long after that, Liu Hong returned to the main hall. Together with him were two old men. Both men were powerful, far beyond Liu Hong. One of them looked slightly fatter; he was wearing luxurious clothes, and was a Ninth Grade Combat King. The other was an old man with a white beard, and there was a ferocious looking scar visible on his face. One would think he was a kind man from the first look, he was an Eighth Grade Combat King. Although he had just broken through to the Eighth Grade Combat King realm recently, he was still a formidable warriors.

“Great Elder, Second Elder, this is young master Jiang Chen.”

Liu Hong continued with introductions, “Young master Jiang, these two are the Great Manager and Second Manager of the Heavenly Tower.”

“I heard that young master Jiang wishes to exchange Nine Solar Holy Water for ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills. May I have a look at the Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Great Manager said with a smile, showing a very friendly expression to Jiang Chen, this was a big customer, so he obviously had to be friendly.

"Of course."

Jiang Chen casually tossed the jade pot toward the Great Manager. Since the Heavenly Tower was able to survive in the Western Region, there shouldn't be any problems with their reputation. Thus, Jiang Chen wasn't afraid they would play some dirty tricks.

Great Manager took the jade pot and opened it up. A strong pure Yang aura instantly emerged, causing the natural Yuan energy in the main hall to instantly become restless.

"This is indeed Nine Solar Holy Water!"

The Second Manager exclaimed. He stared at the Nine Solar Holy Water, a vague greedy expression visible in the bottom of his eyes.

Jiang Chen saw it, and immediately felt disgusted.

“Brother Jiang, can you tell us where you found so much Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Great Manager curiously asked. After all, a treasure like Nine Solar Holy Water was extremely rare, and one could be considered extremely lucky by finding one or two drops. The Heavenly Tower had existed for a long time, and they had obtained Nine Solar Holy Water before, but never this much. Under normal circumstances, whenever they found Nine Solar Holy Water, the Heavenly Tower would send it to the Heavenly Sect at once, and use it to cultivate the geniuses of the Heavenly Sect.

Chapter 542 – Men Who Are Never Content Are Like Snakes Trying To Swallow Elephants

“Why? Do I have to tell you the origin of my treasures if I want to do business with the Heavenly Tower?”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Of course not, I was just simply asking. Here are ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills. Please have a look, brother Jiang.”

While saying that, the Great Manager waved his hand and took out a storage ring, then handed it over to Jiang Chen. With a thought in his mind, Jiang Chen opened up the storage ring and sent his divine sense into it. What he saw was a huge amount of pills that piled up like a small hill; each of them being a 100% effectiveness Heavenly Yuan Pill, and the amount was exactly ten million.

The Heavenly Tower was indeed filthy rich, as they were able to take out ten million Heavenly Restoration Pills without too much trouble. If it was any other ordinary power, they wouldn't be able to achieve this in such a short amount of time.

"It was nice doing business with you. I'll take my leave now."

After saying that, Jiang Chen stood up and walked toward the exit of the main hall.

“Hold on, brother Jiang.”

Upon seeing Jiang Chen above to leave in such a hurry, the Great Manager quickly stopped him.

"Great Manager, is there anything else?"

Jiang Chen turned around and asked.

“I wonder if brother Jiang has any extra Nine Solar Holy Water? You can sell it all to use, I can give you a better price for it.”

Great Manager said.

“No, I don’t. That’s all I had with me. I’m in urgent need of Heavenly Yuan Pills. If I did have any more, I would definitely exchange it for what I need.”

Jiang Chen smiled. What he said was correct. The Nine Solar Holy Water in that jade bottle was all he had. After all, although he could use the Nine Solar Energies to draw out as much Nine Solar Holy Water as he wanted, it would still take him some time to do it. It didn’t mean he had an unlimited supply of Nine Solar Holy Water, and could get it any time he wanted. In fact, after finding the third part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, he had been drawing Nine Solar Holy Water at a constant pace. However, as he had used up quite a lot of it while he was concocting the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills, those 100 drops were all that remained,

and he had exchanged them all for Heavenly Yuan Pills.

Of course, if Jiang Chen still wanted to exchange more Nine Solar Holy Water for Heavenly Yuan Pills, it was rather easy for him to do so. As long as he was given two more days, he could stay in the Heavenly Tower and focus on drawing out Nine Solar Holy Water, then he would be able to get more.

But he obviously couldn't do this, as he didn't want to risk anybody finding out his secret. Furthermore, the greedy looks leaking out from the eyes of these two managers disgusted him, which also gave him a bad impression of this Heavenly Tower.

"Since brother Jiang needs a large amount of Heavenly Yuan Pills, I wonder if brother Jiang has any interest in the Devil Realm?"

The Great Manager changed his topic; a crafty look emerging in his eyes.

"Devil Realm?"

Jiang Chen was startled. When he heard those words, he became lost in memories. The Devil Realm was the home of devils, and it was located right next to the Western Region; an isolated realm by itself. Many years ago, when the devils tried to invade the Divine Continent, they were suppressed by the Buddhists of the Western Region, and Jiang Chen even ventured into this Devil Realm alone, killing many Devil Lords, bringing unimaginable damage to the devils, causing them to completely retreat back to the Devil Realm.

After that, no devil dared invade the Divine Continent again. He never thought he would today hear that name again.

“The Devil Realm is the heart of devils. Those devils are extreme savage and fierce, thus making this an extremely dangerous place. Why did Great Manager mention the Devil Realm?”

Tyrant stood up from his chair and asked.

“Frankly speaking, the disciples of the Heavenly Sect are going to enter this Devil Realm tomorrow in order to train, and the Heavenly Tower will also gather a group of people and send them there. Our Heavenly Tower has business relationships with many devil sects in various regions, so if brother Jiang is interested, you can follow our men; sneak into the Devil Realm and slaughter some devils. You can then sell the [devil souls](#) you’ve found to us, which we’ll buy from you with Heavenly Yuan Pills. We’ll definitely give you a good price.

[TL: Humans cultivating devil arts have devil cores (魔丹) while real devils have devil souls (魔灵)]

Great Manager said.

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up upon hearing this. He was a man who embraced challenges, and there weren’t any places in this world he did not dare venture into.

“Little Chen, this old man speaks the truth. The Heavenly Tower has a lot of businesses, and it goes beyond the boundaries of the Western Region. Although the Heavenly Sect can’t compare with

the Great Leiyin Temple, they are also one of the superpowers in the Western Region. It's very common for geniuses and cultivators of the Western Region to train in the Devil Realm, slaughtering some devils and selling their devil souls in exchange for pills and treasures they need. As for those devil souls, the Heavenly Tower will sell them to Devil path cultivators in other major regions for high prices. In the Divine Continent, there are many superpowers made up from devil path cultivators, and they exist in nearly every single major region. For instance, the Heavenly Devil Palace, although not a superpower, they exist in the Liang Province. The Western Region is the only region without a devil power, as no devil cultivators dare to train in the Western Region. This land is the forbidden land of Buddhism, the place all devil cultivators fear. Therefore, in order to purchase devil souls, those devil clans and devil cultivators have to establish business relationships with conglomerates of the Western Region."

Tyrant explained to Jiang Chen through his divine sense. In fact, Jiang Chen had known about this for a long time. Devil souls were useless for ordinary cultivators. At most, they were used to craft combat weapons. However, for devil path cultivators, they brought significant benefits. Therefore, it was only natural that the Heavenly Tower had relationships with the devil clans. Meanwhile, the Devil Realm was a perfect place for training. In the Western Region, from time to time, disciples of the major powers or ordinary cultivators will group up and venture into the Devil Realm and temper themselves by slaughtering devils.

In regards to this situation, the Great Leiyin Temple had a welcoming attitude. Even the disciples of the Great Leiyin Temple would visit the Devil Realm on a regular basis. After all, devils were natural enemies of the human race.

“Brother Jiang, please consider my suggestion thoroughly.”

Noticing that Jiang Chen was showing interest, the Great Manager tried encouraging him some more.

“Since that’s the case, I don’t mind paying a visit to the Devil Realm.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, agreeing with the suggestion. Even if he returned to the Liang Province now, with his current strength, there was no way he could take on the four major powers. So, paying a visit to the Devil Realm was a rather good choice. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had his own plans as well. It was highly possible that he would be able to break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm in the Devil Realm. Once he had a stronger foundation, he would bring a tremendous storm to the Liang Province. Not only that, he was also interested in devil souls. Of course, he wouldn’t exchange the devil souls with the Heavenly Tower, it would be better if he could find those devil clans and do business with them directly. Perhaps he might be able to use the Heavenly Devil Palace upon returning to the Liang Province.

“Alright. Liu Hong, arrange a premium guest room for brother Jiang at once. He will enter the Devil Realm tomorrow with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect.”

Great Manager was happy, and quickly ordered Liu Hong. However, Liu Hong felt puzzled regarding this development, because he had no idea why Great Manager had suddenly become so happy. Jiang Chen had no more Nine Solar Holy Water, so there was no need for Great Manager to treat him like this. Even if the

Heavenly Tower needed a lot of devil souls, receiving Jiang Chen's help didn't mean they would get a lot of them. How many devils could a Fourth Grade Combat King kill? Let alone those higher level devil soul.

All Liu Hong could do was obey the Great Manager's words. He made a welcoming gesture and said, "This way please, young master Jiang."

"En."

Jiang Chen nodded his head and left the main hall.

"Manager, it's a beautiful day with pleasant surroundings. Why don't you find a girl to discuss life with this monk?"

Tyrant said to Liu Hong. Before he managed to finish speaking, Jiang Chen and Tan Lang had instantly disappeared from his line of sight; hastily distancing themselves from this monk.

"Rest assured, Great Master, I guarantee you'll be satisfied with my arrangements."

Liu Hong chuckled, showing an understanding expression.

After Jiang Chen and his friends left, the Great Manager's face instantly changed. Although a smile still existed on his face, it was now a sinister smile.

“Great Elder, I’m sure that guy has extra Nine Solar Holy Water with him. He’s just a young man, so why does he have so much Nine Solar Holy Water?”

The Second Elder who had a scar on his face said.

“If it was you, would you take out so much Nine Solar Holy Water and exchange it for Heavenly Yuan Pills?”

Great Manager asked.

“Of course not! Nine Solar Holy Water is precious and rare, who would simply take it out like that? Let alone in such huge amounts!”

The Second Manager shook his head.

“However, this man just took out so much Nine Solar Holy Water and exchanged it for ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills. This tells us one thing; Nine Solar Holy Water doesn’t hold much value to him, and he has more of it. Even if he doesn’t have it now, he also knows where to find more of it. That’s why I had to find a way to make him stay behind.”

Great Manager said.

“Nine Solar Holy Water is a true treasure. If we can get it in huge

amounts, it will surely bring unimaginable benefits to the Heavenly Sect. Great Manager, you actually don't have to make him stay behind, we should just capture him and force him to give us all his Nine Solar Holy Water."

The Second Elder said in an extremely sinister manner.

"Bullshit, the Heavenly Tower has a very good reputation, and we never do something like this. If we did that and news leaked out, who would want to do business with us in the future?"

Great Manager scolded.

"Why don't I just go and kill them? No one would know that it was done by us."

The Second Elder moved his hands across his neck, making a killing gesture.

"No, the Heavenly Tower will never do something like this. If the Heavenly Tower's reputation takes a hit, you won't be able to bear the responsibilities."

Great Manager immediately rejected the idea.

"Since that's the case, Great Manager asked him to stay behind, and even invited him to participate in the trip to the Devil Realm. I'm sure you have a plan in mind."

The Second Manager looked at the Great Manager. He had known the Great Manager for long, and he knew he was a smart man. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been given his current position.

“Of course, we won't do this ourselves, we'll let the disciples of the Heavenly Sect do it. Once they're in the Devil Realm, anything that happens there will have nothing to do with the Heavenly Tower. Amongst those who are going to train in the Devil Realm, there are some formidable Combat King geniuses. We'll just let them handle Jiang Chen and his Nine Solar Holy Water.”

A faint smile emerged on the Great Manager's face. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was just a mere Fourth Grade Combat King, nothing to worry about. As long as Jiang Chen venture into the Devil Realm with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, he would end up in the hands of those disciples.

“Brilliant, Great Master's plan is truly amazing. Let our disciples handle this guy, then it will have nothing to do with the Heavenly Tower! At that point of time, not only can we get all the Nine Solar Holy Water this man has, we can also force him to tell us where he got it. This is brilliant!”

The Second Manager's smile became even more sinister.

Chapter 543 - Devil Realm

In regards to visiting the Devil Realm, Tyrant and Tan Lang didn't express any views. Since they had made up their minds to follow Jiang Chen, they began treating Jiang Chen as the mastermind. Tyrant was a fearless guy, and he also had a great interest in the Devil Realm.

Also, even if they returned to the Liang Province now, there was no way they could cause any actual damage to the Asura Palace. Instead, they might have to face life threatening situations. After all, they were still weak. At least, there was still a gap between them and the four major powers of the Liang Province. If they were to face a Combat Emperor, none of them would be any match.

Therefore, not only could they get devil souls by paying a visit to the Devil Realm, it was also an opportunity for them to train themselves. Jiang Chen was confident that he could break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm during this trip. At that point of time, he could easily kill any Eighth Grade Combat Kings, and would also possess the ability to fight against Ninth Grade Combat Kings.

Jiang Chen and his friends had no idea about the Heavenly Tower's evil plot. However, even if they did, Jiang Chen wouldn't be bothered by it. The Heavenly Tower would reap the harvest of their own misdeed, and in the end, Jiang Chen would not be the one to suffer any losses.

The place where Jiang Chen and his friends were staying was an exquisite and serene courtyard. On the surface, the Heavenly

Tower treated their guests quite well.

Early morning the next day, Liu Hong arrived outside the courtyard's entrance.

Right before Liu Hong could knock on the entrance, it opened by itself. Jiang Chen and his friends came out from the courtyard.

"Did you rest well?"

Liu Hong asked with a smile.

"I feel refreshed now, not bad."

Jiang Chen said.

"Young master Jiang, our people have arrived. Let's go and meet them now!"

Liu Hong said.

"Are we going to the Devil Realm straightaway?"

Tyrant asked.

"We'll first join with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, then we'll proceed to the Devil Realm together."

Liu Hong said.

Led by Liu Hong, Jiang Chen and his friends came to a flat square located at the top of the Heavenly Tower. Many people were gathered in this square; at least twenty of them. They were all wearing different clothes, and none of them looked old. The youngest was in his early twenties, was the oldest was some middle aged man in his forties. The only common thing about these people was the arrogance visible on their faces. They were all Combat Kings, so they were qualified to be proud of themselves.

Jiang Chen casually gazed at these people and discovered that the strongest was a Fifth Grade Combat King. They weren't disciples of the Heavenly Sect, but instead came for the Heavenly Tower's mission. They would travel to the Devil Realm together and hunt for devils; earning some devil souls.

These Combat Kings could in fact travel to the Devil Realm by themselves to hunt for devils, but instead, they accepted the Heavenly Tower's mission, which would allow them to travel with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect. With that, although they would have to sell all the devil souls they find to the Heavenly Tower, they would also be able to better guarantee their safety with the help of the disciples from the Heavenly Sect. The Devil Realm was after all an extremely dangerous place, and they could get killed at any time within. Thus, none of them dared neglect their safety.

Noticing the arrival of these three men, the group of people simply gazed at them once then continued with their own matters. The trio had restrained their auras, so no one were able to see their

cultivation levels. However, as the three of them were too young, no one would think that they were some powerful warriors. Thus, they simply just ignored them.

Not long after that, the Great Manager and the Second Manager arrived in the square. With a bright smile on his face, the Great Manager said, “Everyone is here. I wish all of you a safe trip, and I hope you can bring back a large amount of devil souls. Now, the Second Manager will bring you all to join up with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, then you’ll travel into the Devil Realm. I believe that with the protection of these disciples, your safety will be guaranteed.”

After saying that, the Great Manager didn’t forget to smile at Jiang Chen.

"Let's go!"

Contrary to him, the Second Manager who had a scar on his face looked rather ferocious. No matter in terms of appearance of character, it was far more difficult to accept him than the Great Manager.

Wasting no time, the Second Manager flew into the sky. Over 20 Combat Kings leapt into the sky at the same time, following the Second Manager. Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Tan Lang looked at each other, then they also flew into the sky, following the group.

Staring at Jiang Chen’s back, a smile emerged on the Great Manager’s face. Everything was under his control, and he had

arranged everything properly.

This group consisted purely of Combat Kings, so they were all very fast. Under the Second Manager's lead, they arrived at a mountain range in just a few dozen minutes. A group of men could be seen hovering above the mountain range. There were over twenty men in the group, but the auras they emanated was much stronger than the auras of those in Jiang Chen's group. They were all wearing the same white uniforms, the word 'Heavenly' embroidered on their chests. They were all disciples of the Heavenly Sect, and they were all powerful Combat Kings.

“This Heavenly Sect is much stronger than the Asura Palace.”

Tan Lang couldn't help but say.

“Of course, the Heavenly Sect is a sect with a Minor Saint, the Asura Palace has no way of comparing itself to it. They have countless genius disciples at the Combat King realm, and Combat Emperors aren't rare for them either. This training session doesn't include Combat Emperors, so it can only be considered an ordinary training session.”

Tyrant explained. The Heavenly Sect was a major power in the Western Region, while the Asura Palace was only a major power in a small province in the Xuan Region, so the difference between them would obviously be huge.

A man stood at the front of the Heavenly Sect's group. He had a burly body and looked to be in his thirties. He wore a ferocious

expression and he looked like a man who was difficult to get close to. However, he was very strong, not any weaker than the Second Manager. He was an Eighth Grade Combat King.

"Second Manger, are these all the men?"

The young man asked.

"Yes, young mister Qi, these are all the men."

The Second Manager cupped his fist toward the young man; a respectful expression visible on his face. Although he was also an Eighth Grade Combat King, there was still a big gap between him and a genius like this young master Qi. His position in the Heavenly Sect was also below young master Qi's, just like the difference between that fat Ninth Grade Combat King Elder and Xiao Nanfeng in the Asura Palace.

"Perfect! I never thought young master Qi would lead us this time! He's an Eighth Grade Combat King, we won't have to worry about our own safety!"

"You bet! Young master Qi is a famous man amongst the Heavenly Sect disciples, a man possessing a bag full of extremely powerful abilities. Since we're only going to enter the first level of the Devil Realm, as long as lady luck is on our side, with young master Qi's overall strength, we'll be able to sweep across the entire first level without meeting any resistance."

“It was a wise decision to accept the Heavenly Tower’s mission. Traveling with the geniuses of the Heavenly Sect is so much better than traveling on our own.”

Everyone were surprised upon finding out that young master Qi would lead them.

“Everyone listen up, all of you have to treat young master Qi as your leader, and obey all his orders. With that, he can guarantee your safety.”

The Second Manager said to the group. After that, he cupped his fist toward young master Qi once again, then disappeared from the scene.

“All of you, stand behind us.”

A Fifth Grade Combat King of the Heavenly Sect waved his hand at Jiang Chen’s group, acting in an arrogant manner.

It seemed like everyone was already accustomed to this kind of arrogance, as no one seemed to get angry and just followed the orders. Apparently, as this man was a genius of the Heavenly Sect, it would be abnormal if he didn’t behave arrogantly.

Young master Qi took a few steps in the air and arrived in front of Jiang Chen. With a smile on his face, he asked, “Are you Jiang Chen?”

"I am."

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

"The two managers specifically told me to take really good care of you."

Young master Qi narrowed his eyes. Only he knew the true meaning behind his words.

"Thank you for that."

Jiang Chen responded with a smile.

"Damn it, who is this guy? I've never seen him before. Why can he get special treatment from young master Qi?"

"I'm sure he had some under the table connection with them. Didn't you hear? It was the two managers of the Heavenly Tower who made the instruction."

Many people were filled with jealousy and envy.

"Let's go!"

Young master Qi shouted, and then began flying. The other Heavenly Sect disciples followed closely after, and those men who came here for the mission also followed along; no one dared to neglect the order. Jiang Chen and his friends were flying at the back of everyone, and didn't say anything.

"Little Chen, I can feel that young master Qi has some hostility toward you."

Tyrant said to Jiang Chen. Although he looked like a thoughtless man on the outside, he was actually a careful observer. He could feel slight hostility from that young master Qi, and even a hidden killing intent.

"He better not provoke me."

A cold smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face. He basically knew what the root cause of this was. Yesterday, he had spotted the greedy looks in the eyes of the two managers after they saw the Nine Solar Holy Water, causing his impression of the Heavenly Tower to plummet. Judging from what happened just now, it looked like the Heavenly Tower was going to tackle him with this kind of approach.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't scared at all, and he didn't feel like backing off. One way or another, he would visit the Devil Realm. It would be better if this young master Qi didn't come and provoke him, and if he really did do so, Jiang Chen would make sure to make him regret his decision.

No one were talking throughout the journey. After spending nearly half a day flying through the void, the group finally arrived above a desolate valley. This was a desolate place, and they could sense freezing devilish energy hovering in the air.

“The Devil Realm is up ahead. In a man, I’ll open up the spatial barrier that will lead us into the first level of the Devil Realm. Everyone, be extra careful upon entering.”

Young master Qi said.

Aouu!

Right at this moment, a spatial crack suddenly opened up in front of them. A devil fully covered with black scales dashed out from the crack. It was a First Grade Devil King.

However, it was a miserable Devil King, as it was instantly killed by a slap from young master Qi. Its devil soul was dug out afterwards.

“This place is where the Spatial Node connected to the Devil Realm is located. As this place is frequently attacked by devils from the other side, the surrounding space is in a very fragile state. Devils will frequently crawl out from the other side. However, those devils aren’t very strong, and they aren’t able to cause much trouble. They’re all usually killed by humans.”

Tyrant explained.

Tan Lang was the only person who was surprised by the appearance of this devil, whereas all the others still behaved normally. For them who had lived in the Western Region, a scene like this was obviously not anything special. They were going to enter the Devil Realm, and they all felt somewhat nervous at this moment. They were after all about to face ferocious and cruel devils, and there would be more than one of them.

Chapter 544 - First Level

"So weak!"

Young master Qi said in a prideful manner after killing the First Grade Devil King in less than a second. After that, he threw his glance over to the restless spatial barrier in front of him.

“How dare this mere First Grade Devil King show off in front of senior disciple Qi? It was just courting death!”

“Of course it is! Senior disciple Qi is an Eighth Grade Combat King, a man with countless mighty abilities. In the first level of the Devil Realm, he is an invincible existence that’s able to defeat every single Devil King within!”

Those disciples of the Heavenly Sect would never miss any opportunity to flatter their senior disciple Qi. In their minds, young master Qi was the greatest existence. Also, due to his position in the Heavenly Sect, if they could maintain a good relationship with him, their futures in the Heavenly Sect would be bright.

“Damn it, their hypocrisy really makes me sick. Killing a First Grade Devil King is also an easy job for them, but they’re saying it like it’s a very big deal!”

The monk couldn’t hold it in any longer. Although he spoke with

a low voice, everyone here were powerful warriors with incredible abilities, and their hearing was much better than that of ordinary people. Thus, his words were heard clearly by everyone.

“Bald monk, what did you just say? Are you courting death?”

The disciples of the Heavenly Sect were provoked by the monk’s words and yelled out loudly. Meanwhile, a Sixth Grade Combat King disappeared and reappeared in front of Tyrant, looking like he was about to attack.

"Come back here."

Young master Qi shouted in a cold manner, then slowly said, “They are special guests Great Master asked me to take good care of, you shouldn’t be rude to them.”

A smile with unknown meaning appeared on young master Qi’s face. However, Jiang Chen and Tyrant could clearly sense the killing intent from his eyes. Connecting it with the Great and Second Manager’s behavior, the two men seemed to realize something.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant looked at each, both smiling in a cold manner as well. Apparently, this young master Qi was going to kill them in this Devil Realm. However, that would only bring him misfortune.

“Damn it, this monk is such an idiot! How dare he say something

impolite about disciples of the Heavenly Sect? I can tell that many of them are angry.”

“Not only are they angry, I can tell that young master Qi is angry as well. I’m guessing that these three will suffer once we’re in the Devil Realm, especially that monk.”

“Once we’re inside, let’s keep some distance from them. It’ll spare us some trouble.”

The group who came with Jiang Chen from the Heavenly Tower quickly kept distance from Jiang Chen and his friends. The monk simply looking at them with disdain, as he was never interested in this group.

“The first grade devil soul just now can be exchanged for 10 Heavenly Yuan Pills in the Heavenly Tower. The higher the devil soul’s grade, the more Heavenly Yuan Pills you can get. Therefore, once we’re inside the Devil Realm later, do your best to find devil souls. Those will all be worth a lot later on.”

Young master Qi said.

Jiang Chen shook his head. This Heavenly Tower really knew how to do business. If he sold devil souls to other devil clans, one first grade devil soul would be worth at least 100 Heavenly Yuan Pills, but the Heavenly Tower only gave them 10 Heavenly Yuan Pills. Thus, it wasn’t difficult to see how much profit the Heavenly Tower earned from selling devil souls to those devil clans.

However, no one seemed to say anything about that. After all, they took this mission from the Heavenly Tower, thus, they had to accept the conditions set by the Heavenly Tower. They also came here with the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, meaning they were under the protection of these disciples. These people also didn't have the qualifications to trade with people of the devil clans.

No man from any of the devil clans was kindhearted, and many of them were extremely cruel and brutal. One would have to undertake a huge risk just by exchanging treasures with them. With the strength of these men, those from the devil clans might just rob them, as the devil path cultivators were all lawless people. At that point of time, not only would they not get a single Heavenly Yuan Pill, they might even die.

As a result, although they knew the Heavenly Tower was squeezing them for profit, they couldn't do anything about it.

After briefing everyone, young master Qi pulled out a talisman. Under his control, the talisman transformed into a golden sword. With the sword in hand, young master Qi swung it, slicing the space in front of him, causing a large crack in space to be revealed, which shortly afterwards turned into a black gateway.

This talisman was clearly made by a powerful figure of the Heavenly Sect, and was specifically used to open a path to the Devil Realm.

"Let's go!"

Young master Qi shouted, and then entered the gateway, disappearing from sight. After him came the geniuses of the Heavenly Sect. Each entered one by one, following young master Qi into the Devil Realm.

After them came the men from the Heavenly Tower; Jiang Chen and his friends going last. After everyone had entered the gateway, it vanished into thin air.

Aouu!

Upon entering the Devil Realm, ferocious and savage roars instantly entered everyone's ears. The Devil Realm was a place sunlight could not reach, and the air was filled with ice-cold devilish energy, bringing a corrosive effect. No ordinary cultivators would be able to withstand such corrosive devilish energy. If a Divine Core warrior came here by accident, without even being attack by a devil, he would be killed by the harsh environment.

Aouu!

Fighting sounds could be heard in the distance. They should be caused by warriors of other powers who came here before them. These warriors had the same goal as Jiang Chen; they wanted to train here by fighting devils. The high price of devil souls in the Western Region was also one of the reasons why these people were here.

“I'll give each of you a talisman. Once you encounter any

dangerous situation or devils that you can't handle, just crush the talisman, and I'll rush over to save you."

Young master Q waved his hand, taking out a stack of golden talismans. As if these talismans were some sentient beings, they automatically flew into the hands of every single person.

Every seemed agitated as they quickly grabbed the talisman, as if it was a treasure that could save their lives at a most critical moment.

"Thank you, young master Qi!"

"Thank you, senior disciple Qi!"

The guys who accepted the Heavenly Tower's mission and the disciples of the Heavenly Sect quickly expressed their gratitude. Indeed, having the protection of an Eighth Grade Combat King could really guarantee their safety.

Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Tan Lang were also given talismans. However, when Jiang Chen looked at the talisman given to him, he instantly felt something wrong about it. Young master Qi had left his divine sense on the talisman, so that he could find their exact location at any time.

According to logic, this was a measure to ensure everyone's safety, and there was nothing to be said against it. However, when it came to Jiang Chen, it was a completely different story. He hated

the feeling of being watched all the time.

“Alright, let’s move. From now onwards, you can choose to go solo, or work in a group. The mission’s duration is three days. Three days later, you’ll receive a summon from me, and we’ll meet at this place.”

Young master Qi left after saying that.

After that, the disciples of the Heavenly Sect and the rogue cultivators who came here for the mission split into two groups. As the disciples of the Heavenly Sect regarded themselves as superior beings, they simply looked down on the rogue cultivators, and thus wouldn’t move with them.

Although this was only the first level of the Devil Realm, no one dared to lower their vigilance, and no one dared to underestimate those fierce and savage devils. Therefore, most of them chose to move in groups. If they moved alone, the risk would increase significantly, as they might bump into a few devils together, or even a swarm of devils. If that really happened, even if they crushed the talisman given to them, they might die before young master Qi could arrive.

Different groups quickly formed, and they all began flying into different directions. During this process, no one even looked at Jiang Chen. Even if they did, they would look at him with contempt and mockery. No one wanted to team up with Jiang Chen. Firstly, Jiang Chen and his friends looked really young, and they were rogues cultivators, so they couldn’t be strong. Having them in their team might become a huge burden. Secondly, these

three guys had offended young master Qi, so only those with messed up brains would choose to team up with them.

The people quickly disappeared, going on their way to hunt for devils in this first level of the Devil Realm. The emptied place was left with Jiang Chen and his friends.

"Damn it, they're looking down on us!"

Tan Lang couldn't help but curse.

"Grandpa Monk will let them know the consequences of doing that! I have made up my mind, starting from tomorrow, I'll start hunting! I think I'm called the number one Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean, but it seems I never did something that pirates usually do."

A cunning smile emerged on Tyrant's face. It looked like this guy was about to enter his pirate mode.

"That's exactly what I was thinking about doing. However, I think it would be best if we wait until the day after tomorrow. At that point of time, they should have found quite a lot of devil souls, hehe."

Jiang Chen let out a mischievous laughter. Tyrant's idea fit perfectly with his own, and he would never show any mercy when it came to robbing those Heavenly Sect disciples.

Big Yellow was also a big fan of this. Unfortunately, he was now lying inside Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, sleeping. Otherwise, just he and Tyrant alone would definitely wreak havoc in this first level of the Devil Realm.

"Let's go, we shouldn't waste our time. Since we're here, we need to profit from our time spent."

Jiang Chen began flying toward the inner area of the Devil Realm. Tyrant and Tan Lang followed closely after.

"The Devil Realm is divided into three level. We're currently at the first level, and the devils here aren't too strong. In fact, the devil race isn't in a good spot right now. Most of them are hiding on the second and third level, conserving their energy. Once any powerful devils comes to the first level, it will be greatly suppressed and attacked by the Great Leiyin Temple. However, we can't lower our guards. There are many devils in this first level, and there are some extremely powerful ones among them. If we're unlucky enough to bump into a Ninth Grade Devil King, it would be a huge disaster. Of course, the chance of bumping into such a devil is really low. As long as we don't get too close to the border between the first and second level, we normally won't encounter any Ninth Grade Devil Kings. Of course, that's unless our luck is at the bottom of the fortune wheel."

The monk explained the Devil Realm's situation to Jiang Chen and Tan Lang. As a follower of the Buddhist Path, he understood the Devil Realm clearly.

Aouu!

While they were talking, a wild devil's roar could be heard from their front. It was a devil that stood more than 30 meters tall. After it discovered the existence of humans, it looked like it had just found the most delicious food. It immediately leapt toward the group in a ferocious manner.

Chapter 545 - The Monk Never Lies

It was a devil emanating a formidable aura, an existence that was at least a Third Grade Devil King. All devils were cruel and fierce by nature, and since they were in the Devil Realm, which was an environment extremely beneficial to them, a powerful Third Grade Devil King could easily fight an ordinary Fourth Grade Combat King human.

Of course, since it had bumped into Jiang Chen and Tyrant, it was destined for this Third Grade Devil King to face a miserable ending.

"Haha, let me try my new strength first!"

Tan Lang joyfully laughed out. After absorbing the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, not only had he gone through a tremendous transformation, he had also broken through to the Fourth Grade Combat King realm. Therefore, upon meeting their first devil, he was eager to check out his new strength, wanting to evaluate his current strength.

Swoosh!

With incredible speed, Tan Lang arrived in front of the devil in the blink of an eye while unleashing his Fourth Grade Combat King energy. The devil was instantly dumbstruck.

As it had reached the Third Grade Devil King realm, it possessed intelligence that wasn't any less than that of humans. This devil

was not an idiot; it knew it wasn't a match for this human. Although it was able to defeat ordinary Fourth Grade Combat Kings, this young man in front of it was clearly no ordinary Fourth Grade Combat King.

Roar!

The devil opened its mouth and let out a furious roar, spraying Devil Yin energy into Tan Lang's face. After that, it simply turned around and fled.

"Haha, want to run away? It's too late!"

Tan Lang joyfully laughed out. His body was covered in a dazzling golden glow. After being tempered by Heavenly Lightning, and having his constitution modified and improved by the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, his body was now full of pure Yang energy. Hence, he had no fear of the devil energy in this place.

The golden glow that hovered around Tan Lang's body instantly destroyed the devil energy unleashed by the devil. After that, he moved at top speed and caught up with the fleeing devil.

"Die now!"

Tan Lang waved his hand and unleashed a powerful seal. The seal was fully covered with mystical runes, and it carried a tremendous force as it rammed into the devil's head from above.

Boom!

With all its strength, the Third Grade Devil King tried to defend against the seal. However, it was not a match for Tan Lang. It let out a miserable shriek, as half of its body had been badly mutilated by Tan Lang's seal.

A look of satisfaction appeared on Tan Lang's face. He took a step forward, arriving in front of the devil, then punched out; destroying the devil's head. An ice-cold devil soul jumped out from the destroyed head, and was picked up by Tan Lang.

"Haha, brother Tan, you're really amazing!"

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out as he spoke, not forgetting to give Tan Lang a big thumbs up. Judging from how Tan Lang attack just now, it wasn't difficult to tell that he had completely changed.

"Don't tease me, brother Jiang. Take this devil soul, it has no use for me, and I don't need Heavenly Yuan Pills either."

Tan Lang casually tossed the devil soul to Jiang Chen. The devil soul was indeed useless to him. Not only could he not absorb it, he couldn't trade with those people from the devil clans, and most importantly, he didn't need any extra Heavenly Yuan Pills.

After all, not everyone was like Jiang Chen, who needed an astronomical figure of pills for his consumption.

Jiang Chen smiled and stored away the devil soul. It wasn't necessary for him to be courteous with Tan Lang. For others, this devil soul might be useless, but for Jiang Chen, it was completely different. Putting aside the fact that he could exchange it for Heavenly Yuan Pills, he could also absorb it with the Dragon Transformation skill's help.

After that, the trio continued onwards, slaughtering all devils in their path. In their eyes, these devils were just too weak. Throughout the entire journey, no devil could last more than a single strike from Tyrant. The group spent half a day in the first level of the Devil Realm, killing at least a few dozen Devil Kings, the strongest one being a Fifth Grade Devil King. It was a lucrative trip for them.

"Little Chen, our speed of slaughtering devils is too slow, this isn't fun."

Tyrant said.

"Do you have a better idea?"

Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

"The first level of the Devil Realm covers a vast area. The deeper we go, the stronger those devils will be. Furthermore, there are also devil nests where we can find a huge amount of devils. Why don't we go seek out a devil nest?"

The Monk suggested.

A devil nest would usually make people faint out of fear, and usually, visiting those devil nests in the depths of the first level was no different from seeking death.

"I like this idea."

Jiang Chen nodded his head, agreeing with Tyrant's suggestion. Without hesitating, the three men continued their journey, flying deeper into the area at top speed.

"Little Chen, when do you think that young master Qi will do something to us?"

Tyrant curiously asked.

"I'm guessing he'll attack me on the last day, as we can labor for him freely during these few days; finding more devil souls for him. However, I still don't want to be disturbed, as it'll bring no good to our plan. Give me the talisman he gave you."

Jiang Chen said.

Tyrant and Tan Lang took out their talisman and handed them to Jiang Chen.

"What are you trying to do?"

Tyrant asked.

"That young master Qi left his divine sense in the talismans so that he can learn our exact location at any time. I really hate this kind of feeling, so I'll destroy his divine sense now."

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Using his Great Soul Derivation skill, he sent out his soul energy like a razor sharp sword into the talisman, destroying the divine sense within.

At the same time, at another location in the first level of the Devil Realm, young master Qi's body suddenly sway. A look of anger emerged on his face.

"Damn it, that bastard destroyed my divine sense! Humph! Does he really think he can escape from my grasp just by doing that? So naïve and childish! I'll let you live happily for another two days, then I'll teach you a good lesson on the third day!"

Young master Qi said in a sinister manner. Although he no longer knew where Jiang Chen and his friends were, everything was still under his control. As long as he had the intention, he could kill Jiang Chen and his friends at any time.

On the other side, Jiang Chen casually tossed the broken talismans away, then continued their journey toward the deeper areas of the Devil Realm.

Not long after they resumed their journey, they bumped into four men. The four men were all wearing the same uniform; they were all disciples of the Heavenly Sect.

Right when Jiang Chen saw these men, the disciples saw Jiang Chen as well. In an instant, they changed their direction and flew toward Jiang Chen and his friends.

"Stop!"

The leading man said with a cold voice. He was emanating a powerful aura, showing that he was a Fifth Grade Combat King. The other three also had strong auras.

"Damn it, what a small world!"

Tyrant cursed. His mood became really bad upon seeing this guy. This was the guy who tried to attack Tyrant before entering the Devil Realm.

The four men were all grinning as they blocked Jiang Chen's path. With a cold voice, the leading man said, "Bald donkey, being impolite to senior disciple Qi and the rest of our disciples is no different from courting death. Also, you two, do you really think you're distinguished guests of the Heavenly Tower? You have no idea what your own status is! Now, I'll give you all a chance to stay alive. Give me all your devils souls."

Upon hearing his words, Tyrant chuckled. Even Tan Lang was shaking his head, smiling. This guy really wanted to rob the number one Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean? As well as the man who was stronger than the number one Pirate Lord? This was no different from courting death!

“Bald donkey, why are you laughing? Do you think we’re joking?”

One of the disciples pointed his finger at Tyrant’s nose and scolded.

“Since you called me a bald donkey, grandpa monk will rescue your soul from purgatory today!”

After saying that, Tyrant forcefully stretched out his arm, unleashing a golden palm that completely covered the disciple.

The disciple was a Second Grade Combat King. The gap between him and Tyrant was not just small.

With all his strength, the disciple fought back and tried to destroy the huge palm unleashed by Tyrant. However, to his shock, although he was using all his strength, the huge palm was like the strongest cage; unable to be moved!

"Stop it! You daring monk!"

The Fifth Grade Combat King became extremely angry. He never

expected this monk to have the guts to attack a disciple of the Heavenly Sect.

“Buddha once said that it’s better to save one life than to build a seven-story tall pagoda. Releasing your soul from purgatory brings the same meaning. Let me release your soul now.”

With intense killing intent, Tyrant clenched the palm with a tremendous amount of force. A miserable shriek rang through the scene, as the disciple was crushed into a bloody mist, dying on the spot.

"Why did you kill him?"

Jiang Chen glared at Tyrant speechlessly. This guy just didn’t know how to control his strength. No matter what, this disciple was a Second Grade Combat King, so he should have a lot of things worth robbing.

“A monk never lies. Since I said I wanted to rescue his soul from purgatory, I had to do it.”

Tyrant said in a righteous manner.

The three remaining disciples instantly unleashed their auras, preparing themselves to face their enemies. They had underestimated this monk. Initially, they thought this monk would only attack the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, but they never expected him to kill the guy.

"Attack!"

Jiang Chen shouted with a cold voice. With a sway of his body, he charged into the Fifth Grade Combat King, delivering him a powerful punch. At the same time, Tyrant and Tan Lang launched attacks against the other two disciples. The three men were all attacking with the same method; a simple, yet powerful punch.

"How dare you!"

The Fifth Grade Combat King furiously roared out. He threw a punch toward Jiang Chen's fist.

Bam, bam, bam!

Argh, argh, argh!

Three punching sounds were immediately followed by three miserable shrieks. All three Heavenly Sect disciples were knocked back at least 30 meters. Their faces covered with pain. Jiang Chen and his friends had pulled their punches. Otherwise, Jiang Chen could easily turn the Fifth Grade Combat King into powder with just a single punch.

"Impossible, this is absolutely impossible!"

The Fifth Grade Combat King couldn't believe what had just

happened. Apparently, these three guys had fooled them all, as each of them was extremely strong. He was a Fifth Grade Combat King, but when faced with these guys, he didn't even have the chance to fight back.

"Hehe..."

A mischievous smile was visible on Tyrant's face as the trio surrounded the Heavenly Sect disciples.

"Hand over all your belongings. If you dare keep even a single thing, I will kill you in an instant. Don't think I'm joking, and don't think I won't do it just because you're disciples of the Heavenly Sect. I believe you've all seen your friend's ending."

Jiang Chen said in a casual manner as he pointed at the Second Grade Combat King who had been shattered into powder by Tyrant.

Chapter 546 - Seventh Grade Devil Kings

The three disciples of the Heavenly Sect nearly pissed their pants. As they were able to cultivate to their current level, none of them were idiots. At this point of time, even if they were idiots, they also knew that those three men weren't someone that could easily be trifled with, and that the three men had never taken them seriously. That monk had killed one of their disciples just now, and it seemed that killing another three wouldn't mean much either

“You,- you, how daring are you?! All of you came here to complete the Heavenly Tower's mission, but you just killed a disciple of the Heavenly Sect? You're courting death!”

Not willing to accept defeat, the Fifth Grade Combat King used the Heavenly Sect as his weapon to threaten these guys. The path of cultivation was a path full of consumption, and as a Combat King, they required a lot of resources to aid their cultivation. If all their resources were robbed by these men, not only would it be a great loss for them, they would also bring shame to the Heavenly Sect, and would be looked down on by others.

“You, strip of all your clothes. If you say another word, I'll even rob your body parts.”

Jiang Chen pointed his finger at the Fifth Grade Combat King.

Tyrant rolled his eyes, “Amitabha. Don't you think it's a bit much to rob their clothes?”

Although Tyrant said that, his eyes were still examining the Fifth Grade Combat King, murmuring to himself, “Although, it is rather rare to see a Fifth Grade Combat King running around naked.”

The Fifth Grade Combat King’s face turned pale in an instant. He felt like bad luck had truly struck him today, causing him to bump into these two psychotic malefics. If he had to run around naked in this Devil Realm and it came to be known by others, there was no way for him to face anyone in the future, as he would be a laughingstock wherever he went.

“No, please don’t! I’ll give you everything I have!”

The disciple no longer dared to be stubborn. Without hesitating, he quickly took all his belongings out from his Qi Sea. He could always earn back fortune, but once his life was gone, everything would be over.

The other two disciples dared not hesitate and hastily took out all their treasures. Aside from a huge amount of Earth and Heavenly Yuan Pills, there were also some other pills; most of them used to treat wounds. Jiang Chen simply ignored those. There were also some demon souls which Jiang Chen quickly put away. There were also some black devil souls, which were obviously their harvests today. But unfortunately, it was like drawing water with a sieve; not only could they not keep these devil souls, they also lost everything else they had.

There weren’t any cultivation or combat skill in these disciples’ Qi Sea. Of course, even if there were, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be interested at all. After reaching the Combat King realm, one could

easily memorize any cultivation or combat skill with just a scan of their divine sense. Thus, aside from some incredible skills which required one to carefully study them, no one would bring any sort of cultivation or combat skill with them.

Finally, Jiang Chen and his friends strode away without looking back, leaving behind the three gloomy disciples of the Heavenly Sect. Eventually, the Fifth Grade Combat King failed to escape his misfortune, and was stripped naked. He was currently using his Yuan energy to cover his body, waiting for Jiang Chen and his friends to be completely out of sight.

Noticing that Jiang Chen and his friends had finally disappeared from their line of sight, the Fifth Grade Combat King hastily took out another set of clothes and put them on his body. His expression was extremely unsightly, and with a fierce voice, he told the other two disciples, “Listen, if any of you tell anyone what happened just now to another person, I will skin you alive!”

“Rest assured, senior disciple. We’ll definitely keep our mouths shut; we won’t tell anyone about this.”

The two men quickly assured their senior disciple.

“Senior disciple, those three guys are swollen with arrogance. Not only did they rob us, they even killed one of our disciples. Are we really going to let this matter off so easily?”

One of the disciples said.

“Hmph! They are really daring, they actually dare kill a disciple of the Heavenly Sect! Let’s go to senior disciple Qi and tell him about this. With his help, I guarantee they will die without a proper burial ground, and we’ll get back twice what we lost!”

The Fifth Grade Combat King said in a sinister manner.

On the other side, Jiang Chen and his friends continued their journey in the first level of the Devil Realm, slaughtering every single devil they found on their way and harvesting their devil souls.

“I think, from now onwards, aside from hunting devils, we should also do something else.”

Tyrant said.

"Do what?"

Tan Lang asked.

“Rob everyone we see!”

Jiang Chen said, a cunning smile visible on his face.

“Kindred spirits!”

Tyrant gave Jiang Chen a big thumbs up. He felt that fighting alongside Jiang Chen was something enjoyable, as he could act without any restraint; not bothered by the world's opinion.

"Haha!"

Tan Lang also began laughing. The time he had spent with Jiang Chen was the happiest time in his entire life, and it had also changed how he handled things in his life. In his mind, Jiang Chen was a controversial person; a man who intervened with anything he disliked, and did all things his own way without being restrained by the world's opinions. He was merciless to his enemies, yet treated his friends hundreds of times better than anyone else; he was a man who did things according to his own conscience. Jiang Chen was a man with true courage, always radiating an invisible charm, making it so that those who follow him can't help but feel attracted.

As for the suggestion to rob everyone they came across, Tan Lang didn't see anything wrong with it. This place was a chaotic environment, perhaps even worse than the Chaotic Ocean. Furthermore, since those disciples of the Heavenly Sect were trying to rob them, should they still be kind with them?

"However, I still think we should visit the depths of the Devil Realm first and kill some stronger devils, and only start robbing on the third day. We won't get as much out of it if we begin robbing people now."

Jiang Chen said.

“Since that’s the case, we’ll make anyone who tries to rob us run around completely naked. And on the third day, we’ll make everyone run around naked!”

The Monk said in a serious manner.

Jiang Chen and Tan Lang felt speechless. Was this guy really a monk?

The trio continued flew a few thousand Li further, and the devils they encountered became stronger as well, which eventually brought them pretty good loot. Finally, they arrived in the sky above a serene valley.

“Something isn’t right, the devilish energy in this region is strong, so we should see a lot of devils. So, why can’t I see a single one of them?”

Tan Lang said while furrowing his brows. This was the first time they had encountered such a bizarre situation.

“If my guess is correct, there should be a rather powerful Devil King hiding in this valley, that’s why no other Devil Kings dare stay close to here.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That’s right, I’m sure it’s as you said. We better be extra careful.”

Tyrant nodded his head.

Aouu!

Right after Tyrant finished speaking, a roar loud enough to shake the ground rung through the air. However, it didn’t sound right, as there was another overlapping voice. It was actually two roars! In the following second, two black beams suddenly shot up from the valley and soared in the sky. The large amount of devilish energy transformed into devilish flames and began violently burning in the sky. It looked like space itself was going to be burnt to ashes.

Two enormous creatures revealed themselves. Their bodies were fully covered with black scales, making them look frightening. Judging from their appearance, these two devils stood at least sixty meters tall; so tall they looked like two small hills.

"Seventh Grade Devil Kings."

Two bright beams shot out from Tyrant’s eyes.

“Two Seventh Grade Devil Kings, and they both at the peak of the Seventh Grade. Hehe, monk, looks like it’s time for you to show us your true strength.”

Jiang Chen leisurely smiled. Although they were facing two

Seventh Grade Devil Kings, he still looked calm and relaxed. No signs of nervousness could be found on his face.

“Although Seventh Grade Devil Kings are strong, the Buddhist skill that I cultivate is the natural predator of all devils. So, even though they are peak existences among the Seventh Grade, I’ll still kill them as easily as cutting through butter. However, Little Chen, you’re only a peak Fourth Grade Combat King, can you handle a Seventh Grade Devil King?”

Tyrant was a little worried about Jiang Chen. After all, there was a three grade difference between Jiang Chen and the devils. Tyrant was a Sixth Grade Combat King, so he had no fear of these two Seventh Grade Devil Kings.

“Don’t worry, my suppression toward devils is much greater than your Buddhist skill. We each take one devil, let’s see who kills the target first.”

A strong will to fight burst out from Jiang Chen. In fact, he was quite disappointed that they only bumped into Seventh Grade Devil Kings. He was brimming with Yang energy thanks to the Dragon Transformation skill, while the True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame were also natural predators of devils. Thus, he had a tremendous advantage when faced with any devil. He was confident he could even fight an Eighth Grade Devil King.

No matter what, these two Devil Kings in front of them were also pretty strong. Both of them were peak Seventh Grade Devil Kings, just a single step away from the Eighth Grade. Powerful devils like these usually only existed in the depths of the first level. The

current location of Jiang Chen and friends was somewhere many humans did not dare venture into.

Meanwhile, Tan Lang took the initiative to back off from the battlefield. When faced with a battle like this, he could only be a bystander, as he didn't have enough power to join them.

Aouu!

The two Devil Kings had long ago seen the trio. Otherwise, they wouldn't have shown themselves in front of them. The two devils started moving toward Jiang Chen and Tyrant. Although it looked like they were moving slowly, each of their steps covered a large distance, and every time their feet stomped on the ground, the mountains and valleys in this region would shake violently.

“Being able to fight with existences of such high level, I feel really excited just by thinking about it.”

Tyrant licked his lips as he spoke. He had become a Sixth Grade Combat King not long ago, and he had done so by breaking through many stages continuously. Thus, he was eager to test his combat strength by fighting a powerful enemy. These two Seventh Grade Devil Kings were perfect candidates for him to evaluate himself.

All Devil Kings had strong bodies and ferocious approaches; they were difficult to handle. A team of two peak Seventh Grade Devil Kings, even young master Qi, who was an Eighth Grade Combat King would have to be extra cautious when dealing with them.

After all, he wasn't someone like Jiang Chen or Tyrant, who possessed abilities capable of greatly suppressing these devils.

Boom!

Two golden waves of energy burst out from Jiang Chen and Tyrant's bodies at the same time. Their energy was no weaker than that of the two devils.

The two devils were startled, and as if they had sensed the two humans' provocation, they were immediately angered and let out some deafening roars. In their minds, these two tiny humans should throw themselves onto the group upon meeting these two mighty Devil Kings. However, not only did they not run away, they instead challenged them. This was plain provocation, and these Devil Kings couldn't take it. They wanted to rip these two humans into pieces, and furthermore, they really hate monks.

Chapter 547 - Devil Nest

The humans most hated by all devils were Buddhists. Normally, when a devil saw a human, its first response would be to eat the human. However, once they saw a human monk, it would want to rip him into pieces before eating him. The reasons why devils had fallen into such decay, to the point where they could only hide inside the Devil Realm was mostly because they were being suppressed by Buddhists.

Aouuu!

The two Seventh Grade Devil Kings quickly arrived not far from Jiang Chen and Tyrant. While violently roaring, they unleashed attacks toward Jiang Chen and Tyrant at the same time. A vast amount of devilish energy instantly spread out and weaved into a gigantic web made entirely from devilish energy, shrouding toward them.

"Come!"

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen forcefully punched out. Flames threads could be seen on his fist. The flame contained powerful Yang energy, as it was formed from the True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame merged together; the natural predators of devils. Jiang Chen was greatly interested in these two Devil Kings, as there were two Seventh Grade devil souls. Putting aside how many Heavenly Yuan Pills he could get if he sold them, Jiang Chen would be able to break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm if he absorbed them. Once he became a Fifth Grade Combat King, that young master Qi would no longer be a

threat to him.

Currently, there were 27,500 Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's body, and he only needed another 500 in order to break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. These two Seventh Grade devil souls were more than enough for him to achieve that.

Jiang Chen's fist pierced through the web formed from devilish energies, and the raging flames spread across the air, burning all devilish energy it came into contact with. The devilish energy was like mice seeing a cat coming towards it upon seeing Jiang Chen's flame, and it quickly tried to dodge.

Bam!

Jiang Chen's fist clashed with the Seventh Grade Devil King's gigantic fist. The strength brought by 27,500 Dragon Marks was absolutely terrifying. Even when faced with a peak Seventh Grade Devil King, Jiang Chen showed no signs of inferiority. With this fist alone, which only contained the pure strength of his muscles, he forced the Devil King to take a few steps back. Furthermore, the flame leaking out from his fist had covered the Devil King's fist, causing it to make a sizzling sound as it burned through its skin. No matter how it tried to shake it off, it just kept clinging on tightly.

Aouu!

The Devil King was extremely furious. It quickly circulated the source of its devil energy, finally removing the flame on its fist.

Within its fierce eyes, aside from anger, it also showed some fear as it looked at Jiang Chen. Perhaps it wasn't afraid of Jiang Chen, but rather, afraid of the flame. The flame was too powerful, as it brought a suppressive effect even stronger than the purest Buddhist lights. It seemed to be a weapon that could be used specifically against devils.

On the other side, Tyrant was attacking aggressively. He unleashed the Fudo Seal right when the battle started. The gigantic seal immediately transformed into a Buddha, and rammed into the Devil King with tremendous force. The Devil King let out a miserable cry as its body was sent flying.

As Tyrant was a Sixth Grade Combat King, with the natural suppressive effects of his skills, handling a Seventh Grade Devil King was simply a piece of cake for Tyrant. The Devil King just couldn't defend itself against Tyrant's attack.

However, as all devils were ruthless existences with savage instincts, it immediately charged toward Tyrant with its gigantic body after being knocked away.

“This monk is going to release your soul from purgatory.”

Tyrant unleashed his energy, followed by a dazzling Buddhist aura. He was one again going to release someone's soul from purgatory. The Buddhist light that burst out from his body was pure gold in color, and countless faint Sanskrit could be seen hovering on top of this golden light. All devilish energy would automatically be repelled upon meeting this Buddhist light, as if having seen the most frightening natural predator.

Boom!

Tyrant unleashed the Fudo Seal once again. This seal was one of the three Great Buddhist Seals. However, as Tyrant hadn't completely mastered the essence of this seal, he still couldn't unleash its full powers. The three great seals had long ago been lost, and only Ancestor Greenlotus knew how to use them. The reason why the Great Lei Yin Temple kept inviting Great Master Ran Feng was all because of the Ancient Sutra and the three Great Buddhist Seals.

Although Tyrant had only learned one of the three great seals, that alone gave him incredible combat strength. Imaginable, once he learned the other two seals, the Lion Seal and the Holy Seal, his power would be even greater.

The power of this second Fudo Seal was much greater than the first one, and the Seventh Grade Devil King was completely unable to defend against it. It was sent flying straightaway, and the scales on its body were sent flying all over the place, accompanied by its blood. Tyrant didn't stop there, he once again leapt forward and launched another attack. If he kept fighting like this, it wouldn't take much time before the Devil King was killed by him.

On the other side, upon seeing Tyrant fighting in such a fierce manner and nearly killing the Devil King with just a few attacks, Jiang Chen decided not to waste any more time. He unleashed his aura completely as well. His body was surrounded by numerous illusionary dragons. Dragon cries rang through the air, making him look extremely mystical. Dragon scales began appeared on

both his hands, turning his hands into two dragon claws. After that, a red flame began dancing happily on his palm.

"Today, I'll try my Fire Dragon Seal on you!"

Jiang Chen shouted as he unleashed an enormous Fire Dragon from between his palm, forming it into a huge Fire Dragon Seal which then arrived in front of the Devil King at great speed.

Houuuu!

The roar of a dragon rang throughout the scene. When the Fire Dragon Seal hit the Devil King's body, it once again transformed back into a Fire Dragon. It was a huge Fire Dragon dozens of meters long. It then turned into an ocean of flame; trapping the Devil King right in the center of it.

Aouuu...

The Devil King endlessly roared out painfully as it felt its body being burned by the millions of fire dragons at the same time. It tried blocking the flame with its devilish energy, but since the flame was the natural predator that greatly suppressed devilish energy, the energy was instantly destroyed by the flames upon leaving its body.

The suppressive effects brought by the flame was all because of the elemental differences, but the most frightening part of the Fire Dragon Seal was its mighty offensive power, as it had instantly

destroyed half of the Devil King's body.

"Die!"

Jiang Chen shouted, then waved his hand, unleashing the True Dragon Palm. The palm grabbed hold of the Devil King tightly. In the following second, the Seventh Grade Devil King's skull shattered, and a devil soul was taken out by Jiang Chen.

Tyrant rolled his eyes upon seeing this happen. Previously, he was worried for Jiang Chen, but he never expected to see such a brutal performance from Jiang Chen, as Jiang Chen killed a Seventh Grade Devil King with just one strike. He was dumbstruck by this.

"This damn abnormal... he really is ahead of me."

Tyrant couldn't help but feel slightly depressed. However, the Devil King he was fighting wasn't in any good shape either; it was now like a spent force. Once again, Tyrant waved his arm and unleashed the Fudo Seal. The Devil King could no longer defend itself against it, so its huge body ended up exploding, and its devil soul was taken away by Tyrant.

"Two abnormals!"

Watching the battle from afar, Tan Lang helplessly sighed. He thought he would see a battle of well-matched strength, but never expected it to end too quickly. He could accept Tyrant's result.

After all, Tyrant was a Sixth Grade Combat King, and his abilities greatly suppressed devils, so it wasn't surprising to see him kill a Seventh Grade Devil King. However, Jiang Chen was only a Fourth Grade Combat King!

However, Tan Lang could also tell that the main reason why Jiang Chen and Tyrant could defeat the two Seventh Grade Devil Kings so fast was because their abilities greatly suppressed devils. Especially Jiang Chen; his flames were incredible, as the devil was greatly suppressed by it. According to such suppressive power, Jiang Chen even kill an Eighth Grade Devil King.

If it was any other ordinary human, he would need to at least be a peak Eighth Grade Combat King to kill a Seventh Grade Devil King in such an easy manner.

This was their advantage; the advantage brought by the suppressive effects of the different elements. What could one do? When these devils bumped into Jiang Chen and Tyrant, they were destined to face a miserable ending.

"I haven't had enough fun."

Jiang Chen shook his head.

"Fixing that is simple. Come, let go find some devil nests!"

Tyrant casually tossed his devil soul to Jiang Chen, then strode away toward the deeper area of the Devil Realm.

Jiang Chen smiled as he put away the devil soul. He knew that this thing was useless to both Tan Lang and Tyrant. Therefore, they gave him all the devil souls they found in the devil realm. This was a big fortune; he could absorb the higher grade devil souls, while selling the rest of them for Heavenly Yuan Pills. Both were needed by Jiang Chen.

Later, the trio arrived at the deepest area of the first level. The devilish energy in this place was much denser than any place they had been to before. Even Jiang Chen and Tyrant would have to be extra careful in this place. With their strength, they could still deal with an Eighth Grade Devil King, but if they bumped into a Ninth Grade Devil King, their only option was to flee for their lives.

However, Jiang Chen still kept a trump card for himself. He wanted to challenge the limits of his own combat strength, that's why he hadn't absorbed any devil souls. However, if they really bumped into any irresistible existences, he would absorb the Seventh Grade devil soul in his hand instantly, breaking through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm.

A black hill could be seen not far from them. It was difficult to tell its exact shape from afar, because the entire outer perimeter of this hill was blanketed by a thick layer of devilish energy, making it so that no one could see its original shape.

Aouu...

Roars continuously echoed out from the foot of this hill, sending

chills down the spines of those who heard it.

“If my guess is correct, that’s a devil nest in front of us. Let’s go there and slaughter some devils. Once we’ve gotten ourselves some devil souls, we’ll run away and find another devil nest.”

Tyrant said.

“Why do it like that? Can’t we just focus on one devil nest?”

Tan Lang said.

“You know nothing. If we focus on a single devil nest, it’s highly possible that we’ll attract some powerful devils. At that point of time, if a Ninth Grade Devil King is attracted, there is no way any of us can fight it. Of course, we can still run away from a Ninth Grade Devil King. However, if we’re lucky enough to attract a Devil Emperor, it’ll be the end of our days. Each devil nest is connected to the second level of the Devil Realm, and that place is full of powerful devils. We’re doomed if any of those powerful devils are attracted.”

Tyrant explained.

“What Tyrant said is right, we can’t focus on just one devil nest.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, agreeing with what Tyrant said. With their current overall strength, if a Devil Emperor was attracted to them, they would be killed without question, and

running away would be impossible.

The trio carefully proceeded further, and soon arrived at the inner area of the hill. They saw a devil energy vortex at the foot of the hill, and from time to time, some devils would dash out from the vortex. The vortex was a genuine devil nest, and it could bring forth an endless amount of devils.

Chapter 548 – Eighth Grade Devil King

Swoosh...

The ice cold wind was souging, and the entire place was filled with gruesome devilish energy. The deafening devil roars could be heard from all directions, echoing throughout the entire sky above the valley, making one's hair stand on end. Devils were charging out from the devil nest. Those who came out were mostly Devil Kings, but there was also a small amount of Combat Soul devils. However, when these Combat Soul devils arrived, they immediately distanced themselves from those Devil Kings and ran into the outer area of the first level.

Quietly and stealthily, Jiang Chen and his friends moved closer to the devil nest. They showed no interest in those Combat Soul devils that scurried away. Their target was the frightening Devil Kings. Only the devil souls of those Devil Kings could be sold at a good price. In the Divine Continent, reaching the Combat King realm was the basic requirement for survival, as only a Combat King had room to survive in this land. Even a Combat Emperor couldn't be considered a strong power in this land. This was a magnificent world, a world with extremely dense natural Yuan energy. The Eastern Continent just had no way of comparing.

“There are so many devils here, I've already seen about nine Devil Kings in this place.”

Tan Lang said with a sigh.

“Hehe, let’s kill them all. Devils can multiply really fast, so if we don’t kill more of them, it won’t take long before the devils rise to power once more. Furthermore, when the number of devils reaches a number that can’t be contained by this Devil Realm, they will once again invade human territory. Therefore, we don’t have to feel guilty about killing these guys.”

Tyrant smiled in a malicious manner, revealing his true colors. He didn’t even include his symbolic ‘Amitabha’ in his words.

"Show no mercy, let's kill!"

Jiang Chen shouted, then dashed forward. At the same time, he took out the Heavenly Saint Sword which was now fully covered with a layer of fiery red flames. Impacted by this flame, all devilish energy began backing off.

Aouu!

A Devil King was startled upon seeing a human appear in its line of sight. Obviously, it didn’t expect there to be any humans with the courage to come to the heart of the first level. Shortly afterwards, the Devil King reacted. It immediately charged at Jiang Chen with its tremendous body.

"Die!"

Jiang Chen showed no mercy when he attacked. The scorching flame was dancing violently on the Heavenly Saint Sword as he

swung it toward the Devil King's head.

Puchi!

The Heavenly Saint Sword was extremely frightening, and it had become incredibly powerful after being further refined by Jiang Chen. At its current level, no King Weapon could compare with it. Even if it had to face ordinary Emperor Weapons, it would still be able to match up to their power.

The only flaw was that Jiang Chen had yet to find all parts of its original body. Up until now, he had only found three parts of it, while the remaining four were scarred across different places in the Saint Origin realm. Thus, even though Jiang Chen really wanted to gather all of them, he just had to take it slowly.

The Fourth Grade Devil King was sliced in half by Jiang Chen. Its body was incinerated by the raging flames which had turned into a sea of flames. A devil soul jumped out from its skill and fell into Jiang Chen's palm.

On the other side, two formidable Devil Kings charged at Tyrant at the same time. Tyrant's body was flashing with a dazzling Buddhist aura. Without hesitating, he forcefully struck out his palm toward the two Devil King, unleashing a huge Buddhist palm. Due to the huge gap between their cultivation, the two Devil Kings exploded from Tyrant's palm before they could do anything.

"So weak."

Tyrant was filled with intense killing intent, and he no longer looked like a monk. He attacked fiercely, continuously launching deadly attacks. In the blink of an eye, he killed four Devil Kings. Not willing to be outdone, Jiang Chen also killed four Devil Kings. Tan Lang was slightly weaker than them, but he also killed one Fourth Grade Devil King. This was actually a quite good result, as it wasn't easy for ordinary warriors to kill a Devil King of the same level.

In the blink of an eye, they had killed all the Devil Kings in this valley. However, none of these Devil Kings were overly powerful. The strongest were only Fifth Grade Devil Kings. For Jiang Chen and his friends, none of these devils could pose any real challenge or threat to them.

“There aren't any strong Devil Kings here. If there was an Eighth Grade Devil King here, we brothers could fight hand in hand against it. That would be enjoyable.”

Tyrant said, unsatisfied.

“Let's stay in this devil nest for the time being. From now onwards, we'll kill every single devil coming out from it, not sparing a single one of them. I believe it won't take long before we see a powerful Devil King emerging from the nest.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

After that, the trio entered a triangular formation; tightly surrounding the devil nest. Not to mention those devils with huge

bodies, even a fly wouldn't be able to escape from them.

Buzz...

Soon after, the vortex outside the devil nest began wobbling. Within a split second, more than a dozen devils squeezed out from the devil nest. However, these devils weren't strong, as they were all Combat Soul devils.

Without saying anything, Jiang Chen opened his mouth and spat out a huge fireball. The fireball turned into an ocean of flames, shrouding every single devil. Painful cries instantly rang out, and in the blink of an eye, the devils were all incinerated by the flames, not leaving even ash. Their devil souls had also vanished. Jiang Chen had no interest in Combat Soul devil souls.

“Little Chen, what kind of flame is that? Why is it so strong? It seems like the natural predator of these devils.”

Tyrant couldn't restrain his curiosity, and thus asked. He had seen Jiang Chen's frightening flame earlier, but he didn't have the chance to ask then.

“This is the True Lightning Flame I absorbed during Heavenly Tribulation. It's the purest Yang existence underneath the heavens; the natural predator of all devils. My flame contains a strong suppressive effect. When facing me, these devils can't even use more than half of their true strength.”

Jiang Chen said. The Dragon Transformation skill was his secret, and he didn't want to let anyone know about it, that's why he didn't mentioned the True Dragon Flame. However, as many people knew he had gone through Heavenly Tribulation, there wasn't any need to hide the True Lightning Flame.

“No wonder! You are one heaven-defying guy! Not only did you survive Heavenly Tribulation, you even absorbed the True Lightning Flame! You really make me feel jealous.”

Tyrant said.

“Damn you, a monk should be completely indifferent to worldly temptations, you're just a fake monk!”

Jiang Chen glared at Tyrant.

“Look, I think a big guy has come!”

Tyrant suddenly said. A powerful existence then dashed out from the wobbling vortex. Judging from its aura, this was a Seventh Grade Devil King. Its devil soul was the most valuable.

"Let's attack together!"

Jiang Chen shouted as he swung his Heavenly Saint Sword. At the same time, Tyrant took the Buddhist beads around his neck and threw them onto the Devil King.

Boom!

The pitiful Seventh Grade Devil King could only let out a miserable cry. It didn't have the chance to see its enemy before it was killed. Its huge body was badly mutilated, and its devil soul had been taken away.

"Do you really have to do it like this?"

Tan Lang couldn't help but roll his eyes. This Seventh Grade Devil King was actually weaker than the previous two they met, and either Jiang Chen or Tyrant would be enough to kill it with ease. However, they still attacked together, and not only that, they even attacked with their own King Weapon. They just didn't want to show any mercy.

"It's more enjoyable this way."

Tyrant chuckled.

During the next few hours, the trio continued staying outside the devil nest. No matter what grade of devil poked their head out from the other side of the vortex, they would be instantly killed by the three men. No one could leave this valley alive and flee into the first level of the Devil Realm.

Jiang Chen's harvest was tremendous. Up until now, he had gained a total of 150 Devil King's devil souls, four of them being

from Seventh Grade Devil Kings. If these devil souls were exchanged into Heavenly Yuan Pills, the amount would be unimaginable.

If Jiang Chen personally brought these devil souls and exchanged them with some devil clans, a First Grade devil soul could be exchanged for 100 Heavenly Yuan Pills, while Second Grade devil souls would be twice as much. The higher the grade, the more Heavenly Yuan Pills he would get.

Furthermore, exchanging devil souls for Heavenly Yuan Pills was much better than using Nine Solar Holy Water. This could easily be seen from the situation where he sold Nine Solar Holy Water to the Heavenly Tower. The temptation of Nine Solar Holy Water was too great, even a major sect like the Heavenly Sect was tempted, let alone those devil cultivators.

Therefore, under normal circumstances, it was better not to expose a treasure like the Nine Solar Holy Water to the public.

Swoosh...

An ice-cold wind suddenly blew by as the vortex began wobbling violently. A vast amount of devilish energy burst out from the vortex. Imaginable, the Devil King making its way out must be a frightening existence.

“Little Chen, an Eighth Grade Devil King is coming.”

Tyrant's eyes lit up.

"Let's prepare for battle!"

A look of excitement emerged on Jiang Chen's face. They had spent the last few hours slaughtering devils, and finally, they had managed to attract a powerful one. Eighth Grade Devil Kings weren't easy to deal with, so Jiang Chen and Tyrant planned to attack together. After they killed this Eighth Grade Devil King, they would leave here and search for another devil cave.

A ground shaking roar rang throughout the entire valley. The vortex seemed to have gone berserk as a black beam shot into the sky from the center of the vortex. A nearly 90 meter tall Devil King dashed out from the vortex. Its body was so huge that it looked like a small mountain. It was really ugly, and its face was ferocious enough to send a chill down to the back of nearly all those who could see it.

Upon arriving, the Eighth Grade Devil King immediately locked its eyes onto Jiang Chen and his friends. Its eyes burned with raging fury. It knew that these three damn humans were the culprits, the ones who caused all the problems here. To make things worse, there was actually a monk among them!

The Eighth Grade Devil King fully unleashed its aura, spreading its devilish might throughout the entire place. It had a mouthful of sharp fangs, each being over a meter long, making it look extremely gruesome and frightening. The Eighth Grade Devil King waved both of its palms at the same time, aiming at both Jiang Chen and Tyrant. As for Tan Lang, it seemed that this Devil King

could tell that he was the weakest amongst them, and thus didn't take him seriously. As Tan Lang also knew his limits, he quickly backed off, keeping safe distance from the battle about to take place.

Chapter 549 - Earth Jail Appears Again

An Eighth Grade Devil King was incredibly strong, the devilish energy unleashed from its body had blanketed the entire place, flooding several kilometres with raging devilish flames. The devil's enormous body stood like a small mountain as its two gigantic palms appeared above Jiang Chen and Tyrant at the same time.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant's expression changed immediately. Faced with such an enormous devil, even though they possessed abilities that greatly suppressed devils, and were confident in themselves, they still did not dare show any neglect.

"Fire Dragon Seal!"

"Fudo Seal!"

Jiang Chen and Tyrant both roared out at the same time. A huge Fire Dragon charged out like a real dragon, ramming into the Devil King's palm. Tyrant showed no hesitation either, and countered with the Fudo Seal. This time, both men attacked with everything they had, unleashing attacks a few times stronger than their previous ones.

Boom!

The entire sky was filled with raging flames and glorious Buddhist lights. The two attacks suppressed the Devil King greatly, as they were the natural predators of devils. So, even though it was an Eighth Grade Devil King, it would still have to face elemental

suppression, and thus couldn't fight at full strength. Although Jiang Chen was just a Fourth Grade Combat King, he was able to kill Seventh Grade Devil Kings with ease. Thus, even if he had to face an Eighth Grade Devil King alone, he would have no fear. Tyrant was as strong as him, and he was now a peak Sixth Grade Combat King, so killing a peak Seventh Grade Devil King was also a piece of cake for him. And, with the suppressive effects brought by his Buddhist skills, he possessed the ability to fight equally against an Eighth Grade Devil King by himself.

Currently, by attacking together, Jiang Chen and Tyrant were able to unleash an even greater power. In this first exchange, not only were they not harmed by the Devil King, their attacks instead sent the Devil King a few steps back; causing large craters to appear on the ground.

"This is satisfying!"

Tyrant shouted. His body was emanating a golden light, making him look like a living Buddha. After gaining the upper hand during the first exchange, he turned into a trail of golden light and shot himself in front of the Devil King. Without saying anything, he unleashed another Fudo Seal. As one of the supreme Buddhist seals, it wasn't easy to completely master this seal. Thus, Tyrant wanted to make use of the continuous battles with powerful Devil Kings to cultivate his Fudo Seal, making him master the skill faster and better.

Of course, Jiang Chen didn't hesitate either, and he showed no mercy toward this Eighth Grade Devil King. The mighty Fire Dragon Seal was once again unleashed by him. This was an

extremely formidable combat skill which could be compared with the fifth step of the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. However, in fights against devils, it would no doubt be more effective than the Azure Dragon's Five Steps.

Aouu!

The Eighth Grade Devil King furiously roared out. It repeatedly slammed its chest with both hands, trying to vent the anger stuck in its heart. However, its heart was filled with more shock than anger. In its mind, the humans in front of it was just a Sixth Grade Combat King and a mere Fourth Grade Combat King, and killing them should be as easy as pinching two tiny ants. However, out of its expectations, these two humans who it regarded as two tiny ants were so formidable that it was knocked back by their attacks.

The Eighth Grade Devil King moved. A black devil seal was formed between its palms, and a gruesome skull was seen on top of it. This attack represented brutality and terror; hell and death. Once it was released, it would claim someone's life. Even if an Eighth Grade Combat King had to face this attack, he would either die or be severely injured.

But unfortunately, this Devil King was facing two abnormal monsters today. The Fire Dragon Seal and the Fudo Seal could greatly suppress the devilish elements.

Boom!

The gigantic devil seal and the two seals filled with pure Yang energy collided, producing a tremendous explosion that shook the

entire area. The dense devil energy was blown away by the impact, while the devastating force of collision ripped a huge crack in space, causing ice-cold air to blow out from the void.

Although this Eighth Grade Devil King had attacked with a mighty devil seal, it still wasn't a match for Jiang Chen and Tyrant. These two humans were two abnormal monsters with incredibly powerful foundations. Once again, the Eighth Grade Devil King was knocked back. Many of its hard scales fell off its body, while blood burst out from its wounds.

Aouuuuuu!

The Eighth Grade Devil King went completely berserk. It couldn't believe what had just happened. With its mighty strength, it was actually unable to defeat these two tiny humans. However, what made it really shocked was the attacks unleashed by these humans, as they suppressed it greatly. However, this only strengthened the Devil King's decision to kill both men. Otherwise, they would definitely become a great threat to devils in the future.

The Eighth Grade Devil King was indeed a mighty existence. As it became enraged, the strength of its aura actually increased, and it was much stronger than it previously was. At the same time, a huge Devil Weapon that was nearly 30 meters long appeared in its hand. It was a gruesome Devil Weapon, and it looked extremely sharp. Numerous spikes were erected on the back of this weapon. The devilish energy hovering around the blade turned into some frightening skulls and began flying around.

"What an amazing Devil Weapon."

Jiang Chen couldn't help but praise. Among all King Weapons, the Devil Weapon held by the Devil King in front of them could be considered one of the most supreme weapons, as it was able to provide power that was only weaker than Emperor Weapons.

Weapons had always been a weakness for devils. They didn't know how to craft combat weapons, and it was extremely difficult for them to find themselves a Devil Weapon. Even for those formidable Devil Kings, a King Weapons was a rare commodity. Devils' combat weapons were usually all Natal Devil Weapons belonging to themselves. However, just like a Natal Combat Weapon, Natal Devil Weapons weren't easy to craft either.

If he was able to seize this Devil Weapon and bring it to a devil clan, he had no doubt it would cause a major battle between all Devil Kings of those devil clans.

"Monk, this Devil King is really amazing, it has formed its own Natal Devil Weapon. Looks like the real fight is beginning now."

Jiang Chen took out his Heavenly Saint Sword. This Eighth Grade Devil King was much stronger than he had expected. It looked like they would have to show some more strength if they really wanted to kill it.

"Amitabha!"

Tyrant unhurriedly took down the Buddhist beads hanging around his neck. Under his control, each Buddhist Bead began emanating dazzling golden lights and began growing bigger.

“Wu la ba ha...”

Incomprehensible devil words were spewed out from the mouth of this Eighth Grade Devil King. Although no one understood the devils’ language, they knew what those words mean. It told Jiang Chen and Tyrant to go to hell.

The Eighth Grade Devil King injected all its devil energy into the Devil Weapon, then swung it toward Jiang Chen and Tyrant; tearing a large crack in space as it flew through the air. It was easy to imagine that this strike could easily slice a huge mountain in half.

Jiang Chen’s dark hair was violently fluttering in the strong wind. Although Tyrant didn’t have any hair, the nine circular scars on top of his head were emitting dazzling light. The Heavenly Saint Sword was swung by Jiang Chen, and it wasn’t any weaker than the Devil King’s Devil Weapon. Meanwhile, Tyrant’s Buddhist beads were also showing incredible power. The two King Weapons were charging toward the Devil Weapon before finally colliding.

Boom!

The impact was so incredible that both heaven and earth shook. The entire valley was nearly destroyed as well. The force of this

devastating collision was just too powerful; just the shockwave alone was more than enough to rip an ordinary Combat King apart. Watching the battle from afar, Tan Lang could only shake his head in silence. Although he was also a rare genius, when compared to Jiang Chen and Tyrant, the gap between them was very obvious.

One man was gifted with insane innate abilities, while the other had the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus. The combination of these two could allow them to defeat any enemies that got in their way.

The suppressive effects were too powerful, causing the Eighth Grade Devil King to feel depressed whenever it tried fighting back against the two men. It was greatly suppressed in all aspects, and couldn't fight with all its strength.

After the Devil King took out its mighty Devil Weapon, the duo had once again crushed its attack with their combined might.

Haha...

The two men joyfully laughed out as if they had been injected with stimulants, then launched more attacks at the Eighth Grade Devil King. A chaotic battle took place in this valley; destroying all surrounding mountain peaks, while causing the ground to sink.

The battle continued for another dozen minutes, and was far from ending. Jiang Chen was surprised by this Devil King's strong resistance. Although its body was riddled with injuries, it still

fought as aggressively as before. Together with the mighty power brought by its Devil Weapon, it looked like it would be impossible to kill this Eighth Grade Devil King in a short period of time. Furthermore, if this Eighth Grade Devil King chose to flee, it could definitely escape without being interrupted.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Currently, as long as he absorbed one or two Seventh Grade devil souls, he would break through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. At that point of time, killing this Eighth Grade Devil King would be a piece of cake. However, Jiang Chen had no intention of breaking through now; he wanted to temper himself further.

But Jiang Chen did still have another method he could use; the Earth Jail! The Devil King was now standing on the ground, and the Earth Jail was the perfect technique to launch a surprise attack. As long as he and Tyrant cooperated well, it wouldn't be difficult to kill this Devil King.

"Tyrant, I'll launch a surprise attack later on. Take that opportunity to kill it with a single strike."

Jiang Chen said to Tyrant.

"How are you going to do that?"

Tyrant looked at Jiang Chen and asked. He had no idea what other methods Jiang Chen had, as it wasn't easy to launch a surprise attack against an Eighth Grade Devil King.

"Just wait and see."

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately unleashed the Earth Jail. Incorporeal ripples burst out from the ground, transforming into an invisible jail and covered the Eighth Grade Devil King's entire body in an instant.

Bam!

Caught by surprise, the Devil King was forced to kneel down on the ground. The incorporeal Power of Earth was simply tremendous, even an Eighth Grade Devil King would suffer from it.

Earth Jail was also one of the innate abilities which would become stronger with Jiang Chen.

Tyrant's eyes lit up upon seeing this. He had no idea how Jiang Chen did it, but he wasn't willing to let go of this golden opportunity. Without hesitating, he waved the Buddhist Beads and attacked the Devil King.

Chapter 550 - Robbing Everybody

Bam!

The Buddhist Beads accurately hit the Eighth Grade Devil King's head. As the Devil King was still immersed in the shock brought by the Earth Jail's surprise attack, it didn't put up any defense against Tyrant's sudden attack. It easy to imagine that in such a defenseless situation, even a formidable Ninth Grade Devil King would instantly die from Tyrant's attack, let alone this Eighth Grade Devil King.

Awuuuuuu!

The Eighth Grade Devil King let out a miserable howl. Half of its head had been destroyed by the attack, causing its blood to burst out. However, it was still alive, and it was trying to launch a counterattack. But, Jiang Chen didn't give it the chance to do that. After ambushing the Devil King with the Earth Jail, Jiang Chen dashed toward the Devil King. Before the Eighth Grade Devil King could stand back up, the Heavenly Saint Sword had arrived before its head in a formidable manner.

Puchi!

Without any accidents, the Eighth Grade Devil King met its tragedy. It was sliced in half by Jiang Chen's sword and died on the spot. Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and picked up the devil soul, as well as the Devil Weapon. It was a good item, and it would be a waste if he didn't take it away. It wouldn't be easy to meet

another Devil King that had its own Natal Devil Weapon.

“Little Chen, what combat skill did you use just now? How did you trap that Devil King?”

Tyrant put away his Buddhist Beads and asked Jiang Chen.

“The skill is called Earth Jail. It allows me to launch an ambush using the earth’s energy, trapping the enemy for a short period of time. However, this combat skill has a weakness; it only works when the enemy is standing on the ground. If we’re fighting in the air, it will be completely useless, as the energy of earth won’t be able to reach the enemy’s body.”

Jiang Chen explained without telling Tyrant how he learned the combat skill. After all, the ability to absorb any bloodline underneath the heavens brought by the Dragon Transformation skill was just too amazing and unbelievable; it wasn’t good to let too many people know about it.

"Superb!"

Tyrant gave Jiang Chen a big thumbs up. In his mind, not only was Jiang Chen a man with incredible cultivation base and combat strength, Jiang Chen was also a man who knew all kinds of skills, which made him incredibly difficult to defend against. Becoming an enemy of someone like this was really stupid. Fortunately, they were friends.

“Both of you abnormals are really ferocious, you can even kill an Eighth Grade Devil King.”

Tan Lang walked up to them and said. After personally witnessing the intense battle, he became speechless in regards to these two abnormals. It wasn't difficult to imagine how stupid it was for that young master Qi to try and assault Jiang Chen and Tyrant.

“We need to leave this place now and search for another devil nest. If we continue staying here, we might attract a real powerful devil. It would be a huge problem if we attracted a Ninth Grade Devil King, or even a Devil Emperor.”

Jiang Chen said.

The trio left the place after that. After the intense battle, the once quiet and serene valley had changed completely. It was now completely destroyed, and only the devil nest was still intact.

During the following day, the trio spent all their time visiting different devil nests. They found a total of three devil nests and killed a huge amount of Devil Kings. They also killed another Eighth Grade Devil King. It was a tremendous harvest for them. In just two days, Jiang Chen had found over 300 devil souls, two of them being Eighth Graded devil souls, and eight being Seventh Grade. If they were to exchange them all into Heavenly Yuan Pills, it would be an astronomical figure.

On the third day, the trio left the deeper area of the first level,

and continued visiting different areas.

"Stop!"

Right when the three men were about to fly to their next destination, a loud shot suddenly sounded out from their left. Seven Combat Kings were flying toward them at high speed, and shortly afterwards, they surrounded the trio in a circle.

Judging from the clothes they were wearing, they were all disciples of the Heavenly Sect. The leading man was a Sixth Grade Combat King, same as Tyrant. Expressions of anger and mockery could be seen on their faces. They had never forgotten how Jiang Chen and Tyrant were impolite to them before entering the Devil Realm. Thus, when they saw Jiang Chen and his friends, they quickly came to them.

"I didn't expect to see you still alive and unhurt. Looks like you do have some abilities."

The Sixth Grade Combat King said with a cold smile on his face.

"Mister, can you get out of the way? There is a saying that a good dog never gets in the way, and I can tell that you are all good dogs."

Tyrant said with a serious expression. His words immediately caused Jiang Chen and Tan Lang to chuckle. This monk was truly shameless. The thing was, he always portrayed the look of an eminent Buddhist monk, and however, his words would always

piss off his opponents, something that was not related to Buddhism at all.

“Damn it, senior disciple Huang, this bald donkey says we’re dogs!”

One of the disciples said through his tightly clenched jaw. Senior disciple Huang, who was also a Sixth Grade Combat King glared at that disciple, inwardly scolding him. Everyone could hear the monk’s words, so why did this disciple have to repeat it? Were the words so nice they were worth saying a few more times?

“Bald donkey, you three bastards have offended the Heavenly Sect, and you can only be punished with death. However, today, I will give you all a chance to stay...”

Before senior disciple Huang could finish speaking, Tyrant interrupted, “Lemme guess, as long as we hand over all our treasures and devil souls, you’ll spare our lives?”

Senior disciple Huang was startled for a brief moment before showing a cold smile, “That’s right, you’re really clever.”

“Stop with the nonsense. Hand over all your treasures, and I’ll spare your lives.”

Without any formalities, Jiang Chen pointed his fingers at the noses of the disciples and threatened. His words startled these few disciples. What was going on? They were here to rob, but why did

it seem like they were the ones being robbed instead? Was there anything wrong with this guy's brain? Why did he still have to courage to try and rob them in this situation?

"Bastard! You're courting death!"

Senior disciple Huang was angered.

Seeing the arrogance of these guys, Jiang Chen and Tyrant figured out that the guys they robbed two days ago hadn't told anyone they had been robbed. However, it was understandable, as that guy had even been robbed of his clothes. It would be incredibly shameful if others were to find out about it. It was much better to hide such a shameful incident at the bottom of their hearts.

That was also the reason why these men treated Jiang Chen and his friends as prey. Little did they know, after they appeared, they had actually become the prey of these three men.

In fact, when it was time to leave the Devil Realm, there would often be robberies in this place. After all, those who could survive up until this point of time must have obtained quite a lot of devil souls. Thus, it was the perfect time to rob others.

"You'll soon know whether or not we're courting death."

After saying that, Jiang Chen attacked the Sixth Grade Combat King like a sudden clap of thunder. In an instant, his claws pierced

through the guy's Qi Sea and pulled out all the treasures stored within. At the same time, a destructive force burst out from Jiang Chen's dragon claw, shattering that senior disciple Huang's Qi Sea.

“Argh... you destroyed my Qi Sea! Heavens, arghh...!”

The senior disciple Huang howled out like his heart had just been torn apart. For a formidable cultivator, the destruction of one's Qi Sea was the same as the destruction of his entire life. It was a fate that no cultivator could accept. Senior disciple Huang was instantly struck with absolute despair. His entire life was now gone. He couldn't believe that this young man in white was so formidable. After all, he was a Sixth Grade Combat King, but this young man had destroyed him with just a single strike, and he didn't even have the chance to fight back. This was truly shocking.

“You should be glad I only destroyed your Qi Sea and didn't kill you.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold voice. He never showed any mercy to his enemies. These disciples of the Heavenly Sect were intending to kill him, and even if they didn't do it right now, they also wanted to rob all his belongings and humiliate him. Therefore, Jiang Chen would never show any mercy to someone like this.

At the moment, the miserable cries and howls of senior disciple Huang filled the entire area. The faces of the other disciples from the Heavenly Sect turned pale, and they lost all their superior airs. Each of them were staring at Jiang Chen as if he was a ghost, their minds filled with fear.

Senior disciple Huang's miserable situation sent a chill down the spines of these disciples. It was extremely frightening! A formidable Sixth Grade Combat King had just been crippled; just like that!

"What are you waiting for? Quickly hand over all your belongings, otherwise, you'll face the same ending as this guy."

Tyrant threatened. He had completely transformed into a robber. Even the enemy couldn't get used to such a sudden switch in roles. But, no matter what, these disciples of the Heavenly Sect weren't idiots. They could still judge the situation they were faced with now. The two guys in front of them weren't someone they could trifle with, as even a Sixth Grade Combat King was crippled by them. If they fought back, their ending would most likely be no better than their senior disciple.

"We'll give you our belongings."

One of the disciples immediately took out all his belongings. Compared to his own life, these treasure were worthless.

Seeing these, no one dared hesitate any longer. They quickly took out all their belongings and handed them over to Jiang Chen.

Wearing a bright smile, Jiang Chen accepted the treasures, content.

“Not bad. As long as you don’t provoke me in the future, you can still keep your lives.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen left with Tyrant and Tan Lang.

During the following time, the entire first level of the Devil Realm sunk into chaos. Three bastards that came out of nowhere and were robbing everyone they saw. If anyone tried to fight back, their clothes would be stripped off completely by these robbers, and they would end up naked.

Initially, these robbers only targeted disciples of the Heavenly Sect, but later, they also began targeting those here on a mission from the Heavenly Tower. In the end, even the cultivators that came from other major powers were robbed by them.

These actions had aroused the public wrath. As a result, during the last day in the Devil Realm, many people stopped hunting for devils, and instead began searching for the three bandits.

“Damn it, those three bastards are really hateful, they even took away my clothes!”

“This is ridiculous! They just don’t care for any moral principles! Even a bandit has to base his actions on moral principles!”

“Let’s go look for young master Qi! We need justice! Those three guys are distinguished guests of the Heavenly Tower, but they’re just too shameless!”

Chapter 551 - A Fox Cannot Hide Its Tail

The entire first level had been thrown into an upheaval. In the history of the Devil Realm, this was the first time that such a major internal conflict had occurred between the human race. Normally, all humans would unite as one and kill devils. But instead, three bandits had made their debut and began robbing everyone they saw, regardless of whether or not there was any resentment between them. And, if anyone dared fight back, that person would be stripped naked, and still lose all belongings.

“Look, those three bandits are here again! Let’s run!”

“Damn it, that monk is the craziest! He’s just robbing anyone he sees, and he beats up anyone who tries to fight back! Since when can monks behave like that? What has happened to this world?!”

“Don’t say any more, we better run now and keep as far away from them as possible. Otherwise, we might get robbed by them again.”

.....

Someone saw the Jiang Chen trio, and as if they had just seen some ferocious ghosts, they immediately ran away without hesitating. The trio’s reputation had spread far, and they were rather easy to recognize. Perhaps Jiang Chen and Tan Lang weren’t easy to recognize, but anyone could recognize the monk with just one look. Meanwhile, Tyrant was also the man who made people feel depressed. In most peoples’ mind, all monks were

eminent beings, especially in the Western Region where Buddhism was prosperous. Although not all monks were completely indifferent to worldly temptations, they should at least look like a disciple of Buddhism. So, how did this guy become a Buddhist? He was just a beast in human skin!

Within a random place in the Devil Realm, many people were staring at young master Qi with long faces. Most of them were disciples of the Heavenly Sect who had been robbed, while some were cultivators who came here for the Heavenly Tower's mission. There were even some rogue cultivators here as well. Right now, perhaps only young master Qi could vanquish these three bandits, bringing justice to everyone.

“Those three bastards! Looks like I underestimated them.”

Young master Qi was extremely angry. As a matter of fact, before they came into the Devil Realm, he didn't seem to think that Jiang Chen and his friends were even worth looking at. Now, he knew he was wrong, he had made a huge mistake. The trio could easily cripple a Sixth Grade Combat King of the Heavenly Sect; this alone proved their formidable strength. Otherwise, they wouldn't have been able to rob so many people.

Faced with this situation, aside from feeling angry, young master Qi was actually rejoicing in secret. For him, everything Jiang Chen had robbed would eventually become his. As long as he could capture Jiang Chen, he would be able to take all of Jiang Chen's belongings. As for those disciples of the Heavenly Sect who had been robbed, he would just compensate them with a tiny portion of what he got. As for the rest of the victims, it had nothing to do

with him. Every debt had its creditor; they should go to Jiang Chen and Tyrant to claim back their belongings, not young master Qi.

“Senior disciple Qi, we must kill those three bastards, especially Jiang Chen and that bald donkey! Jiang Chen has crippled many of our disciples, and that bald donkey is even more brutal; claiming life like it’s nothing!”

“Young master Qi, you really have to help us! That bald donkey is really wicked, he even stripped the clothes of female cultivators!”

“I can guarantee on my honor that that monk doesn’t follow the Buddhist path; he is a devil monk, a bandit! He even robbed the clothes of a female cultivator! Is this something a monk will do?! Heavens!”

“Let’s kill them! We have to remove these evil people, that monk alone is a huge disaster!”

.....

Everyone were burning with fury. The monk had successfully aroused public wrath. Actually, whether or not he really did strip a female of her clothes, no one had seen it with their own eyes. The story had come out of nowhere, which completely damaged Tyrant’s reputation. It even caused Buddhism’s reputation to be affected. But most people still chose to believe this monk wasn’t a real monk. Even if he was, he would be the black sheep of Buddhism.

Of course, Tyrant didn't care about his reputation at all. Currently, he was still going around robbing people in the Devil Realm.

“Rest assured everyone. I, young master Qi will definitely do something for you! I'll go find them now, and once I've captured all three of them, I'll bring them in front of you and allow you to punish them.”

After saying those words, he disappeared from the scene.

“Perfect! Young master Qi is finally going to strike! Those bastards are done for!”

“Young master Qi is an Eighth Grade Combat King, and also a rare genius of the Heavenly Sect. I'm sure he'll capture them with ease.”

“Hmph! Now, with the help of young master Qi, even if they have three heads and six arms, there is no way they can escape!”

.....

It seemed like everyone had seen hope. However, little did they know, young master Qi had his own motives.

“Damn it, robbing is really satisfying! I just realized! After becoming the number one Pirate Lord in the Chaotic Ocean, I actually didn't carry out my duty properly, ridiculous!

Fortunately, I've received Little Chen's guidance and teachings! This monk has now forsaken the evil ways and returned to the righteous path, thank you, Little Chen!"

Tyrant said with utmost sincerity.

"Get lost!"

Without saying another word, Jiang Chen simply sent a kick toward Tyrant. If not for Tyrant's quick reflexes, he would definitely have been kicked in the face. Jiang Chen had seen many shameless guys, but never to this extent. This was Tyrant's true nature, but he was making it seem like it was Jiang Chen who taught him to be a bandit.

"Alright, it's time for us to deal with that young master Qi."

Jiang Chen's expression became serious, and he took out an Eighth Grade Devil King's devil soul.

"That young master Qi is an Eighth Grade Combat King, even if we fight him together, it will still be very difficult for us to defeat him."

Tyrant said, a frown visible on his face. Young master Qi was different from the Eighth Grade Devil King they dealt with before. They were able to kill the Eighth Grade Devil King because of the suppressive effects, but young master Qi was different. He was an Eighth Grade Combat King, and was also a rare genius from the

Heavenly Sect; not someone those ordinary Eighth Grade Combat Kings could compare with. Thus, it would be very difficult for them to defeat him.

"No worries."

A faint smile was brought upon Jiang Chen's face. Without hesitating, he crushed the devil soul of an Eighth Grade Devil King, and at the same time, the True Dragon Flame and True Lightning Flame burst out from his palm, incinerating all impurities and devilish energy in an instant. After that, he absorbed every single bit of pure energy that remained in the devil soul.

New Dragon Marks began forming, and soon after, five hundred new Dragon Marks were completely formed. Jiang Chen took a huge amount of Heavenly Yuan Pills from out from his Qi Sea and absorbed them. In just a few minutes, he had broken through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm.

Tyrant and Tan Lang opened their eyes widely, unable to calm themselves for a long time. They had witnessed Jiang Chen breaking through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm in front of their eyes, and while his aura was still becoming stronger, the two men couldn't help but simultaneously curse, "Fuck!"

What did an abnormal monster look like? They had finally witnessed it today! No, Jiang Chen could no longer be described as an abnormal monster, as he could break through to the next level, just like that. This was ridiculous, it seemed like he never had to face any bottlenecks.

The energy contained within an Eighth Great Devil King's devil soul couldn't be compare with what came from a Seventh Grade Devil King's devil soul. A single Eighth Grade devil soul had brought him another 1,500 Dragon Marks, causing the total number of Dragon Marks in his body to reach a whopping 29,000! As long as he formed another 1,000 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm.

Jiang Chen currently had a lot of devil souls, and if he absorbed them all, he would be able to break through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm. However, Jiang Chen chose not to do so. After the recent disaster, he had broken through many levels in one go, so if he used this method to forcefully increase his cultivation even further, it might bring negative effects to his foundation. Therefore, Jiang Chen planned to stabilize his cultivation at the Fifth Grade Combat King realm completely before breaking through to the Sixth Grade Combat King realm. Furthermore, his current strength was more than enough to deal with that young master Qi.

“Monster! Can you tell me how you did that? What is the secret?”

Tyrant couldn't restrain his curiosity, and thus asked.

"It's top secret."

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. The Dragon Transformation skill's ability was too shocking. Hence, a secret like this shouldn't be known by anyone.

“So, you three were actually hiding here. However, it’s impossible for you to escape from me!”

At this moment, a loud shout entered their ears. Young master Qi had arrived, and he stood right in front of the trio. They were standing in the wild, and no one aside from them were at this place; not even devils could be found. No doubt, this was a perfect place for young master Qi.

“What a joke! With which eyes do you see us hiding? Can’t you see that we’re standing here as open as the day?”

Tyrant said. The trio weren’t surprised to see young master Qi. Even if they didn’t go around robbing people, he would have still appeared in front of them in the end.

“If you’re really a monk, having a black sheep like you amongst the rank is truly a pity for the other monks.”

Young master Qi gazed at Tyrant and spoke in a rude manner.

“Really? Why don’t you become a Buddhist? I can be your introducer.”

Tyrant said.

"Hmph!"

Young master Qi coldly harrumphed, simply ignoring Tyrant. He then look at Jiang Chen's face and said, "Jiang Chen, who gave you the audacity to rob everyone in the Devil Realm? You even robbed the disciples of the Heavenly Sect, what a reckless guy!"

"What do you want?"

Jiang Chen said; a faint smile visible on his face.

"What do I want? Do you think you can still keep your life after everything you've done? Nevertheless, I'll give you all a chance to stay alive. Give me all your belongings, and tell me where you found the Nine Solar Holy Water. Then, I'll consider sparing your lives."

Young master Qi said. The fox had finally shown its tail. In his mind, regardless of whether or not Jiang Chen still had any Nine Solar Holy Water, everything Jiang Chen had was now his. All he needed to do was ask where Jiang Chen found his Nine Solar Holy Water.

It was exactly as Jiang Chen had expected. He knew that both managers of the Heavenly Tower were up to something, that's why they asked him to join the mission. So, they were doing this for his Nine Solar Holy Water. However, as they had to take care of the Heavenly Tower's reputation, they used such methods to get what they wanted; asking young master Qi to kill him in the Devil Realm. In a chaotic place like the Devil Realm, anything could happen. This was indeed a good plan.

Chapter 552 – Steamrolled

“I clearly said I only had that much Nine Solar Holy Water, and I exchanged it all with the Heavenly Tower. This is really out of my expectations. With the Heavenly Tower’s reputation, they actually employed such dirty tricks in the dark. They’re truly worthy of despise.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold voice, not hiding his despise toward the Heavenly Tower.

Listening to Jiang Chen, young master Qi showed no signs of shame on his face. Instead, his eyes lit up, “Oh, I almost forgot, you received ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills from the Heavenly Tower, truly a great amount! Now, those ten million Yuan Pills, as well as all your other belongings and Nine Solar Holy Water; all the treasures you’ve robbed today, it all belongs to me, young master Qi! Everything you’ve gotten so far is all mine!”

The more young master Qi spoke, the more excited he became. In the end, he simply began laughing out loudly. He was no longer looking at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a human, but instead a treasure vault. Putting aside those things Jiang Chen had received from robbing others, just the ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills alone was an astronomical figure for young master Qi. Now, all of it would belong to him, making him excited.

There wasn’t anyone else around, so young master Qi could show his true colors. After all, this was his true goal. Not only was he going to take away all of Jiang Chen’s belongings, he would also kill Jiang Chen. A dead man tells no tales.

Not only that, judging from the current situation, he would be praised by many after killing Jiang Chen.

Tan Lang shook his head. All humans were greedy by nature. The Devil Realm was more lawless than the Chaotic Ocean. Killing someone and taking all his belongings was common here. As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen only robbed, but didn't kill. Young master Qi was also the same; the reason why he was here was to that he could rob Jiang Chen.

“This monk really admires how you show your shamelessness in such a righteous manner.”

Tyrant said with a sigh. Perhaps others might fear the Heavenly Sect, but Tyrant did not. This was because they were in the Western Region, so no matter how strong the Heavenly Sect was, they would have to be stronger than Tyrant's background. As long as his master decided to interfere, the Heavenly Sect would easily be annihilated.

“No more nonsense. Jiang Chen, I'll give you three minutes to consider; hand over all your belongings, or die.”

Young master Qi unleashed his killing intent, completely locking down the trio's auras; not giving them any chance to escape. In his mind, there was no way these three men could escape; they were like turtles in a jar, their fates in his hands.

“Is that so? If that is the case, I will give you a chance to survive.

Give me all your treasures, and I'll treat you like I did with the others, and only destroy your Qi Sea. That way, you can still keep your life. What do you think? However, I won't give you three minutes, you only have three breaths of time. Refuse to obey me, and I will kill you."

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

Young master Qi was startled upon hearing Jiang Chen's words. He even began doubting his own hearing. It seemed like this guy had become addicted to ribbing, and was trying to rob just anyone he saw, ending up with him even trying to rob young master Qi!

"You're courting death!"

Young master Qi was furious. A powerful aura burst out from his body, "Let me give you one last chance. If you don't give me everything you got, I will immediately strike you. At that point of time, after experiencing hellish torture as if you've entered hell, you'll still hand me everything you got."

"Three breaths of time has passed; you've lost your chance. Now I'm not longer interested in your belongings, I'm more interested in claiming your life."

Two ice-cold beams shot out from Jiang Chen's eyes. Toward those men who were determined to kill him, Jiang Chen would never show any mercy.

Rumble!

Right after Jiang Chen said that, he waved his hand, unleashing the True Dragon Palm. The blood red dragon claw ripped apart the space above young master Qi's head.

“You're overconfident! You dare fight against me?!”

Young master Qi was enraged. A rune could be seen hovering in his palm as he waved it, unleashing a golden seal that rippled through the space, forcefully clashing with Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm.

Boom!

The collision of two powerful attacks ripped apart the space, and frightening energy shockwaves spread across the entire place. When Jiang Chen launched his first strike, Tyrant and Tan Lang fled from the battlefield, bringing themselves far away. Against an Eighth Grade Combat King like this young master Qi, who was also a genius of the younger generation, Tan Lang was far from strong enough. Even Tyrant, who was a Sixth Grade Combat King was no match for young master Qi. Thus, only the abnormal Jiang Chen who had just broken through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm could do it.

The seal unleashed by young master Qi was instantly ripped apart by the True Dragon Palm, and he was knocked back a few dozen meters before he could stabilize his body. The frightening energy shockwave had even caused the ground to sink. Young

master Qi felt pain, as his qi and blood was rumbling within his body. However, his mind was struck astonishment.

"How can this be possible?!"

Young master Qi exclaimed, then opened his eyes widely and stared at Jiang Chen. He couldn't believe that what just happened was real. This guy was a Fourth Grade... no, Fifth Grade Combat King, it looked like this guy had broken through after spending three days in the Devil Realm. However, even if he was a Fifth Grade Combat King, the gap between them was still huge, and it was impossible for him to be a match for young master Qi! However, young master Qi was actually defeated in the first exchange; Jiang Chen had even more combat strength than young master Qi! This was unbelievable!

"There are many things in this world that seem impossible at first. As for your destiny, since the moment you decided to kill me, it was decided. By offending me, the Heavenly Sect will also face devastating consequences."

Jiang Chen said.

"Hmph! You're just a mere Fifth Grade Combat King, I refuse to believe you can defeat me!"

Young master Qi coldly harrumphed. He would never surrender to a Fifth Grade Combat King. With a sway of his body, he flew up into the sky, completely unleashing his Eighth Grade Combat King aura, which blanketed a vast area. He then spread out both palms,

which were covered in a glowing azure light.

“Such a powerful shockwave! Look, that’s senior disciple Qi! And those three bastards are here as well! Senior disciple Qi is attacking them!”

“Damn it, those three bastards have finally shown themselves! I’m sure young master Qi will kill all three of those overconfident bastards!”

“Let’s go have a look. We have to get back everything that those three bastards stole from us!”

.....

Once someone saw the battle, many people began rushing toward the battlefield. This was a grand show no one wanted to miss. All of them hated Jiang Chen and his friends, it was to the point where they wished to tear off their flesh while they were still alive. However, those who had been robbed by Jiang Chen were sure of one thing; although these three bandits were hateful, their strength wasn’t something they could go up against. In order to seek out revenge, they could only rely on young master Qi from the Heavenly Sect.

Boom!

Jiang Chen stomped his feet, causing the entire ground to shake, then shot himself into the sky like an arrow leaving its bow.

Today, he wanted to kill this Eighth Grade Combat King personally.

"Falling Stars!"

Young master Qi suddenly roared out in a furious manner. He waved both his palms forward, unleashing nine dazzling stars glowing in azure light. The nine stars were rapidly making their way toward Jiang Chen with tremendous power and momentum. Although these stars were formed entirely from Yuan energy, their power was extremely tremendous, and they carried a devastating force.

The eyes of those who came to watch the battle went wide. The mightiness of an Eighth Grade Combat King was indeed not something they could imagine. Young master Qi's amazing skill had frightened every single one of them. They could imagine; if anyone were hit by these nine stars, they would instantly be crushed into meat paste.

"Insignificant skill. Nine Solar Fingers!"

Jiang Chen's hair was violently fluttering in the strong wind as he clenched his fingers together and countered with the Nine Solar Fingers. The current power of the Nine Solar Fingers could no longer be compared with before. Although he still couldn't unleash the skill at full power with his current strength, he was now able to unleash all nine fingers without any problems.

Nine huge fingers with appearance like the pillars holding the

heavens up were revealed, and they were all piercing through the sky as they shot for the nine stars. A shocking scene appeared before everyone, as the nine huge seemingly indestructible fingers left nine trails in space while producing a lot of sparks along their way instantly pierced through all nine stars; shattering them to pieces.

Pu!

Young master Qi's attack was forcefully destroyed by the Nine Solar Fingers, thus he was the one to suffer the most shock. A mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth, and his face turned extremely pale. With just two strikes, he had been completely defeated. Anyone could tell from this situation that he was no match for this young man.

"This is a real monster."

From afar, Tyrant was unable to hold in his astonishment. Even though he was incredibly prideful, he had to admit that Jiang Chen was definitely the strongest genius he had ever met; a peerless monster.

"What?! How can this be possible?! Young master Qi isn't a match against that bastard?"

"This can't be possible, my eyes must be deceiving me! A Fifth Grade Combat King actually defeated young master Qi, an Eighth Grade Combat King? This is absurd!"

“Who is that man? How is he able to defeat someone three levels higher than himself?! I wonder if young master Qi can really make it through this battle.”

“I think it will be difficult. He has now suffered a serious injury. Don’t tell me this young man is going to kill young master Qi?”

“I’m sure he doesn’t have the courage to do that. The Heavenly Sect is a supreme power in the Western Region, not something a mere Combat King can afford to offend. If he really kills young master Qi, he would have to endure the wrath of the Heavenly Sect.”

.....

Everyone were struck with astonishment, as it was a frightening scene that nearly turned their common sense over. Initially, everyone thought young master Qi would be able to kill the three bastards with ease, but what happened in front of them was a completely different story. The frightening young man in white had just severely injured young master Qi with just one strike.

"Hmph!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then once again launched an attack in a resolute manner. With a sway of his body, he arrived in front of young master Qi. He stretched out his arm and unleashed the True Dragon Palm.

Chapter 553 - The Great Manager's Anger

Right at this moment, everyone were holding their breath, as all of them could now tell how huge the gap between young master Qi and Jiang Chen was. Young master Qi was badly wounded now, and there was no way he could withstand another attack from Jiang Chen. If nothing unexpected happened, Jiang Chen's next strike would claim young master Qi's life.

This was also the reason why everyone was so shocked. Nearly everyone believed that Jiang Chen had the courage to kill young master Qi. After all, young master Qi was a man with a prestigious status and position in the Heavenly Sect. It wasn't easy for any major power to cultivate an Eighth Great Combat King, so if he was killed, not only would it be a great loss for the sect, it would also be a huge humiliation to their reputation.

But unfortunately, there weren't anyone Jiang Chen didn't dare to kill. Underneath the heavens, there were only men he didn't want to kill, or men he couldn't kill at the moment; there were no one he did not dare kill.

Under young master Qi's shocked gaze, the True Dragon Palm forcefully fell down on him. Although young master Qi had tried all he could to defend against this strike, he had already been badly wounded, so he was no longer a match for Jiang Chen. The huge dragon claw descended down like a tremendous body, slamming young master Qi down from the sky with a loud boom.

Plop!

Young master Qi was slammed down from the sky, and smashed into the ground; producing a large crater filled with dust. While hovering in the sky, Jiang Chen stretched his arm out and pulled young master Qi out from the deep crater, then clenched his neck; holding him like a chicken.

Young master Qi was in a miserable condition right now. His entire body was covered in blood, and both his arms had been twisted and broken by the attack. He had completely lost all ability to fight; like a spent force. As long as Jiang Chen had the intention, he could kill young master Qi at any time.

Put it this way, young master Qi's life was currently in complete control of Jiang Chen. His survival now solely depended on Jiang Chen's decision.

“Heavens! Young master Qi was defeated so quickly, and he got completely crushed!”

“Where did this young man come from? He's just a Fifth Grade Combat King, but he just defeated young master Qi with such ease, who is an Eighth Grade Combat King! If I hadn't witnessed this myself, I wouldn't have believe it at all!”

“I wonder if he really has the guts to kill young master Qi. If he really does it, he would completely offend the Heavenly Sect.”

“Even if he doesn't kill young master Qi, the Heavenly Sect will still not let him go. He has crippled quite a lot of disciples from the Heavenly Sect before this. Damn, it, I never thought he would be

such a frightening man! It looks like we won't be able to take back the things stolen from us. But still, we're lucky he didn't kill us."

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they had just witnessed. No one could have expected this. Young master Qi was completely crushed, and he was held in someone's hand like a chicken without the ability to fight back. However, many people still thought that Jiang Chen wouldn't dare kill young master Qi. After all, it was rare for someone to have the courage to stand against the Heavenly Sect.

As for those disciples of the Heavenly Sect, they were all wearing unsightly expressions on their faces. Most of them had been robbed by Jiang Chen before, which made them really hate this young man. They thought young master Qi could help them bring justice and give these three bandits a fierce lesson, but judging from the current situation, their dreams had just vanished.

"Jiang Chen, you... how dare you do this to me?! The Heavenly Sect will never let you go!"

Young master Qi said in a lifeless manner. At this point of time, he still tried to threaten Jiang Chen

"Is that so? Looks like you won't shed a tear until you see the coffin. Since that is the case, let me show you whether or not I have the courage to kill you."

A cold smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face, as well as ice-cold killing intent. He clenched his fingers together like a sword, and aimed at young master Qi's throat, then slashed.

"No, please don't kill me!"

Young master Qi finally showed fear. His forehead covered in beads of sweat, he hastily begged for his life. He finally believed that Jiang Chen wasn't joking with him. This was a man who dared to do anything, and his life was now in the hands of this ferocious young man. If he didn't beg for his life, he would almost certainly die.

Jiang Chen stopped moving, then said with an indifferent voice, "Give me all your belongings, then I'll spare your life."

Pu!

Jiang Chen's words caused young master Qi to vomit a mouthful of blood. It was caused by his own anger. He was here to rob Jiang Chen; he was here for the Nine Solar Holy Water and the ten million Heavenly Yuan Pills, as well as the devil souls. However, he never expected that in the end, he would be the one to get robbed. This made him really depressed.

"If you don't want to get killed, bring out all your belongings at once!"

Jiang Chen shouted in a cold manner.

“Alright, I’ll give it to you as long as you promise not to kill me.”

Young master Qi said through his tightly clenched teeth. In the current situation, he had no choice but to compromise. As long as he could keep his life, he would be able to seek revenge in the future. His belongings weren’t easy to steal for anyone, and in the future, he would make Jiang Chen pay twice the price.

Compelled by the situation, young master Qi took out all his live savings and handed it over to Jiang Chen. The savings of an Eighth Grade Combat King was tremendous, just the Heavenly Yuan Pills alone had reached a whopping 800,000! There also countless herbs, and many advanced devil souls. The rewards of robbing young master Qi alone was far greater than robbing dozens of other cultivators.

“I’ve given you all my belongings, and you’ve promised not to kill me.”

Young master Qi said.

“Of course, I’m a man who honors my words.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen let go of young master Qi, setting him free. However, when he turned around, he gave Tyrant a signal with his eyes.

Tyrant understood what Jiang Chen meant. He strode up to

young master Qi who had just sighed out in relief; his face carrying a crafty smile.

"What are you trying to do?"

Young master Qi's heart instantly sunk. It seemed this monk wasn't easy to deal with either. Of course, if he was still in top shape, he would never be bothered by this monk. However, it was a completely different story now, as any Combat King could kill him with ease.

"This monk is here to release your soul from purgatory, sending you to paradise."

Tyrant said in an utmost serious manner. There was an obvious killing intent in his eyes.

"Jiang Chen! You promised me you wouldn't kill me after I handed over my belongings!"

Young master Qi yelled at Jiang Chen who was walking away.

"I thought I set you free just now? What others want to do, it has nothing to do with me."

Jiang Chen smiled in a cunning manner as he spoke.

"You,- you're despicable!"

Young master Qi was struck with great fear once again. His relaxed mind became tense.

Tyrant waved his palm toward young master Qi's head.

"NOOOOOOOO..."

Young master Qi had fallen into the depths of hopelessness. There was no way he could defend himself against Tyrant's attack. In the end, after he let out the last miserable shriek in his life, he was killed by Tyrant's palm. The leader who brought the disciples of the Heavenly Sect to the Devil Realm had miserably died. Throughout the Heavenly Sect's entire history, this was the first time something like this had happened.

Silence reigned in the atmosphere. Everyone were holding their breaths, not daring to make any noise, fearing they might provoke these devils. These men had just killed Young Master Qi, and it seemed there wasn't anything they dared not do.

"Senior disciple Qi is dead, what should we do now?"

Someone whispered.

"Send a message back to the sect at once, don't let these guys have an opportunity to escape."

A man from the Heavenly Sect took out a messaging talisman and secretly sent word of what happened here back to the Heavenly Sect.

.....

At the very moment when young master Qi was killed, inside the Heavenly Sect, his soul jade slip shattered instantly. The Elder who was keeping watch of all the soul jade slips was struck with great panic, and without hesitating, he went straight to the Elders Palace.

Six men were sitting inside the Elders Palace, and they seemed to be discussing something. Each of them were very powerful. The Elder who sat in the center was a Third Grade Combat Emperor. Besides him, there were also two Second Grade Combat Emperors and one First Grade Combat Emperor, as well as two Ninth Grade Combat Kings. It was an extremely formidable group.

Out of the two Ninth Grade Combat Kings, one of them was the Heavenly Tower's Great Manager. Although he was the head of the Heavenly Tower, when it came to this Heavenly Sect's Elders Palace, his position was immediately brought down.

“Great Manager, you’ve done well this time. With so much Nine Solar Holy Water, we can cultivate more geniuses for the Heavenly Sect.”

The Third Grade Combat Emperor said. He was obviously satisfied with the Nine Solar Holy Water brought back by the Great

Manager.

“Thank you, Elder Yuan. Having so much Nine Solar Holy Water at such a young age, I’m sure that guys know where to find even more Nine Solar Holy Water. Therefore, I asked young master Qi to deal with him in the Devil Realm, and find out where he got that Nine Solar Holy Water from.”

The Great Manager said with a smile on his face.

“You’ve made the right decision, and it will also not bring any harm to the Heavenly Tower.”

Another Combat Emperor also praised the Great Manager.

"Something bad happened!"

Right at this moment, the Elder who was guarding the soul jade slips rushed into the Elders Palace.

“Why are you panicking? Tell us slowly what happened.”

Elder Yuan furrowed his brows.

“Something bad happened! Young master Qi’s soul jade slip is broken, he’s dead!”

The Elder said in dismay. He knew young master Qi had brought many disciples and traveled to the Devil Realm. And now that young master Qi's soul jade slip had broken, it meant the group was struck with great danger. Therefore, he dared not hesitate, and came to report the news at once.

“What?! Young master Qi is dead?! When did that happen?!”

The Great Manager jumped out from his chair. If young master Qi was dead, that basically meant his plans had completely failed.

"Just a moment ago."

The Elder truthfully answered.

“What about the other disciples?”

Elder Yuan asked while furrowing his brows.

“Most of them are still intact, only a few soul jade slips have broken.”

The Elder said. This was actually perfectly normal, minor casualties was really normal for a place like the Devil Realm. However, the only abnormal thing this time was that most of the weaker disciples were safe, while the strongest young master Qi had died. Something unusual must be happening in the Devil Realm.

Right at this moment, a talisman inside the Great Manager's body suddenly vibrated. He flipped his palm, retrieving the talisman. Upon hearing the message sent to his talisman, his expression changed dramatically.

"Bastard!"

The Great Manager was enraged. He couldn't believe what had happened in the Devil Realm.

"Great Manager, what's going on?"

Elder Yuan asked.

"I just received news from the Devil Realm, it was that Jiang Chen who killed young master Qi. I underestimated that guy, I didn't expect him to hide his strength so deeply. Even young master Qi, an Eighth Grade Combat King was killed by him! Damn it, this is ridiculous!"

The Great Manager's face became grim.

Chapter 554 – Eye For An Eye

"What?!"

A storm erupted within the Elders Palace. Including Elder Yuan, everyone stood up from their seats. Young master Qi was dead. If he was killed by a formidable Devil King in the Devil Realm, none of them would be angry, as that only meant that young young master Qi was weak compared to the Devil King, or perhaps he just got unlucky. However, he had been killed by a human being, and this meant that the human showed no respect to the Heavenly Sect at all.

“Great Manager, I thought you said Jiang Chen was only a Fourth Grade Combat King? Then, how did he kill young master Qi?”

Elder Yuan furrowed his brows.

“I wasn’t mistaken, that kid really was a mere Fourth Grade Combat King. However, according to the news I just received, Jiang Chen has broken through to the Fifth Grade Combat King realm. Also, he and his friends have been robbing everyone in the Devil Realm. More than half of our disciples have been robbed by them, and anyone who tried to fight back were crippled. They are extremely ruthless. And a moment ago, that Jiang Chen killed young master Qi with his Fifth Grade Combat King cultivation.”

The Great Manager said. Although he didn’t want to believe it, the news he received just now couldn’t be false. Although he hated to admit this, he had underestimated Jiang Chen.

“I never thought such a monstrous genius would exist; able to kill an Eighth Grade Combat King as just a Fifth Grade Combat King. However, since he has the courage to stand against the Heavenly Sect, he will have to pay the price.”

One of the Combat Emperors said.

“Elder Yuan, we have to rush over there as soon as possible. We can’t let that kid escape, and I’m sure he knows where to get more Nine Solar Holy Water.”

The Great Manager said in a hurry. Although losing an Eighth Grade Combat King genius wasn’t a big deal to the Heavenly Sect, if they didn’t kill Jiang Chen, they would lose face. The geniuses of the Heavenly Sect went to the Devil Realm to temper themselves, but their leader had been killed by someone, while the rest of the disciples were robbed. If news about this was to spread to the public, it would be a terrible humiliation for the Heavenly Sect. They would also be able to find out where Jiang Chen found all his Nine Solar Holy Water. Since the Heavenly Sect had decided to assault Jiang Chen, they had to finish the job.

“Let’s go! I’m really interested in seeing what kind of genius that Jiang Chen is.”

The Elder unleashed his aura. With a sway of his body, he simply vanished into thin air. After that, all the Elders in the palace disappeared as well.

.....

Inside the Devil Realm. Young master Qi was dead, and no one had the courage to fight against Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen and his friends didn't make things difficult for the rest of the men. They were now flying toward the spot with the weakest spatial barrier.

“Little Chen, what should we do now?”

Tyrant asked.

“We'll leave this place. I'm afraid the Heavenly Sect has learned about young master Qi's death. We don't have enough strength to clash with this sect. After we exit, we'll return to the Xuan Region at once.”

Jiang Chen said. He had received tremendous benefits in the Western Region, and with his current strength, he was unable to fight against the Heavenly Sect. Thus, his next goal was to return to the Xuan Region, the Liang Province. He still had scores to settle back in that place.

Big Yellow was still in deep sleep, and as long as he could find the blood essence of the Ferghana Stallion after returning, he would be able to wake Big Yellow up. This task could be considered top priority.

“Let's go, we'll leave this place as well.”

“Damn it, this trip to the Devil Realm resulted in a huge loss for me. Not only did I not find anything, I even lost all my belongings!”

“Sigh, don’t talk about it any longer. This is our fates.”

Those men who were robbed kept sighing in despair. However, they shouldn’t stay in the Devil Realm for too long, so they chose to leave. All the disciples of the Heavenly Sect wore gloomy expressions.

“I have informed the Heavenly Sect about everything that happened here. I believe it won’t take long before they send some powerful warriors here. At that point of time, those three bastards will have to face inevitable death!”

The disciple who used the messaging talisman earlier said.

Later, the trio arrived at the place in the Devil Realm with the weakest spatial barrier. He pulled out his Heavenly Saint Sword, aimed it at the space in front of him and swung down forcefully. The spatial barrier was instantly ripped apart. With a sway of their bodies, the trio left the Devil Realm, and arrived at the same place they entered the Devil Realm.

After Jiang Chen and his friends came out, the others had left the Devil Realm as well. Although they really hated Jiang Chen, they had already learned their lesson from the previous encounters. As long as they didn’t take the initiative to provoke Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen wouldn’t kill them. After all, if he really wanted to kill them,

none of them would be able to stay alive now. Thus, they weren't scared of Jiang Chen.

After leaving the Devil Realm and flying a short distance, a few extremely powerful auras could be sensed descending from the skies. Before these men appeared, they had completely sealed off this area's space, trapping the trio.

"They're really fast!"

Jiang Chen's expression changed. These people were clearly here for them, that's why they imprisoned the trio upon spotting them; not allowing them any chances to escape.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

In the next moment, six formidable figures made their debut, blocking the trio's path. These six men were the same men as those elders in the Elders Palace.

"The fuck? Four Combat Emperors, two Ninth Grade Combat Kings, they really regard us highly."

Tyrant couldn't help but curse. Obviously, by sending such a formidable group of warriors, the Heavenly Sect wanted them dead. With his and Jiang Chen's current strength, facing this group of men would mean inevitable death. They didn't even have the chance to escape. However, although they were faced with this formidable group, no signs of panic could be seen on Tyrant's face.

In fact, there wasn't anything in this Western Region that could really make him panic.

“Look, those are the powerful warriors of the Heavenly Sect, they're finally here!”

“Haha, this is great! So many Combat Emperors! It looks like they are fully aware of what happened here, that's why they rushed straight here! Those three bastards are going to face death, and this time, there won't be any accidents!”

“This is excellent! Well-known Combat Emperors are here! No matter how much of a genius that guy is, he will never be a match against such formidable warriors. He has offended the Heavenly Sect, so he can only die!”

.....

Behind them, those people just came out from the Devil Realm were extremely excited. Each of them wore joyful expressions. This was an extremely strong group from the Heavenly Sect; a total of four Combat Emperors, and one of them even being a Fourth Grade Combat Emperors! Thus, even if these three guys had three heads and six arms, as well as a hundred pairs of wings, they would still die!

“It's those three?”

Elder Yuan's gaze landed on the trio, then he asked with a cold

voice.

"That's right, he is Jiang Chen."

The Great Manager turned to Jiang Chen and shouted with a stern voice, "Jiang Chen, I was kind enough to allow you to participate in the training with the Heavenly Sect's geniuses so that you could have some chances to find some devil souls to exchange for Heavenly Yuan Pills. However, I never expected you to return my kindness with ingratitude. Not only did you kill disciples of the Heavenly Sect, you even went so far as to rob everyone! What's the difference between you and those from the devil clans?!"

The Great Manager posed as a person of high morals and condemned Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen responded with a sneer, wishing he could just rip the Great Manager's face apart immediately.

"Old fool, don't put yourself on such high grounds. You know better than anyone what you've done. On the outside, the Heavenly Tower looks like a business that plays fair, and has an excellent reputation. However, you're doing all kinds of dirty things in the dark. The purpose of letting me participate in the Devil Realm's mission is to let young master Qi kill me in that place, and eventually rob me of all my belongings. You're truly despicable. Unfortunately, that young master Qi was just too weak, and ended up being killed by me. Serves him right."

Jiang Chen went head to head against the Great Manager. He wasn't afraid, as he had a trump card with him. If the conflict

really entered a state where it could no longer be resolved, he would use the Source of Combat Strength Talisman given to him by Great Master Ran Feng.

“What?! Is this realm? I don’t think the Heavenly Tower would do something like that. They have an excellent reputation in the Western Region.”

“That’s right, I don’t think it’s possible either. However, if what he said is real, who would dare trade with the Heavenly Tower in the future?”

.....

Jiang Chen’s words had no doubt brought a great storm to everyone. Many people began discussing amongst each other. After all, in the Western Region, the Heavenly Tower was a very well-known name. Many people and powers had a good business relationship with them, and they did that just because of the Heavenly Tower’s excellent reputation. If Jiang Chen’s words turned out to be true, the Heavenly Tower’s reputation would be completely destroyed, and no one would want to do business with them anymore.

“Bullshit! Jiang Chen, you better not slander the Heavenly Tower! We’ve always had an excellent reputation! You’ve killed people of the Heavenly Sect, and you’re trying to drag the Heavenly Tower into this incident. What a reckless maniac! I’m going to capture you now and imprison you in the Heavenly Sect!”

The Great Manager was angered. Young master Qi had failed his task, leading to Jiang Chen become aware of his evil plot. What the Great Manager needed to do now was to capture all three of them and bring them to the Heavenly Sect. After that, he would have a lot of time to find out where Jiang Chen got his Nine Solar Holy Water.

“Hmph! Let me warn you, the Heavenly Sect better not challenge me. Otherwise, you can’t even begin to imagine the consequences.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Since the beginning, he never intended to have any conflicts with the Heavenly Sect. However, if they really wanted to kill him, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be afraid of standing against them.

“Young man, you have no idea how dangerous your actions are. You’ve killed a genius of the Heavenly Sect, so you have to pay the price. I’ll capture you now.”

Elder Yuan, the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor said with an indifferent voice. His aura shook slightly, causing the entire space to violently tremble. After that, Elder Yuan stretched out one of his palm, shrouding the trio.

Tyrant and Tan Lang felt as if their entire bodies had instantly been trapped, and couldn’t move even a little bit. As expected, the strength of a Combat Emperor wasn’t something they could handle, let alone a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor.

“Finished! Those three guys are finished! A Fourth Grade Combat

Emperor has made a move, they won't even have a chance to fight back!"

"This really helps venting my anger. Even if we can't claim back our belongings, being able to witness them being captured is rather satisfying as well."

Upon seeing the Fourth Grade Combat Emperor personally making a move, many people became extremely excited. They felt there wouldn't be any more accidents this time; these three bandits would soon face death, and there weren't any room for them to escape. A Fourth Grade Combat Emperor wasn't an existence young master Qi could compare with.

"Amitabha!"

Right at this moment, a stentorian voice could be heard from afar. The voice sounded as straight as an arrow, and it repeatedly echoed in the air, causing one's soul to tremble upon hearing it.

Chapter 555 – Killing A Ninth Grade Combat King With Just A Single Look

The voice came together with an extremely powerful aura, immediately attracting everyone's attention. And, surprisingly, this voice that came from nowhere had destroyed Elder Yuan's attack.

Haa!

Elder Yuan drew a sharp breath as his face turned pale. When the voice came through, he could clearly feel that the speaker was still in the void, and was pretty far away from them. However, even from so far away, the man used his voice to shatter Elder Yuan's attack. What did this tell him? It simply meant that this man was an extremely strong man that Elder Yuan couldn't be compared with. Although he was already a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, that man was probably a genuine Saint!

In the following moment, a figure suddenly appeared in front of them like a ghost. No vibrations could be sensed in the space surrounding them. From the way he had mysteriously arrived, one could tell it was most likely something only a legendary Minor Saint could achieve.

Everyone turned their eyes to this man. He was an old monk with a fluttering white beard, and he was portraying a calm bearing as if he was a mighty Buddha. His body was covered in golden Buddhist Aura, making it so that those who looked at him couldn't help but feel respect for him.

The old monk's body looked rather incorporeal. Anyone with good senses could tell that this old monk was actually formed by a thread of divine sense, and that this wasn't the real body. However, although it was just a thread of divine sense, everyone could clearly feel a tremendous pressure coming from this old monk, making it difficult for them to breathe. Just a thread of divine sense had brought them such pressure, so it wasn't difficult to imagine how terrifying it would be if the real person was here.

"Master!"

Tyrant shouted upon seeing the old monk. He knew Great Master Ran Feng would appear at the most critical moment. After all, they were in the Western Region, and if his disciple was killed by someone in the Western Region, it would be incredibly shameful for Great Master Ran Feng. Not only that, Jiang Chen also carried a heavy weight in Great Master Ran Feng's heart.

"What?! This old monk is that little monk's master? I knew this guy had an unusual background! Judging from the situation, he's most likely from the Great Leiyin Temple."

"The old monk is just a thread of divine sense, but he's making me feel so terrified. If my guess is correct, he is most likely an eminent monk from the Great Leiyin Temple. The Heavenly Sect has slammed into a steel plate this time. Although they are powerful, compared to the Great Leiyin Temple, the difference is like heaven and earth."

“If that monk really is from the Great Leiyin Temple, the Heavenly Sect might have no choice but to swallow their grievances.”

.....

Many people began whispering amongst each other. Although this old monk was just a thread of divine sense, everyone could clearly feel how frightening he was.

The overbearing Elder Yuan had now completely retracted his aura. With his judgment, he could tell that if this monk's main body showed up, it would be an existence that was at least a Fifth Grade Minor Saint. Although the Heavenly Sect also had a Minor Saint, there was still a gap between them. Also, Fifth Grade Minor Saint was just the lowest estimation. In the Western Region, an eminent monk like this could only come from one place... the Great Leiyin Temple! No matter how proud and arrogant the Heavenly Sect felt, there was no way they could compare with the Great Leiyin Temple.

“I had no idea this little monk was a disciple of the Great Leiyin Temple, I am afraid I've been a poor host. I hope your eminent monk doesn't blame us for that. However, that Jiang Chen has killed our disciples, and even robbed everyone in this place. The Heavenly Sect wants him to pay for what he has done. I hope your eminent monk won't interfere in this matter.”

Elder Yuan said. He was no idiot. He heard the little monk addressing the old monk as master, thus, it was obvious that the old monk was here to save the little monk. If Elder Yuan made

things difficult for the little monk now, he would be a complete idiot. However, he thought this old man didn't have a close relationship with Jiang Chen. After all, his primary goal here was to capture Jiang Chen. Thus, it didn't matter if the little monk wasn't killed. As long as he could capture Jiang Chen, he would be able to find the source of the Nine Solar Holy Water.

"Amitabha. Jiang Chen is my good friend, you can't touch him."

Great Master Ren Feng placed his palms together and said directly.

"Eminent monk, I'm sure the Great Leiyin Temple is a reasonable place. No matter what, we, the Heavenly Sect is also a superpower in the Western Region. And, this Jiang Chen isn't even a Buddhist. Great Master, don't you think you're stretching your arm too far?"

The Ninth Grade Combat King from the Heavenly Sect suddenly said. His judgment obviously wasn't as good as Elder Yuan's, as he couldn't tell the true strength of this old monk. In his mind, this old monk was at most a Minor Saint, while the Heavenly Sect had more than one Minor Saint. Also, Jiang Chen had aroused public wrath with his actions. Thus, even the Great Leiyin Temple would have to be reasonable in this matter.

But unfortunately, this wasn't a world for reason.

"Mister, I can sense that your killing intent toward my young friend Jiang Chen is very strong."

While saying that, Great Master Ran Feng raised his head and looked at the Ninth Grade Combat King. His vision suddenly became extremely sharp, and two golden beams shot out from his eyes. The two beams approached the Ninth Grade Combat King in an instant, ripping apart space along its way. Without anything unexpected happening, the Ninth Grade Combat King didn't even have a chance to respond; his brain was pierced through by the golden beams, and he died miserably on the spot.

The Ninth Grade Combat King didn't even let out a single sound. His body fell down from the sky.

"What?!"

Everyone on the spot couldn't help but shout out in shock. All of them opened their eyes widely and stared at the old monk who was hovering in the sky. This was truly terrifying, the old monk had just killed someone with a single glance! What kind of technique was it? It was too heavenly-defying!

Killing a Ninth Grade Combat King with just a single look, and the old monk was just a thread of divine sense!

"Heavens, this monk is so frightening! He just killed a Ninth Grade Combat King with a single look! The power of a Minor Saint is actually at this level!"

"The Saint realm is not something we can imagine. This old monk must be a powerful master from the Great Leiyin Temple. Buddhists do kill, and although they're not fond of killing, they

respect karma. This old monk is clearly trying to protect Jiang Chen, that's why he killed someone as a warning."

"It's a pity for that Ninth Grade Combat King. However, it serves him right. No one can challenge the authority of a Saint."

.....

Everyone were shocked by the sudden turn of events, and their eyes were now filled with awe as they looked at Great Master Ran Feng, unable to help it. As they were faced with such a powerful Buddhist, no one dared to act rashly.

"I never thought Great Master Ran Feng was such an unyielding man."

Tan Lang couldn't help but sigh. In his impression, people on the Path of Buddhism were all amiable people who weren't fond of killing. Also, as he had spent quite some time with Great Master Ran Feng before, he was aware that Great Master Ran Feng was an old man who was rather easy to get along with. However, it looked like he was completely wrong.

"Buddhism stresses the principles of karma. During the battle between Buddhism and devils many years ago, they had already gotten used to killing. However, they aren't addicted to slaughter, they only kill someone when it is necessary. Great Master Ran Feng is the disciple of Ancestor Greenlotus, that's why he is also an unyielding man."

Jiang Chen smiled. Many years ago when Ancestor Greenlotus was traveling the world, he would always put his hand in all unjust matters, helping those who needed it and killed those he didn't like. If he wasn't an unyielding man, he wouldn't have become friends with Jiang Chen, who was like a god of slaughter.

In that instant, the faces of everyone from the Heavenly Sect became unsightly. Even Elder Yuan didn't expect this amiable old monk to be such an aggressive man, killing someone without even saying a word.

“Great Master, even if you are from the Great Leiyin Temple, I don't think you should go too far in bullying others. We, the Heavenly Sect just want an answer for that.”

A Second Grade Combat Emperor from the Heavenly Sect angrily said. After all, they were from the Heavenly Sect. Although their sect couldn't compare with the Great Leiyin Temple, they were still one of the major powers in the Western Region. It was only natural that he would feel gloomy upon seeing his own ally being killed by someone else, even more so in such a light manner.

However, before this man could finish speaking, Elder Yuan quickly pulled him back and made him stand behind him. At the same time, he scolded the man, “Do you really want to die?”

After that, Elder Yuan bowed deeply toward Great Master Ran Feng, and with a loud voice, he said, “Great Master, you're a man with a prestigious status. I'm sure you won't make things difficult for us, who are just a group of small-fries. Let's forget everything that happened today. From today onwards, we, the Heavenly Sect

will never give trouble to Jiang Chen and your disciple.”

After saying that, Elder Yuan left the place with all of the Heavenly Sect’s men. No one dared stay even one more second in this place.

Seeing this, a smile was brought upon Jiang Chen’s face. Elder Yuan was a clever man; he knew that if he didn’t stop nagging, he would most likely be killed by Great Master Ran Feng’s divine sense.

“Sigh... I never expected this matter to be left unsettled. The Heavenly Sect sent so many Combat Emperors here, but all of them were scared off by a single thread of divine sense.”

“You know nothing. That old monk is extremely formidable, he even killed a Ninth Grade Combat King with just a single look. How can those people of the Heavenly Sect deal with him? I’m guessing this old monk is much stronger than the strongest Minor Saint of the Heavenly Sect. The Heavenly Sect just can’t afford to offend this old monk.”

“That’s right. Even if this old monk doesn’t come from the Great Leiyin Temple, the Heavenly Sect still can’t afford to offend him. That’s why they had to settle this matter by leaving it unsettled. It’s a pity that all our belongings were robbed, we won’t have the chance to get it back now.”

.....

Everyone were still immersed in shock. No one had thought this was how today's incident would end, and no one expected the three bandits to have such a powerful background; so strong that even the Heavenly Sect couldn't afford to offend them.

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Great Master Ran Feng and said, "Great Master, thank you for saving us."

"Little friend Jiang Chen, don't mention it. I can guarantee your safety in the Western Region, but once you leave, I will not provide you any protection. I have a small Spatial Gate with me here, it can transport you straight to the Xuan Region."

After saying that, Great Master Ran Feng took out an illusionary looking Spatial Gate and pilled it open. After that, he grabbed the trio and threw them straight into the Spatial Gate, then closed it up immediately afterwards.

From this, one could tell that Great Master Ran Feng also wished for these three guys to leave the Western Region as soon as possible. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to have a peace of mind. He could easily tell, after his disciple met with Jiang Chen, both men became like two ruthless overlords. If they continued staying in the Western Region, they would wreak havoc in the sacred land of Buddhism.

"Little men, start from the Xuan Region, and grow slowly."

A smile emerged on Great Master Ran Feng's face, and one could see that he was looking forward to something from the expression

in his eyes. He was looking forward to the future. After sending Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Tan Lang into the Spatial Gate, Great Master Ran Feng vanished into thin air as well. Peace had once again returned to this place, as if nothing had happened just now.

Chapter 556 - Death Of Zhuang Fan

In the sky above a wilderness in the Western Region. The Elders of the Heavenly Sect all wore gloomy expressions. The Second Grade Combat Emperor who spoke loudly to Great Master Ran Feng previously looked very angry, “Elder Yuan, do we, the Heavenly Sect really have to swallow this without doing anything?!”

“What else do you think we can do? As just a thread of divine sense, that old monk killed a Ninth Grade Combat King! His combat strength is far more frightening than I expected. Even if all the Minor Saint from the Heavenly Sect attacked him together, I’m afraid they won’t be a match for that old monk. Also, it’s highly possible that he is backed by the Great Leiyin Temple. We can’t afford to offend someone like this.”

Elder Yuan glared at the Second Grade Combat Emperor. If he hadn’t stopped this Second Grade Combat Emperor just now and allowed him to continue speaking, he might end up the same as that Ninth Grade Combat King. Offending the authority of a Saint was no different from courting death.

“That Jiang Chen has obtained tremendous benefits this time, it’s hard to accept that he can just walk away like that.”

The Second Grade Combat Emperor sighed. After listening to Elder Yuan’s words, he too felt he had been too impulsive just now. He felt slightly panicked at this moment, as offending the authority of a Saint was no different from courting death.

“No matter what, we can’t just let go of the matter like this. We can’t afford to offend that old monk, and we can’t afford to offend the Great Leiyin Temple either. However, I have a feeling that Jiang Chen isn’t from the Western Region. Let’s find out the roots of this matter once we return.”

Elder Yuan’s eyes lit up. He was a man who thought deeply and planned carefully. Although they couldn’t do anything to Jiang Chen right now, he wanted to find out about his background.

.....

On the other side, the trio were travelling through a narrow spatial tunnel. The spatial gate was very stable, and it could send them directly to the Xuan Region, which was very far away from the Western Region.

“I never thought Great Master Ran Feng was such a frightening man. This is the first time in my life I’ve seen someone kill a Ninth Grade Combat King with just a single look. It’s too shocking, it’s simply beyond any words.”

Tan Lang was still thinking about Great Master Ran Feng’s mighty display. Killing a Ninth Grade Combat King with just a single look, it was such an awe-inspiring scene! If not for him seeing it himself, he wouldn’t have believed it at all. It was just like a dream.

“Great Master Ran Feng is a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, just one step away from the Great Saint realm, making him a supreme

warriors standing at the pinnacle. He has comprehended the Saint Laws, so no ordinary warriors can compare with him.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He was well aware of how strong a Ninth Grade Minor Saint was, because he himself stayed at that level for quite a long period of time.

“Master has absorbed the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, increasing his chance of breaking through to the Great Saint realm.

Tyrant said.

“Great Saint! I wonder how strong those are.”

Tan Lang couldn't imagine that. A Great Saint was the strongest existence that stood at the pinnacle of this world. In the Divine Continent, perhaps only a place like the Pure Land would have a Great Saint. Of course, as the Western Region was like a world of its own, the Great Leiyin Temple did have Buddhists at the Great Saint realm. No one could ever begin to guess their actual ability.

“Nevertheless, this small spatial gate is pretty nice. I can actually travel directly through so many regions, sending us directly to the Xuan Region. Truly amazing!”

Tan Lang looked at the sturdy spatial tunnel around him and said in an impressed manner.

“Of course, this spatial gate was personally created by Ancestor Greenlotus. With Ancestor’s cultivation, let alone creating a small spatial gate, he could even travel to any place in the Saint Origin realm with just a thought. However, this spatial gate does have its limits, as it will become useless after being used a certain number of times.”

Tyrant worshipped Ancestor Greenlotus very much. In fact, it wasn’t just him. Throughout the entire Western Region, all Buddhist’s worshipped Ancestor Greenlotus.

Jiang Chen smiled. He was well aware of how frightening Ancestor Greenlotus was. It made sense that this small spatial was created by Ancestor Greenlotus, as with Great Master Ran Feng’s Ninth Grade Minor Saint cultivation, there was no way he could create a spatial gate like this.

The trio continued on inside the spatial tunnel. It was easy to imagine that once Jiang Chen and Tyrant returned, peace would no longer be an option for the Liang Province. Soon, blood would rain down from the skies.

.....

The Xuan Region covered a vast land. As one of the eighth major regions of the Divine Continent, although the Xuan Region wasn’t amongst the top strongest ones, it did have some powerful existences. There was more than one superpower with strength similar to the Heavenly Sect. This place had a lot of history, and it

had produced countless experts. In the Xuan Region, the Liang Province was considered nothing, as it was just the most insignificant province amongst the numerous province of the Xuan Region.

Xuan Region, Chen Clan. This name alone carried a tremendous weight like a mountain in the Xuan Region, as it was one of the biggest clans in the Xuan Region.

There were five powers who reigned supreme in the Xuan Region, and this Chen Clan was one of them. Although it was just a clan, it was able to be evenly matched with the sects. Thus, it wasn't difficult to imagine how powerful and rich this clan's foundations were.

Right at this moment, in the depths of the Chen Clan, within a serene courtyard, a young man wearing purple clothes could be seen sitting with his legs folded on top of a huge rock. This young man's eyes were shut tightly, and a layer of light was flickering around his body. His aura was becoming stronger with every passing second. He looked young, but his cultivation was shockingly strong. If someone with good experience was here, he would definitely find out that this young man was in the middle of breaking through to the Combat Emperor realm.

Pu!

The young man suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of black blood. That's right, the blood was black. When the clump of black blood touched the ground, a sizzling sound could immediately be heard, and a pungent smell arose.

“Young master Hao, more clogged blood is being forced out. It looks like you’ll soon be able to fully recover.”

At the same time, the space vibrated, and an old man was revealed. This old man wore a black robe, and he had a pair of deep eyes and a profound aura. The aura casually unleashed by him was so powerful that even Elder Yuan of the Heavenly Sect, who was a Fourth Grade Combat Emperor, could not be compared with him.

“Uncle Peng, do you have any news about Jiang Chen?”

The young man asked.

“Young Master Hao, ever since he was attacked by the Asura Palace, the Jiang Chen you’ve asked me to find has never appeared in public. Someone said that Jiang Chen had first gone through Heavenly Tribulation, and was then attacked by a Combat Emperor, both of which severely injured him. Perhaps he’s dead by now. Also, since he hasn’t shown up for such a long time, even if he is alive, his situation won’t be good either.”

The old man addressed as Uncle Peng said.

Hearing his words, two ferocious lights immediately leaked out from the young man’s eyes. “I owe him my life. Brother Jiang, I, Chen Zhihao will personally get revenge for you!”

If Jiang Chen was here, he would most likely not be able to

recognize this man. However, this young man would never forget about Jiang Chen. When Jiang Chen was wreaking havoc in the Freezing Hell Jail, there was a young dying man at one corner of it. He escaped the place at the last moment when Jiang Chen had shattered the entire Freezing Hell Jail. Without Jiang Chen, Chen Zhihao would most likely have died long ago in the Freezing Hell Jail.

The Asura Palace would never have dreamed that they had actually imprisoned a young master of the Chen Clan. If they knew this, they would definitely be terrified, while Li Tianyang would instantly begin fleeing for his life. No, he would have lost the courage to flee. Because in the Xuan Region, anyone the Chen Clan wanted dead would face inevitable death.

“Young Master Hao, it’s just a mere Asura Palace. If you want, I can destroy in one clean sweep straightaway, leaving no survivors behind. There is no need for young master to do it yourself. And you also don’t have to hide the truth of why you went missing for this period of time from your family.”

The old man said. However, he was well aware of this young master’s temper. He was a stubborn young man.

“No, I’ll settle my own matters. Once I’ve fully recovered from my injuries, I will personally annihilate that Asura Palace and avenge Brother Jiang!”

Chen Zhihao said with a firm attitude.

.....

On the other side, after the trio travelled for more than three hours, they finally walked out from the small spatial gate. It was worth mentioning that Great Master Ran Feng was incredible. He knew Jiang Chen was going to return to the Liang Province, so he sent them straight to the border of the Liang Province.

“This place seems familiar to me. Ahead of us is the Liang Province. I did stay here while I was bringing you to the Western Region, and I even killed a Tycoon here, as well as two geniuses from the Peerless Sword Faction and Invincible Sect.”

Tyrant said after taking a look at his surroundings.

“Liang Province... I never thought I would come back here while still alive.”

Tan Lang couldn't hold down his emotions. Whenever he thought everything that happened during this period of times, he would have a hard time calming down.

“Little Chen, what should we do now?”

Tyrant asked.

“Let's go to the Chaotic Ocean first and check out Zuang Fan's situation. All of us have left, so I think he must be having a hard time.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows when he mentioned Zhuang Fan. As he was cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill, he had some unknown sense he couldn't explain. He had a feeling something might have happened to Zhuang Fan.

"Alright, let's go to the Chaotic Ocean now."

Tyrant and Tan Lang agreed to Jiang Chen's situation. When they thought about Zhuang Fan's sad story, the two men felt really bad for him. What the Great Tycoon Xiao Nanfeng did was really hateful.

After that, the trio ripped apart space and traveled toward the Chaotic Ocean at top speed. In the evening, the three men had arrived at the edge of the Chaotic Ocean, and were immediately greeted by a powerful chaotic aura.

Jiang Chen and his friends disguised themselves. Without paying close attention, it would be rather difficult to recognize their true identities.

"Sigh... That Heavenhawk Island Master is so pitiful. His body has been hanging for four months. The Asura Palace has gone too far this time."

"That's right, this is too much. It's obvious that Jiang Chen has disappeared, and he's most likely dead."

“That Heavenhawk Island Master slandered the Great Tycoon, ruining his reputation, that’s why the Great Tycoon didn’t hold back. However, you should at least pay a little bit of respect to the man you killed. But instead, Xiao Nanfeng hung his corpse outside the Heavenhawk Island for a few months. This has really gone too far. Also, I have a feeling that the Island Master’s words are true, and not just slander.”

.....

Right when they arrived at the Chaotic Ocean, Jiang Chen immediately heard a discussion like this. He, Tyrant and Tan Lang’s expressions instantly changed. It looked like something really had happened to Zhuang Fan.

Swoosh!

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen arrived in front of those cultivators who were talking with each other.

“Hey, who are you? Don't get in my way!"

Seeing someone getting in their way, a man immediately said in an impatient manner.

Chapter 557 - Bloodbath On Heavenhawk Island

The Chaotic Ocean was a place with no rules present. Those who had the guts to make their living here were all people with bad temper. While this group of men were excitedly chatting with each other, someone actually came and blocked them. This no doubt stirred their temper.

“I’m Jiang Chen. What happened at Heavenhawk Island? Tell me everything in detail.”

Two sharp beams escaped from Jiang Chen’s eyes. As if those beams could pierce through a man’s heart, the man felt his soul trembling underneath Jiang Chen’s cold gaze. It was a fear that came from the very bottom of his heart. He had no doubts that as long as he said a single ‘no’ to this man, he would immediately be greeted with death.

"Jiang... Jiang Chen! You... you're not dead?"

The man stammered. This was a name that could make anyone frightened just from hearing it. A man who could attract Heavenly Tribulation; a man who could destroy the Freezing Hell Jail, Jiang Chen had left his awe-inspiring reputation in the Chaotic Ocean and Liang Province both. Nearly everyone knew his name. However, everything thought he was dead. Unexpectedly, after Jiang Chen disappeared for a few months, he had actually reappeared in the Chaotic Ocean.

“Tell us quickly, otherwise, I’ll release your soul from purgatory.

Tyrant arrived in front of the cultivators as well. In a flash, he removed his disguise, revealing his true self. Seeing the monk’s face, these cultivators immediately began trembling. This monk was easy to recognize, as he had a very special identity; the number one Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean! During the incident where a treasure at emerged at Heavenhawk Island, this monk had killed numerous disciples from all four major powers, and they had been hunting for him all this time. Now that this monk had appeared, the men were able to confirm that this was the real Jiang Chen as well.

“Young Master Jiang, Great Master, not longer after you disappeared from the Liang Province, the Asura Palace launched an attack. Xiao Nanfeng personally came to the Heavenhawk Island, and surprisingly, the Island Master didn’t run away, but instead chose to hide on the island. Someone who saw what happened that day said that once the Island Master saw Xiao Nanfeng, he went insane and began roaring at him. He didn’t escape, and was killed on the spot by Xiao Nanfeng. After that, his body was hung in the sky above the Heavenhawk Island. Later, when Xiao Nanfeng learned about the relationship between you and the Island Master, he made someone spread the news about the Island Master’s death, trying to lure you out. However, there weren’t any news from you.”

Without hesitating or hiding anything, the man quickly told Jiang Chen about what had happened on Heavenhawk Island. His friends were nodding their heads as he told the story, approving the authentication of the man’s words.

"Damn it!"

A ruthless glow flashed in Jiang Chen's eyes. After listening to the man's word, for some unknown reason, he felt as if a needle had been stabbed into his heart, and he couldn't wait to pull it out. He felt incredible angry and grieved at this moment. He had promised to help Zhuang Fan get revenge, but in the end, Zhuang Fan was killed before the score could be settled.

Especially when he heard how Zhuang Fan had gone insane on the spot, Jiang Chen could easily imagine how much hatred Zhuang Fan had toward Xiao Nanfeng. Zhuang Fan was unable to control his emotions upon meeting again with his greatest enemy. He didn't run away, because he knew it was meaningless to do that. He only had one more year to live, so it would be impossible for him to personally take revenge, thus he put all his hopes on Jiang Chen. However, as no one could tell whether or not Jiang Chen was still alive, it looked like he couldn't depend on Jiang Chen either. Thus, with all hope gone, he only wanted to die.

Zhuang Fan went insane. Perhaps the last line of defense in Zhuang Fan's heart was broken upon seeing Xiao Nanfeng, as it would bring up memories of his wife and son who were miserably killed.

At that moment, despair, hatred, helplessness, darkness, all kinds of negative emotions flooded his entire soul. He went insane. That was the last image he left in this world; insanity. This was a tragedy. He was a true man, a man who endured all the pain and transformed himself into a demon, just how much of an impact did Xiao Nanfeng have on him, to make him go insane upon seeing

him?

Everything was caused by Xiao Nanfeng, the Great Tycoon who pretended to be a person of high morals. He was the guy who destroyed a family; who completely destroyed a man.

“Fuck, I can’t stand this anymore!”

Tyrant cursed. Although he was a monk on the Path of Buddhism, he was also a man who held true to his emotions. Zhuang Fan’s misfortune made him really angry. That Xiao Nanfeng should be punished by being sliced into a thousand pieces!

“That scum! I really regret considering him my idol in the past!”

Tan Lang was furious as well. Up until now, from Xiao Nanfeng’s actions, anyone with a proper sense could easily tell that Zhuang Fan’s words were true.

"He is Tan Lang, he also didn't die!"

When the group saw Tan Lang, they were immediately able to recognize him as well. Tan Lang from the Asura Palace was also considered a famous man of the younger generation. However, he had been imprisoned in the Freezing Hell Jail, and had later disappeared with Jiang Chen. Many people believed Tan Lang to be dead as well. However, not only had he not died, he had reappeared, much stronger than he previously was.

“Is Xiao Nanfeng still on Heavenhawk Island now?”

Jiang Chen asked. He had decided to do what he hadn't done previously. Zhuang Fan was dead, but Jiang Chen still wanted to get revenge for him. Not only did he want to settle this score, he wanted it to be settled in a proper manner. Zhuang Fan couldn't die in vain, Jiang Chen had made a promise to him.

“No, he isn't there. After receiving no news from you, Xiao Nanfeng left. I heard he's in the middle of breaking through to the Combat Emperor realm, and is near success. Nevertheless, the Heavenhawk Island has been occupied by the Asura Palace. There are at least thirty disciples stationed in the island, three of them being tycoons. The man leading them is the Second Tycoon, Zhang Liang. He is an Eighth Grade Combat King; a very powerful man.”

The man said. Although Xiao Nanfeng had left, the Heavenhawk Island was still occupied by the Asura Palace, and Zhuang Fan's corpse was still hanging there; exposed to the sun and rain. It seemed like the Asura Palace wasn't willing to guess whether or not Jiang Chen was still alive, and was thus trying to use Zhuang Fan to lure him out.

“Little Chen, what is your plan?”

Tyrant asked

“I have to let Zhuang Fan's body rest in peace. Tonight, we'll bring a storm to the Chaotic Ocean and bathe the Heavenhawk Island with blood. I want no survivors of the Asura Palace on that

island.”

Jiang Chen’s killing intent soared up to the sky as he flew straight toward the Heavenhawk Island. Tyrant and Tan Lang looked at each other. Both of them knew Jiang Chen well. Jiang Chen was angry today, and once this man became angry, the consequences would be devastating. Imaginable, tonight, there would be no peace in the Chaotic Ocean. Tonight, the Heavenhawk Island would be painted in red.

In fact, it wasn’t just Jiang Chen; Tyrant and Tan Lang were extremely angry as well. They followed Jiang Chen to the Heavenhawk Island.

The Second Tycoon, an Eighth Grade Combat King. It was in the past, none of them would be a match for him. However, it was different now. Jiang Chen could kill Young Master Qi with ease, who was also an Eighth Grade Combat King. Thus, killing this Second Tycoon would be a piece of cake.

Staring into the direction those three men had disappeared into, the cultivators here were left with stunned expressions. In the next moment, a commotion broke out among them, and their expressions changed dramatically.

“Did you guys hear what he just said? Jiang Chen is going to kill those people on the Heavenhawk Island, he wants that island to be bathed in blood!”

“This is truly frightening! Not only is Jiang Chen not dead, he

has returned in such a mighty manner. He's going to save the Island Master. It looks like they really did have a close relationship."

"However, the Second Tycoon, Zhang Liang is a formidable Eighth Grade Combat King. Even though Jiang Chen is stronger than before, I don't think he will be a match for an Eighth Grade Combat King. Nevertheless, he is a man who can attract Heavenly Tribulation, so I suppose he has some cards up his sleeves."

"Let's go. We'll follow them and see what happens. I'm sure tonight will be a restless night for the Chaotic Ocean."

.....

These cultivators were shocked by the recent events. Without hesitating, they quickly began flying toward the Heavenhawk Island. There would a big show waiting for them tonight.

Whenever they passed by others, they would tell them all about Jiang Chen's return. The news quickly swept across the entire Chaotic Ocean like a raging tornado; incredibly fast. During the last few months, the entire Liang Province, especially the Chaotic Ocean, had been filled with conversations related to Jiang Chen. Now, with Jiang Chen having returned, a massive commotion broke out all over the place.

At this moment, huge groups of humans and sea demons were all seen flying toward the Heavenhawk Island. Once again, the still and quiet Heavenhawk Island had become the center of attention.

It was already nighttime, but the ocean wasn't completely dark. Moonlight could be seen rippling through the surface of the water, making it look like silvery sand; refreshing and beautiful. However, at this moment, Jiang Chen had no mood to appreciate the ocean's splendid scenery. Bringing Tyrant and Tan Lang along with him, they arrived outside the Heavenhawk Island. Even from afar, he could see a corpse hanging high up in the sky.

It was a corpse with a hawk's head and a human's body. It was supposed to be a burly body, but now, it looked extremely skinny and thin. All blood in the body had been drained, and numerous scary looking scars could be seen all over the body. The body was also covered in bloodstains that had long since dried up.

This was the corpse of Zhuang Fan. His eyes were tightly shut, and he had a serene look on his face. Perhaps death was a true release for him. That was why Jiang Chen hadn't helped prolong his life in the past. But now, although he had been released from the painful torture of life, he had died with regret.

"I'll compensate your regret. That grudge of yours, I, Jiang Chen will definitely settle it for you. One day, I'll make Xiao Nanfeng kneel down before your grave, and I'll offer his blood to the souls of you and your family."

While looking at the corpse in the distance, Jiang Chen said in a cold and detached manner. At the same time, a bright light flickered within his palm as the Heavenly Saint Sword appeared. It was a dazzling and mystical dragon's sword. Its body was filled with dragon marks, and there even a dragon's head that nearly

taken shape at its handle. It was a marvelous sword.

Buzz...

This was also a sword of slaughtering. The Heavenly Saint Sword and Jiang Chen's bloodline were interconnected. And, as if it had sensed the killing intent emanating from Jiang Chen's body, the sword began trembling violently, producing a deafening noise. The sword's body began glowing in a red light; a sign of its thirst for blood. It would claim someone's life the moment it was used in the upcoming fight.

It was rare for Jiang Chen to use the Heavenly Saint Sword right off the bat. But today, he was truly angry. He wanted to kill someone without any delay; he wanted to let the Heavenly Saint Sword drink blood.

"Monk, Tan Lang, you two guard the borders of the island. Today, I'll bathe the entire Heavenhawk Island with blood, and I will leave no survivors."

Jiang Chen said to the two men with an extremely cold voice.

Chapter 558 - Killing A Man With Every Three Steps, Swinging The Sword Mercilessly

Jiang Chen moved. With the Heavenly Saint Sword in hand, he strode forward.

Boom!

With just one step, the space had shattered, producing a ground-shaking explosive sound. Like a sudden clap of thunder, the loud boom spread across dozens of miles, allowing everyone within this region to hear it loud and clear; shaking their hearts. A towering killing intent burst out from Jiang Chen's body, transforming into a blood red beam that shot into the clouds; brightening the entire night sky.

Some people who stayed the closest to the Heavenhawk Island had arrived and witnessed this. Many people then laid their eyes on Jiang Cen's face, some even recognizing him. At this moment, Jiang Chen was no longer disguised.

“Look, it's Jiang Chen! He really has returned! The rumor about him returning and wanting to bathe the Heavenhawk Island in blood is real!”

“What a powerful aura, he is so much stronger than he was a few months ago! He looks like a god of war now!”

“He’s doing this for the sake the Island Master. The Asura Palace has gone too far in this matter.”

“The Heavenhawk Island has been quiet for quite some time now, and it’s going to become lively again today. The devil incarnate, Jiang Chen has returned, together with that shameless monk. I’m afraid the Liang Province is going to be in chaos again. I just wonder if the Jiang Chen can deal with the Second Tycoon. After all, Zhang Liang is an Eighth Grade Combat King!”

.....

Jiang Chen’s aura was just too strong, and upon returning, he immediately caused such a huge ruckus. No one were able to remain calm after knowing where he was going.

Under the eyes of countless people, Jiang Chen moved toward the Heavenhawk Island step by step. With every step he took, his killing intent would become stronger; striking terror into people’s hearts.

"Who is that? How dare you?!"

Right at this moment, a loud shut rang out from the Heavenhawk Island. After that, a few figures flew out from the island. The leading man was a First Grade Combat King, while the rest were all Peak Combat Soul warriors. Each of them wore the same proud and arrogant expression that was unique to disciples from major sects, while portraying a look saying they were going to rip the invader into pieces. Currently, the Heavenhawk Island was the

Asura Palace's stronghold in the Chaotic Ocean, and it was designated by the Great Tycoon. Throughout the entire Liang Province, who would dare be disrespectful to the Asura Palace? As that was no different from courting death.

Swoosh!

The disciple from the Asura Palace was met with a dazzling sword beam. It was a sword beam that emitted a dazzling golden light, and it illuminated the sky as it ripped through space, charging toward the disciple.

"What?!"

The disciples cried out in shock; the last sound he ever left in this world. The sword sliced from top to bottom, cutting his body in half, killing him on the spot. When faced with this sword beam, a First Grade Combat King wouldn't have the chance to fight back.

This scene greatly terrified the remaining Combat Soul disciples. Their faces immediately turned pale, and their hearts were filled with terror. They stared at the uninvited guest in disbelief, unable to believe that there was someone who dared to kill a man from the Asura Palace. This was one brave man.

"I'm Jiang Chen. I'm not dead, and I've returned."

Although Jiang Chen's voice wasn't loud, it was sent out with a strong soundwave, so it was heard clearly by every single person in

this area. He, Jiang Chen, hadn't died, and he had returned.

“Jiang Chen, he's that Jiang Chen! He really hasn't died, and he has returned!”

“He has become even stronger! Hurry up, we need to inform the Second Tycoon right away! Otherwise, none of us will be able to stop this Jiang Chen!”

.....

The disciples of the Asura Palace were extremely shocked. Previously, whenever they thought about the injuries Jiang Chen had been inflicted, they thought he had most likely died. But surprisingly, Jiang Chen had returned, and he had even killed a Combat King upon returning.

At this moment, the entire Heavenhawk Island was brought into a chaotic situation. The death of that First Grade Combat King made the Combat Soul disciples unable to control themselves, causing them to begin backing off. Their eyes laid on the sword in Jiang Chen's hand, fearing that Jiang Chen might attack them as well.

Jiang Chen didn't look at these disciples, but once again moved his glance over to Zhuang Fan's corpse in the sky. He roughly estimated the distance between them, then said with an indifferent tone, “Kill a man with every three steps. Brother Zhuang Fan, watch this, I'll use the blood of these men to wash away the grief in your soul.”

Jiang Chen moved again. He took another three steps forward at a very slow pace, then he was his sword, slicing another disciple in half.

Based on Jiang Chen's calculations, if he continued walking like this, it would take him one hundred steps to reach Zhuang Fan. There were around thirty men on the Heavenhawk Island right now, and he decided to kill one man with every three steps so that when he finally reached Zhuang Fan, every Asura Palace disciple on the island would have been killed. He would use their deaths to console Zhuang Fan's soul.

With the third strike, another man was killed. No one could dodge Jiang Chen's sword. It was a life claiming sword. As long as you were picked by it, death was inevitable. There was no way you could escape from it. Whenever the Heavenly Saint Sword was swung through the air, a man would die, and he wouldn't even be able to make a cry before dying.

“We need help quickly! Jiang Chen has returned!”

The remaining disciples were greatly terrified as they furiously roared out.

“This is absurd! Jiang Chen, it's surprising to see that you're still alive, and even more that you have the guts to come here. It looks like the Great Tycoon's prediction was correct. However, since you were brave enough to reveal yourself today, I'll make today the anniversary of your death!”

Right at this moment, a young man flew out from the Heavenhawk Island. It was a man with an extremely tyrannical bearing. The aura surrounding his body was so powerful that no one could stare right into his face. He was one of the Thirteen Tycoons, a Sixth Grade Combat King! In a place like the Liang Province, this was considered extremely frightening.

Upon seeing the arrival of this man, it was as if those Combat Soul disciples had found their backbone. Each of them were immediately excited. A Sixth Grade Combat King arrived, and he would for sure stop, or even kill Jiang Chen; avenging their fellow disciples who had been killed by Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

But unfortunately, the Tycoon was greeted with the same sword as the rest; a sword strike that looked rather simple. Although it was apparently just a simple sword beam, the Tycoon felt that there was no way he could dodge it, and could only helplessly watch as the sword beam approached him. However, he was after all a Sixth Grade Combat King who owned a bag full of incredible tricks, he managed to launch a counter-attack with all his strength at the most critical moment.

Unfortunately, although he had tried his best to put up a fight, there was no way he could be a match for the Heavenly Saint Sword. Compared to the others, he was slightly better off, because he could actually let out a miserable shriek as his body was sliced in half by the Heavenly Saint Sword!

“What?! Killing a Sixth Grade Combat King with just one attack?! Heavens! How strong is this Jiang Chen really? He only disappeared for a few months, but that allowed him to grow to such an incredible level?!”

“If my judgment is correct, Jiang Chen is a Fifth Grade Combat King now. When he was still a First Grade Combat King, he had the ability to kill Fourth Grade Combat Kings. And now that he has become a Fifth Grade Combat King, it is only natural that he can kill a Sixth Grade Combat King like it is nothing. It looks like only the Second Tycoon has a chance of defeating this Jiang Chen now.”

“A Sixth Grade Combat King has just been killed, and the Asura Palace has lost one more Tycoon now. Jiang Chen is too strong, and looking at how he is behaving, I think he’s going to kill every single man from the Asura Palace that are on the Heavenhawk Island today.”

.....

More and more people were arriving at this place. Jiang Chen killing a Sixth Grade Combat King with just a single strike had amazed countless people. The incredible display could even be compare to when Great Master Ran Feng killed a Ninth Grade Combat King with a single look.

Tap, tap, tap!

Showing no mercy, Jiang Chen took another three steps forward.

Then, he raised the sword in his hand high up into the air, locked down on a man with his eyes, and forcefully swing his sword.

All the disciples were so terrified they nearly pissed their pants. Even a Sixth Grade Combat King was killed, how could they still have any desire to fight this man? Without hesitating, they quickly turned around and flurried back to the Heavenhawk Island.

Arghh!

Another miserable shriek rang through the air, as another man was sliced in half and died on the spot. It proved that whoever Jiang Chen wished to kill would not be able to escape.

Argh! Arghh! Arghhh!

Jiang Chen moved at a quicker pace, and he had soon taken another thirty steps. Without any accidents, he killed a man with every three steps he took. The entire sky was filled with blood, the blood of the Asura Palace's disciples. Right at this moment, the Heavenhawk Island was like hell on earth, while Jiang Chen was the devil wielding a sword of doom; restlessly harvesting all life he came into contact with.

All the spectators outside the Heavenhawk Island were filled with great terror just from watching the scene. Thus, it was even worse for those disciple of the Asura Palace who were trapped inside.

Arghh!

Another miserable shriek was heard. It came from a Fifth Grade Combat King as he died. Now, more than half of the disciples from the Asura Palace present had died. All Sixth and Fifth Grade Combat Kings were dead, and no one had the courage to step up and fight this evil.

“Quick, go get the Second Tycoon! Only he can stop this ferocious guy!”

Someone shouted out loudly. As the Second Tycoon didn't have much to do when he was here, he usually spent his time in secluded cultivation.

However, since the Heavenhawk Island was in such a messy situation, even if he was in deep secluded cultivation, he would have been alerted by now. Finally, an extremely powerful aura rose into the skies from the inner area of the Heavenhawk Island. A young man wearing white clothes showed himself. He looked to be in his early thirties, and had a burly body, which seemed comparable to Nangong Wentian's.

After this young man arrived, he immediately took out a razor sharp golden blade. He smelled the pungent smell of blood, and saw the corpses of the Asura Palace's disciples. Each of them were sliced in half, no exceptions.

Boom!

The man was instantly enraged. As one of the four major powers of the Liang Province, the Asura Palace had not once suffered such a great loss, and nobody had ever dared kill those from the Asura Palace. A scene like this was unimaginable.

“Second Tycoon, that’s him, he is Jiang Chen! He hasn’t died, and he just killed many of our people!”

Upon seeing the arrival of the Second Tycoon, all those disciples who were scared to the point of their souls nearly leaving their bodies immediately sighed out in relief. Some even pointed at Jiang Chen and shouted. They believed that with the Second Tycoon’s strength, he could definitely capture Jiang Chen. There would no longer be any accidents; their lives were now safe.

Chapter 559 - Leaving No Survivors

The Second Tycoon Zhang Liang had finally shown up. His gaze was so cold it could even kill an elephant. He had locked down on Jiang Chen who has standing right opposite of him, and his killing intent was gradually rising.

“Are you the one who did all this?”

Zhang Liang already knew the answer to his own question, but he still asked. He had no idea where Jiang Chen had found the courage to make him come to a stronghold of the Asura Palace and kill so many disciples. This was unprecedented in the entire Liang Province, and throughout the entire Liang Province, perhaps Jiang Chen was the only person with such courage.

“The Sect Tycoon has finally shown up. I wonder if he can kill Jiang Chen.”

“Let’s just wait and see; the real show has just begun. If the Second Tycoon fails to kill Jiang Chen, the Heavenhawk Island will become a burial ground for all these disciples of the Asura Palace today.”

Jiang Chen is too ruthless and fierce. He and the Asura Palace have become irreconcilable enemies, he won’t even blink when killing anyone from the Asura Palace. That’s just as it should be, because if he is captured by those disciple of the Asura Palace, he won’t be facing any good consequences.”

.....

More and more people were gathering around the Heavenhawk Island. Although the Chaotic Ocean was always in a chaotic state, a chaotic situation in the middle of the night was still a rare incident. The dark and windy night made it a perfect time for slaughter.

“I’ll only need to swing my sword once to kill you.”

Jiang Chen raised the Heavenly Saint Sword. The sword’s body was filled with dragon mark, and the handle had even transformed into a ferocious looking dragon’s head. However, this dragon head wasn’t corporeal, and had only appeared there because of the Dragon Transformation skill. There was still a huge room for improvement for the Heavenly Saint Sword, as it was being constantly tempered by the Dragon Transformation skill. If Jiang Chen could find the remaining four pieces of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it would become a truly mystical weapon.

"What shameless boasting!"

The Second Tycoon shouted out. He too raised his weapon high up into the air, then he took a step forward and forcefully swung it from top to bottom. The frightening King Weapon immediately ripped apart the surrounding space. If this strike hit its target, the consequences would be devastating.

However, faced with this Second Tycoon’s strike, Jiang Chen’s expression didn’t even change a bit. With his current strength, An

Eighth Grade Combat King could no longer pose any threat to him. When he was in the Devil Realm, even that Young Master Qi was killed by him. Now, he had taken out the frightening Heavenly Saint Sword, and his Dragon Transformation skill was circulating at an insane speed. He was confident that with a full force strike of his, he would be able to kill Zhang Liang in an instant.

Boom!

A powerful golden energy burst out from Jiang Chen's body, and his tremendous aura transformed into a vast golden ocean; lighting up the entire night sky brightly. A thick blood red dragon also shot out from Jiang Chen's head, it was completely formed from his qi and blood. The blood dragon jumped into the Heavenly Saint Sword, causing it to let out a loud cry and tremble.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen's Dragon Transformation skill was circulating at top speed. One after another, all the Dragon Marks in his body began issuing cries. As the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, Jiang Chen's skill with the sword was unparalleled. He had no completely synchronized himself with the Heavenly Saint Sword, bringing himself and the sword to a perfect state.

Everyone were shocked by this scene, even Tyrant and Tan Lang were struck with great awe. Jiang Chen's weapon was incredibly powerful, and it was a perfect match for Jiang Chen. Compared to when Jiang Chen fought Young Master Qi in the Devil Realm, his aura was now much stronger. The formidable Young Master Qi couldn't even withstand a single strike from Jiang Chen then. Thus, Tyrant had no doubts that a single strike from Jiang Chen

would definitely kill Zhang Liang.

Aouuu!

A dragon's roar could be heard from the Heavenly Saint Sword. It was so loud that both heaven and earth was shaking. The roar rippled through the night sky, startling all those who heard it. Under countless terrified eyes, the Heavenly Saint Sword sliced through the sky.

Clang!

The Second Tycoon's weapon collided with the Heavenly Saint Sword, revealing a scene that no one present could ever forget. In any case, the Second Tycoon's saber was a powerful King Weapon, and it was used by an Eighth Grade Combat King, so it was only natural that it carried a devastating force. However, what happened in front of everyone was not what they had expected. When the frightening King Weapon collided with the Heavenly Saint Sword, it instantly shattered into two pieces; unable to withstand even a single blow!

"WHAT?!"

Zhang Liang cried out in shock as his body was hit by a tremendous backlash, causing him to be knocked by dozens of steps. A mouthful of blood was forced out from his mouth as well.

Shocking, it was extremely shocking! He couldn't what had just

happened. His shocked was even stronger than Young Master Qi's in the Devil Realm. Zhang Liang was well aware of his powerful his saber was, but it had been instantly destroyed by his enemy. This was like a nightmare for him, he had no idea how much force was required to destroy his King Weapon so easily.

Swoosh!

Zhang Liang's weapon was destroyed, but the Heavenly Saint Sword didn't slow down at all. It transformed into a dazzling trail of light, and appeared above Zhang Liang's head in the blink of an eye.

"NOO!"

Zhang Liang let out a heartbreaking shriek. He sensed an unprecedented danger; a threat to his very own life. Right at this moment, he could feel death looming above him. He knew that in this current situation, even if he was to put up a fight with all his strength, he would still be unable to escape from death. There was no way he could dodge this sword; it was too late for him to escape.

Arghh!

Puchi!

This was the end. Zhang Liang didn't have too much time to ponder. He let out one last miserable shriek before he was killed by the Heavenly Saint Sword. He faced the same ending as all the

other disciples of the Asura Palace; having his body sliced in half. Blood filled the air, and the pungent smell of blood lingering in the air became stronger.

There was something stronger than the smell of blood; the atmosphere of panic and terror. Everyone from the Asura Palace were stupefied by what they saw, and their mouths were wide open, not knowing how to react. The Second Tycoon, an Eighth Grade Combat King had been killed, just like that. Nothing could be more shocking than this.

“Heavens! What happened just now? Can someone tell me this isn’t real?”

“What kind of sword is he holding?! It can easily be compare with an Emperor Weapon! The King Weapon used by an Eighth Grade Combat King was just destroyed by it; it’s too powerful! Though, it’s a pity that a King Weapon was destroyed just like that.”

“Is he really just a Fifth Grade Combat King? Can a Fifth Grade Combat King really be this strong? Killing an Eighth Grade Combat King in just seconds, slicing him in half... is he really a human?”

“He is indeed a peerless genius. He is a manor who can attract Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm, so it’s only natural that is an extremely abnormal monster. We can’t use normal standards to judge this man.”

.....

Everyone were greatly terrified, there was no way they could remain calm. The scene had truly shaken the hearts of everyone present.

Tyrant and Tan Lang's eyes were glued to the sword in Jiang Chen's hand. They had seen Jiang Chen use it in the Devil Realm before, and had even seen him using it when they first met in the Chaotic Ocean. However, they never thought this sword could be so frightening.

“The Natal Combat Weapon is just as abnormal as its master. From head to toe, this guy is a complete monster!”

Tyrant said with a sigh, while Tan Lang only shook his head with a smile. When Jiang Chen was fighting the Demon King Palace in the Southern Continent, Tan Lang had already witnessed the frightening abilities of this monster.

After killing Zhang Liang with a single swing of his sword, Jiang Chen took another three steps forward. Tiny spatial cracks could be seen spreading underneath his feet. He turned his eyes to Zhuang Fan's body, his heart filled with fury.

Only now did the remaining disciples of the Asura Palace wake up from their shock. Their faces were extremely pale, and their bodies were trembling violently. They could do nothing but stare at this devil in front of them. No one could imagine what kind of fate was waiting for them.

Jiang Chen wasn't bothered by all of this. He was very angry now, and only wanted to offer the blood of these people to Zhuang Fan's soul. The Heavenly Saint Sword moved once more, and another man was sliced in half.

"Run!"

"Inform the elders about this!"

Someone suddenly shouted out. The remaining disciples dared not hesitate, and they all crazily began fleeing in all directions. They knew that if they all chose the same direction, none of them would be able to escape.

If they fled in different directions, they would still have a chance to survive. After all, no matter how strong Jiang Chen was, he was all alone. He might be able to catch up to some of them, but the rest would not have time to run away.

But unfortunately, they had completely forgotten about Tyrant and Tan Lang who were standing outside the Heavenhawk Island. Their fates had been decided since the beginning. Even without Tyrant and Tan Lang, no man Jiang Chen wanted to kill could ever escape from him.

Jiang Chen continued onwards while swinging the sword in his hand. Each swing would always claim the life of someone. Even those Combat Kings who had managed to escape into the voice were unable to escape their fates; it was impossible for them to escape.

Outside the Heavenhawk Island, a man was intercepted by Tyrant when he had just left the island. The disciple was instantly struck with despair, and was killed by Tyrant with just a single palm strike. The same thing happened to the other man. Before he could feel relief from escaping, he was intercepted by Tan Lang. This disciple was a First Grade Combat King.

He was startled upon seeing Tan Lang, but shortly afterwards, he was able to recognize him.

“Tan Lang... no, senior disciple Tan, you’re still alive! This is great! Since we’re from the same sect, please let me go!”

The disciple’s body was trembling violently as he talked. He was greatly terrified. As long as he could stay alive, he wouldn’t even mind kneeling down before Tan Lang.

“I’m no longer a disciple of the Asura Palace, so there isn’t any relationship between us. Also, you and I are supposed to be enemies. I can still remember how you bullied me back in the days.”

A cold smile emerged on Tan Lang’s face. Without hesitating, he mercilessly struck the disciple with his palm, killing him on the spot. Ever since the day he was thrown into the Freezing Hell Jail, the relationship between him and the Asura Palace had come to an end. All the sentiment he had toward this sect had vanished, and was completely replaced with a deep and profound hatred. In fact, he came back with the intention of retaliation. Now, by personal

killing an old enemy of his, he could finally vent a little bit of the resentment stuck in his heart.

In just a few minutes, peace had once again returned to the Heavenhawk Island. Without exception, all of the disciples stationed on this island were killed.

Chapter 560 - Can't Even Be Stopped By Ninth Grade Combat Kings

Silence reigned in the atmosphere above the ocean. It was as if the entire ocean had stopped moving, as no waves could be seen at all. The pungent smell of blood lingered in the air, and even the night breeze had stopped blowing. Every spectator in this area felt extremely uncomfortable.

Everyone were holding their breath. Many people had gathered around the Heavenhawk Island, but no one had the courage to make any noise. The Heavenhawk Island had truly been bathed in blood now. It was a huge loss for the Asura Palace! Three of their tycoons had been killed, including their Second Tycoon, who was an Eighth Grade Combat King. Also, they hadn't just lost these genius disciples, they had also lost their face. After all, it was the first time an incident like this had taken place in the Liang Province. As one of the four major powers, no one had ever dared to offend the disciples of the Asura Palace.

Jiang Chen slowly put the Heavenly Saint Sword away. He didn't take a second look at those corpses, but instead, he took a step forward, arriving in front of Zhuang Fan. He waved his hand, unleashing a bright beam which released Zhuang Fan. After that, Jiang Chen's Yuan energy became gentle as it covered Zhuang Fan, making him float in the air.

“Zhuang Fan, I'll do what I promise you I'd do. Once I've killed Xiao Nanfeng, I'll bring you back to Green City and let you rest in peace.”

Jiang Chen murmured. He took out a storage ring and placed Zhuang Fan's body into it. Initially, he planned on finding a place to bury Zhuang Fan's body, but after some thoughts, he felt that if he buried him just like that, Zhuang Fan wouldn't be able to rest in peace in his grave. Also, Zhuang Fan wouldn't want to be buried in some random place, he still had a family. So, Jiang Chen made a decision. Once he killed Xiao Nanfeng, fulfilling Zhuang Fan's wish, he would find the graves of Zhuang Fan's wife and son and bury them together, allowing them to reunite.

“Now that Jiang Chen has killed so many people from the Asura Palace, I'm sure those powerful warriors of the Asura Palace has found out. He's going to face serious consequences. If a Combat Emperor strikes personally, no matter how frightening Jiang Chen is, there is no way he can fight against such formidable warriors.”

“You don't know about this yet? There aren't any Combat Emperors in the Asura Palace at the moment.”

“What happened? I thought the Palace Chief, Li Tianyang and the Great Elder were both Combat Emperors?”

“It seems you really don't know about it. It isn't just the Asura Palace, even all the other three major powers have no Combat Emperors residing within. The leader of the four major powers have all come to an agreement, they are to bring the number one genius of each sect to Mount Luoxia and have all four geniuses fight each other to decide who the number one genius of the Liang Province will be, as it might motivate them to break through to the Combat Emperor realm. I heard that the number one genius will even be taken in by one of the Xuan Region's superpowers. This is

a rare opportunity, so the Combat Emperors of the four major powers all brought their genius to Mount Luoxia. I don't think they'll return for at least a few days."

"I see. However, although they don't have any Combat Emperors at the moment, I suppose they still have quite a few Ninth Grade Combat Kings. If they came, they might be able to deal with Jiang Chen."

.....

All the spectators began discussing. A major incident had just occurred, so it was impossible for the Asura Palace to remain indifferent. If they didn't kill Jiang Chen, the Asura Palace would become the entire Liang Province's laughingstock. A few months ago, the Asura Palace's reputation had been washed down the drain after Jiang Chen destroyed the Freezing Hell Jail, and now, one of their strongholds had been completely destroyed by Jiang Chen, and all their men had been killed. This matter was no longer just about reputation.

After Jiang Chen put away Zhuang Fan's corpse, he turned his glance over to the Heavenhawk Island. He waved his hand, revealing the Heavenly Saint Sword once more.

"You're the original owner of this island. Since you're now dead, I'll destroy this island as well."

After saying that, the Heavenly Saint Sword began trembling once more. Countless golden sword beams shot out from it,

charging toward different buildings on the island.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

At that moment, the entire night sky was filled with dazzling sword beams. Each beam looked like a shooting star as they fell down from the sky at an incredible speed.

Boom!

The ground began shaking as all buildings on the Heavenhawk Island were brought to a devastating state. They were completely destroyed by the sword beams unleashed by Jiang Chen. A large amount of dust billowed up into the sky. In just a few breaths time, all buildings on the Heavenhawk Island had been turned into ruins.

From now on, there would no longer be a Heavenhawk Island in the Chaotic Ocean. This island had become history together with Zhuang Fan. Jiang Chen's actions would definitely leave a deep mark in the Chaotic Ocean's history.

Tyrant and Tan Lang arrived next to Jiang Chen. Tyrant said, "Little Chen, before we plan our next move, I suggest we leave this place. I'm sure our actions have alerted the powerful warriors of the Asura Palace."

As a matter of fact, when the trio returned from the Western Region, their initial plan was to stay low. They disguised

themselves and planned to meet up with Zhuang Fan first. As for the scores with the Asura Palace and the other three major powers, they would still need more time to consider before coming to a decision. However, out of their expectations, something huge had happened, and it ended up stirring Jiang Chen's anger. In the end, not only were they unable to stay low, they even caused a tremendous commotion.

"Alright, let's go."

Jiang Chen nodded his head, preparing to leave the Chaotic Ocean.

Right at this moment, two powerful auras could be felt approaching them from afar. In the blink of an eye, the two figures had arrived. When they saw the Heavenhawk Island's current state, their expressions changed dramatically. Not long before this, they had received a message. Knowing that Jiang Chen had returned and was killing everyone here, and that Jiang Chen had even killed the Second Tycoon, they immediately rushed over. However, they were still too late. Everyone were dead, and even the Heavenhawk Island had been destroyed.

These two old men were both Ninth Grade Combat Kings. One of them was Elder Liu who sat beside Xiao Nanfeng that time, and the other was another Elder of the Asura Palace. Just like someone had previously said, Li Tianyang and the Great Elder had brought Xiao Nanfeng to Mount Luoxia. Thus, these two Ninth Grade Combat Kings were the strongest warriors the Asura Palace had.

Swoosh!

When the two men arrived, they immediately looked at Jiang Chen and his friends' faces, and they were immediately enraged.

In the Combat King realm, although Ninth Grade Combat King was just a step above the eighth, the gap between them was extremely huge.

"Jiang Chen, you're not dead yet?!"

Elder Liu shouted as he angrily stared at Jiang Chen.

"Disappointed to see me again, aren't you?"

Jiang Chen just smiled. He never took either of these men seriously. If the Asura Palace only sent two Ninth Grade Combat Kings here, there was no way they could stop him. With his current strength, he could kill an Eighth Grade Combat King with ease, but he still wasn't a match for a Ninth Grade Combat King.

However, it was impossible for Ninth Grade Combat Kings to kill Jiang Chen as well. Under the situation where Jiang Chen used his Spatial Shift, unless there was a Combat Emperor here, there was no one who could stop him. If Jiang Chen wanted to leave, these two Ninth Grade Combat Kings could only watch him do so.

"Tan Lang, I never expected you to still be alive as well. As a disciple of the Asura Palace, you actually chose to betray us! You're truly abominable!"

The other Elder scolded upon seeing Tan Lang.

“You old fool, who gave you the right to judge whether or not I am a traitor? Do you not know how the Asura Palace treated me? Should I be grateful when you’re all trying to kill me? Let me tell you, there is no longer any relationship between me, Tan Lang and the Asura Palace. No, that’s incorrect, we do have a relationship, but it’s a hostile one.”

Tan Lang said out loudly. His heart was filled with anger whenever he saw someone from the Asura Palace, especially this Elder Liu, as it was this old fool who suggested to throw him into the Freezing Hell Jail.

“Stop with your bullshit. Let’s strike together and capture all three of them, then we’ll let Palace Chief decide their fates when he returns. They actually dare kill so many disciples of the Asura Palace! Even if they escape to the heavens or underground, we’ll never give them any chance to escape!”

Elder Liu said while clenching his teeth tightly. The two Combat Kings fully unleashed their auras, locking down the space of this region, making sure that the trio had no chance of escaping.

“Haha, when I, Jiang Chen wants to leave, you two can only just watch as I do so!”

Jiang Chen began laughing. He stretched out both hands, grabbing the arms of Tyrant and Tan Lang, then, with a sway of

his body, the three of them simply disappeared without a trace. He had no idea about Mount Luoxia, so he was worried that Combat Emperors might be on their way here. He would be in a disadvantageous position if he had to face Combat Emperors. Also, it would be meaningless to waste his time with these two Ninth Grade Combat Kings, as he wouldn't be able to defeat him either. Thus, he just left the place.

When the two elders realized what had happened, the trio had already reappeared in a place very far away.

"What?!"

The two elders simultaneously cried out in shock. They had obviously sealed up the entire area's space, but Jiang Chen had just left without making any fluctuations; proving to them that sealing up space was completely useless.

In the distance, Tyrant and Tan Lang both showed astonishment on their faces as well, as they looked at Jiang Chen. They had no idea how Jiang Chen did it, but they would tell it was because of a movement skill used by him just now, which allowed them to shift straight into the void, avoiding the seals of the two Ninth Grade Combat Kings. A technique like this was indeed incredible.

This was how frightening the Spatial Shift was. As Jiang Chen's cultivation increased, the skill would become stronger as well. A single use of the skill could bring him so incredibly far away from where he originally was. Even a Ninth Grade Combat King would fail to keep up with his speed.

"Jiang Chen, where do you think you're going?!"

Elder Liu shouted from behind them. A weapon could be seen in his hand. The two Ninth Grade Combats Kings were crazily chasing after Jiang Chen.

"Haha, old fool, you can just follow daddy here and smell my farts!"

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out as he used the Spatial Shift once more, disappearing instantly. He really missed Big Yellow at this moment. If Big Yellow was here, he would definitely let the two old fools taste his magnificent fart. The power of Big Yellow's fart not something to make light of.

Chapter 561 - A Plot For The Ferghana Stallion

Jiang Chen was incredibly fast. Carried by the Spatial Shift, Tyrant and Tan Lang were following Jiang Chen through the void, using none of their own strength. If they were to escape by themselves, they would be unable to escape from the two Ninth Grade Combat Kings.

While traveling through the void, Tyrant and Tan Lang were completely shocked by what they experienced. Jiang Chen knew too many tricks, and each of them were incredibly strong. Putting aside the amazing Heavenly Saint Sword, he even knew such a superb movement technique. They had only been escaping for a very short amount of time, and they were nearly unable to sense the auras of the two Ninth Grade Combat Kings who were chasing them. If they kept going at this speed, Jiang Chen would be able to completely ditch both Ninth Grade Combat Kings in just a few minutes. It was incredible, a Fifth Grade Combat King ditching two Ninth Grade Combat Kings who were chasing after him. If they weren't experiencing this for themselves, they would have a hard time believing it to be true.

A few minutes later, the two Ninth Grade Combat Kings appeared above a wilderness. The two men wore the same unsightly expressions, because they had just completely lost trace of Jiang Chen's aura. This also meant that two Ninth Grade Combat Kings had completely failed to chase after a Fifth Grade Combat King. It was humiliation to these two Ninth Grade Combat Kings, and at the same time, it was also a helpless situation.

"We've lost him."

One of the elders said with a gloomy expression.

"Damn it, how can that guys possess such great speed? What kind of movement technique is that? It actually allows a Fifth Grade Combat King to escape with such incredible speed."

Elder Liu felt gloomy as well.

"What should we do? Shall we continue the pursuit?"

The Elder asked.

"Pursue? How? We can't even see the dust they're leaving us in!"

Elder Liu glared at the other Elder. In such a situation, it was meaningless to continue pursuing, as they had no idea which direction Jiang Chen was headed, and they had no clue where his destination was. They would be idiots if they continued to pursue.

"Many disciples of the Asura Palace were killed by him, so we can't just let him go. Why don't we go inform the Palace Chief and let him capture this guy as soon as possible? This guy is growing too fast, in just a few months, he has reached a stage where he can kill an Eighth Grade Combat King."

The Elder worriedly said. Although the Asura Palace didn't have

to worry about him with his current strength, the speed of his growth was truly frightening. In just a few months, he had grown from a mere First Grade Combat King to a Fifth Grade Combat King, and was capable of killing an Eighth Grade Combat King. Speed like this was worth fearing. If they allowed him to continue growing, sooner or later, even a Ninth Grade Combat King would be unable to defeat him, and he would eventually bring a calamity to the Asura Palace.

“No, the trip to Mount Luoxia is very important for the Palace Chief. He wants to help the Great Tycoon seize the title of number one genius in the Liang Province, and fighting with the three geniuses from the other three major powers can help him greatly with breaking through to the Combat Emperor realm. If he manages to seize the number one title, he will most likely be taken in by a superpower of the Xuan Region. At that point of time, our Asura Palace will have a huge backing. As for that Jiang Chen, he won’t become too strong in just two days.”

Elder Liu said. Although killing Jiang Chen was important, the competition on Mount Luoxia was even more important, as it concerned the glory of the Asura Palace.

In the end, left with no other alternative, the two elders returned to where they came from.

Deep within a valley, the trio emerged from the void and descended into the valley from the skies. It wasn’t a huge valley, but it wasn’t small either. Though, it looked rather desolate. Aside from a small pond, the valley was filled with rocks that were scattered about.

“Little Chen, what king of movement skill are you using? It’s really frightening, even the Ninth Grade Combat Kings were unable to catch up!”

Unable to hold his curiosity, Tyrant asked.

“And it was under the situation where you had to carry both of us as well. If you were alone, doesn’t that mean you can travel even faster?”

Tan Lang said with a sigh. Following Jiang Chen was a journey full of surprises.

“The skill I used is called the Spatial Shift. As long as I want to run away, no Ninth Grade Combat Kings will be able to catch up with me. However, it’s really strange. After causing such a huge commotion, why didn’t Li Tianyang or Xiao Nanfeng show up? If my memory serves me correct, the Asura Palace has two Combat Emperors. Also, Li Tianyang and Xiao Nanfeng both have a strong desire to kill me, and since they know I’ve returned, shouldn’t they come here themselves, instead of sending those two old fools after me?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, feeling that something was amiss. If Li Tianyang and the Great Elder hadn’t gone to Mount Luoxia together with Xiao Nanfeng, they would have showed up immediately. Jiang Chen was rather impulsive today. If Li Tianyang had come personally, he would be trapped in a nasty situation once again. Apparently, luck was on Jiang Chen’s side.

“When you were slaughtering those disciples, I heard something from the crowd. It seems like all the Combat Emperors of the four major powers brought their number one genius to Mount Luoxia. They are having a competition among each other, fighting for the title of the Liang Province’s number one genius. It looks like Li Tianyang and the other Combat Emperor of the Asura Palace brought Xiao Nanfeng to Mount Luoxia. If not for that, I’m sure they all would have come here.”

Tyrant said as he recalled the conversation he overheard back on the Heavenhawk Island. He hadn’t been paying too much attention to it previously, but since they didn’t see Li Tianyang today, it made him think of it.

“Mount Luoxia is a remote place, located far away from all four major powers. If this is true, the Asura Palace will have no Combat Emperors before Li Tianyang returns! That’s why we were only greeted with two Ninth Grade Combat Kings.”

Tan Lang said.

“I see. What’s the point of fighting for the title of number one genius of the Liang Province? Compared to those peerless geniuses from the Pure Land, not to mention the small Liang Province, even the best geniuses from the Xuan Region are nothing.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He truly thought there wasn’t any need to fight for the title of Liang Province’s number one genius. However, it was rather good for Jiang Chen that all the formidable figures

had gone to Mount Luoxia. At least, the incident on the Heavenhawk Island had ended in satisfactory way.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, and he said, "Since the four major powers' Combat Emperors have all gone to Mount Luoxia, doesn't that mean that there are no Combat Emperors residing in the Invincible Sect right now?"

"That's for sure. If my guess is correct, the four major powers' Combat Emperors have all brought their number one geniuses to Mount Luoxia, so the Invincible Sect should be in the same state as the Asura Palace; having no Combat Emperors residing in their sect. Little Chen, why are you asking this?"

Tan Lang looked at Jiang Chen with curiosity. He had no idea why Jiang Chen suddenly mentioned the Invincible Sect.

"Back then, the Invincible Sect was also one of the powers hunting after me and Tyrant, and we also killed a lot of their geniuses. If the Invincible Sect finds out I've returned, I'm sure they'll look for a way to kill us. Daddy here doesn't have a good impression of this sect. Do you remember? You told me the Sect Chief owns a ride, a rare Ferghana Stallion. Since there aren't any Combat Emperors there, this is the best opportunity for us to find this Ferghana Stallion. Big Yellow needs the blood essence and demon soul of this Ferghana Stallion to recover."

Jiang Chen explained. Killing this Ferghana Stallion was one of the main objectives for his return, and he needed to wake Big Yellow up as soon as possible. However, since the Ferghana Stallion always followed the Invincible Sect's Sect Chief, it was

incredibly difficult for them to kill it. Now, they were presented with a golden opportunity. Thus, Jiang Chen would never want to miss this chance.

"What?!"

Hearing what he said, Tan Lang instantly cried out in shock. He stared at Jiang Chen in amazement, thinking that this guy was indeed a brave man. Although there weren't any Combat Emperors in the Invincible Sect at the moment, there were still many Ninth Grade Combat Kings. The Ferghana Stallion was also a Ninth Grade Demon King, and with its formidable and rare demon bloodline, it was much stronger than ordinary Ninth Grade Combat Kings. Even if it just stood in front of them, there was no way they could kill it.

"Little Chen, I know you're eager to save Big Yellow, but don't you think this is a dangerous idea? Don't tell me you're going to attack the Invincible Sect directly? Although there aren't any Combat Emperors there at the moment, there still are a lot of Ninth Grade Combat Kings, and that Ferghana Stallion is also a Ninth Grade Demon King, so it won't be easy to deal with."

Tan Lang said.

"Obviously, I won't directly attack the Invincible Sect. We'll have to find a strategy to deal with this Ferghana Stallion. I have way to deal with it. This is the only chance for us to capture this Ferghana Stallion, so we have to make Big Yellow wake up as soon as possible."

Jiang Chen said. The relationship between him and Big Yellow wasn't something any ordinary man could understand. For the sake of Big Yellow, not to mention the scores he had to settle with the Invincible Sect, even if there weren't any resentment between them, he would still kill that Ferghana Stallion without hesitation. For the sake of his brother, even if he had to offend the entire world, he wouldn't mind doing so at all.

"What is your plan?"

Tyrant asked. He showed support in regards to Jiang Chen's idea. Although he hadn't known Jiang Chen for a very long time, he understood him well. Jiang Chen was a controversial person, and he treated his friends and brothers wholeheartedly. From how Big Yellow risked his life to save Jiang Chen, one could tell what kind of relationship they had. If Tyrant was in Jiang Chen's shoes, he would also try his best to wake Big Yellow.

"I'll pay a visit to the Invincible Sect and find a way to lure that Ferghana Stallion out. I rather like this place, so I'll lure it here. At that point of time, we'll work together and kill it."

Jiang Chen said.

"The Ferghana Stallion is a Ninth Grade Demon King, and it also has a rare bloodline. Even if we attack it together, I don't think we'll be a match for it. And, even if you lure it to this place, I don't think that will help much either?"

Tyrant said as he furrowed his brows. In his mind, it was still rather early for them to try and deal with this Ferghana Stallion.

“Don’t worry, I have a way. You just wait and see. Once I’ve lured that Ferghana Stallion here, I guarantee we’ll be able to kill it without much effort.”

A sinister smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. He ran his eyes across the surroundings, thoroughly examining the terrain and environment. Finally, his eyes landed on the pond. Now, he had an idea on how to deal with that Fergana Stallion, who was a Ninth Grade Demon King.

Chapter 562 - A Flawless Plan

Tyrant and Tan Lang had no clue what Jiang Chen wanted to do. They had the opinion that this was an impossible mission. After all, their target was the Ferghana Stallion, a Ninth Grade Demon King! When faced with an absolute difference in combat strength, all plots and approaches would become useless. Thus, they really had no idea how they were going to kill the Ferghana Stallion.

However, when they saw the confidence on Jiang Chen's face, they suddenly had a feeling that Jiang Chen really could accomplish this daring feat. According to their understanding, Jiang Chen rarely did something he wasn't confident in, let alone the fact that he was going this to save Big Yellow, so he wouldn't allow any accidents to happen.

"Both of you look carefully."

After saying that, Jiang Chen gradually closed his eyes and began chanting an incantation that was hard to understand. He was waving his palms in the air, causing them to look like two dancing butterflies. The two palms were flickering with bright lights, and runes could be seen hovering in these bright lights. And, upon leaving the light, they began dancing in the air. The entire scene looked like a fantasy. When Tyrant and Tan Lang glanced at those runes, they couldn't help but feel indulged.

Following the emergence of these runes, the environment around them started transforming into a beautiful scene. The once desolate valley became a place brimming with life. Many flowers and grasses appeared everywhere, while butterflies and bees could

be seen flying above them. It looked like spring had come, and even though it was currently night, they felt a desire to shower in the sunlight's warmth.

After that, as if the water in the pond had become alive, it began looking crystal clear. Right in the middle of the pond, there was a huge, milky white rock with the texture of jade. The scene in front of them had completely changed. Shocked, Tyrant and Tan Lang stared at their surroundings, feeling as if they had been transported into a completely different world.

A brand new world had completely emerged. The once desolate valley had now vanished. Tyrant and Tan Lang were immersed in the fantastic scenery, completely indulged in this brand new environment.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen opened up his eyes. When he saw the look on Tyrant and Tan Lang's face, he immediately shouted, "Ha!"

The shout was like a sudden clap of thunder that struck into the minds of the two men. With a sway of their bodies, they finally awoke, and they realized that the environment they saw had once again disappeared. The valley returned to its original look. However, when the two men tried focusing their minds again, they would once more enter the magnificent environment.

"This... What's going on?"

"Little Chen... you... what did you just do? How did that

happen?”

The two men were once again struck with astonishment. There was no way they could remain calm. Jiang Chen's approaches were just too frightening. Of course, with their experience, they could easily tell that the beautiful environment was just an illusion. However, they couldn't prevent themselves from being pulled into the illusion. If not for Jiang Chen's loud shout, they wouldn't have been able to pull themselves out.

Especially Tyrant, he was a disciple of Buddhism, which gave him an extraordinarily strong mind. However, even with that, he still failed to control himself, and was thus pulled into the illusion set up by Jiang Chen. The illusion looked so real, as if it was a real world.

Frightening, it was extremely frightening! The two men opened their eyes widely and stared at Jiang Chen. He just never stopped surprising them.

“I know an illusionary skill called the Illusion Heart Sutra. It allows me to create a Great Illusionary Realm. Just now, I used it to create an illusionary realm here. Of course, in order to deal with the Ferghana Stallion, just this illusion alone is far from enough. Putting up this illusionary realm is just to create a different environment, and is only the first step.”

After explaining to them, Jiang Chen's hand moved once again. With a flip of his palm, a sea of flames suddenly emerged in front of him. After that, he took out a lot of herbs and rare natural resources, throwing them all into the sea of flames.

“This guy is concocting a pill. Damn it, he is even an alchemist! Oh right, he can concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill... damn it, what an abnormal being.”

Tyrant said in a gloomy manner.

In about ten minutes, two dazzling pills were formed within Jiang Chen's palm. Each of them were as big as a human's fist, and they shone brightly with a golden color. The pills were full of pure Yang aura, and with just one look, one could tell they were premium quality pills.

"What an amazing pill."

Tyrant and Tan Lang couldn't help but praise.

“This is the Profound Nine Solar Pill, produced using Nine Solar Holy Water and some herbs. Although they don't have a Firethorn Savage's demon soul, they still are rare pills. Between these two pills, one of them is a genuine Profound Nine Solar Pills, and the other is injected with deadly poison. I'll lure the Ferghana Stallion here, and once it eats the poison pill, it will be affected by it, which will reduce its overall strength. Moments later, I'll setup two grand formations inside the illusionary realm, one for trapping, and the other one for killing. I'll teach you how to activate them later. When the time comes, the three of us will attack the Ferghana Stallion together. Don't you think it will be rather easy to handle a poisoned Ferghana Stallion?”

A cold grin appeared on Jiang Chen's face. It could be said that everything was under his control. As it was impossible to kill the Ferghana Stallion in the Invincible Sect, he decided to lure it out here. Jiang Chen's body contained many deadly poisons, making him possess the deadliest poison underneath the heavens. If he was to fight against the Ferghana Stallion face to face, with its incredible Ninth Grade Demon King strength, it would be rather difficult for him to poison it. Thus, Jiang Chen planned to use this pill and lure the Ferghana Stallion, and once it ate the pill, the deadly poison would enter its body, and it would take a lot of time before it could dispel it from its body. At that point of time, the Ferghana Stallion's overall strength would be greatly reduced. And, with the killing formations set up by Jiang Chen, he was very confident he could kill the Ferghana Stallion.

Tyrant and Tan Lang were left speechless. The two men stared at Jiang Chen with eyes wide open. Deep in their minds, they felt that having this guy as the enemy must be incredibly frightening. This was an almost flawless plan, and if everything went accordingly, what awaited would be the Ferghana Stallion's inevitable death.

"Damn it, he can attract Heavenly Tribulation, he knows how to concoct pills and set up formations, and he can even produce poison... is he still a human?"

Tyrant felt as if he was soon going to faint. Hanging around with an abnormal being like Jiang Chen brought him tremendous pressure. How could a man be an expert in so many areas? And even reach such a frightening stage in each one. No matter how formidable that Ninth Grade Demon King was, there was no way it could withstand Jiang Chen's plots.

After that, under Tyrant and Tan Lang's surprised glances, Jiang Chen set up two grand formations. Finally, he went to the pond and placed two pills above the illusionary milky white rock. Within the illusion it was a scene where the milky rock was emitting misty threads, while two mystical looking pills were hovering above it; carried by the misty threads. Both pills were emitting bright light, and anyone who saw this scene would immediately be attracted, thinking that the two pills are incredible things which had merged with the essence of nature. Also, the magnificent scene in this desolate valley would also give them an impression that it was caused by the pills. Thus, very few would be able to withstand the temptation.

It was worth mentioning that Jiang Chen's plot was extremely sinister. Tyrant and Tan Lang exchanged glances, giving Jiang Chen a big thumbs up at the same time. When they gave the setup a second look, they had no doubts about whether or not Jiang Chen would be capable of killing the Ferghana Stallion. As long as the Ferghana Stallion fell into Jiang Chen's trap, all that awaited it would be an inevitable death.

After completing everything, Jiang Chen took out two golden talismans and handed each to Tyrant and Tan Lang, "These two talismans will allow you to move through the illusion realm and the formations without being affects. Once I lure the Ferghana Stallion here tomorrow, listen to my commands, and we'll kill it together."

"Hehe... this is really exciting! This is the first time this monk has participated in something like this. I can't suppress my excitement!"

Tyrant began laughing in a sinister manner. He felt really excited upon thinking that they were going to trap a Ninth Grade Demon King Ferghana Stallion and kill it, as it was the first time he had done something like this.

“Little Chen, when you become sinister, you’re definitely the craftiest man I’ve ever met.”

Tan Lang clicked his tongue and said as he stared at Jiang Chen with admiration.

"Are you praising me or what?"

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes.

“However, if that Ferghana Stallion has followed the Sect Chief to Mount Luoxia, all our efforts here will have been for nothing.”

Tyrant said with a frown on his face.

“Don’t worry. The Invincible Sect isn’t the only one who went to Mount Luoxia. The other three major powers are there as well, and according to what I know, the leaders of the other three major powers didn’t bring along their rides. Since no one did that, the Invincible Sect’s Sect Chief wouldn’t do it either.”

Jiang Chen smiled. It seemed like no matter what kind of

situation they faced, he would always wear the same confident expression.

“Alright. Then, you’ll have to be careful. Sneaking into the Invincible Sect won’t be something fun.”

Tan Lang reminded.

"Don't worry."

In a flash, Jiang Chen dissolved into the darkness of the night, leaving Tyrant and Tan Lang behind in the valley.

Changling City, a city located not far away from the Invincible Sect. Compared to the Hongyue City, it was much more prosperous. The City Lord was a Sixth Grade Combat King. He had three sons, the youngest one being Ruan Hao. At his young age, he had reached the Third Grade Combat King realm, and was a disciple of the Invincible Sect who received good treatment. Tonight, Ruan Hao had just come back from the Invincible Sect, and was staying in the City Lord Mansion.

Jiang Chen had learned all of this before he acted. Late at night, he snuck into the City Lord’s Mansion, and using the Great Soul Derivation Skill, he quickly found Ruan Hao’s residence.

Right at this moment, Ruan Hao was sitting with his legs folded in a luxurious room. He was in a calm state of cultivation. With Jiang Chen’s ability, he was able to walk around in this City Lord

Mansion leisurely without being noticed by anyone. Just like now, he had appeared in Ruan Hao's room without being discovered by him.

"Young City Lord, it looks like you're pretty serious with your cultivation."

Jiang Chen arrived in front of Ruan Hao and spoke with an indifferent voice.

Swoosh!

Ruan Hao suddenly opened his eyes and looked at Jiang Chen, shock visible on his face, as he hadn't noticed that there was an uninvited guest in his room.

Chapter 563 – Falling Into The Trap

"Who are you?"

Ruan Hao was extremely shocked. He had never met this young man in white before, and there wasn't anyone in Changling City who resembled this man. However, this young man had the ability to stealthily enter his room without alerting anyone. This proved how strong this young man was.

"I'm Jiang Chen, the one who vanished for a few months. However, I've returned. I thought your Invincible Sect was looking all over for me?"

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

"What? You're Jiang Chen?"

Ruan Hao cried out in shock. A killing intent suddenly burst out from his body.

In a flash, an even stronger aura burst out from Jiang Chen's body, flooding onto Ruan Hao like the fiercest wave. Ruan Hao's expression instantly changed, because to his shock, he couldn't even move a little bit under the suppression of Jiang Chen's aura.

"You better not make any noise. Otherwise, I'll kill you in an instant. If you attract someone here, everyone will be killed with you. And don't think I'm joking."

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent manner. His glances was very cold; as if it could freeze one's soul. Ruan Hao inwardly shuddered. He did not doubt Jiang Chen's words. This was an extremely formidable man, and if he went on a rampage and started killing, perhaps there would be no survivors left in the City Lord Mansion today. Even Ruan Hao's father, who was a Sixth Grade Combat King would be killed in the end. Ruan Hao didn't know what happened in the Chaotic Ocean yet, he wasn't aware that Jiang Chen had just killed the Second Tycoon, who was an Eighth Grade Combat King. However, even so, under Jiang Chen's oppressive aura, he dared not move or make any noise.

"You... what do you want?"

Ruan Hao's voice was trembling.

"I have to questions for you. Did the Ferghana Stallion follow the Sect Chief to Mount Luoxia?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"No, the Ferghana Stallion is still in the Invincible Sect. It didn't follow the Sect Chief."

Not daring to hesitate, Ruan Hao quickly answered.

"Which mountain in the Invincible Sect does the Ferghana Stallion cultivate on?"

Jiang Chen asked again.

“On the Invincible Peak. It lives with the Sect Chief.”

Ruan Hao had no idea why Jiang Chen asked these questions, but that didn't stop him from giving the correct answers.

"That's all I need. I won't kill you, but I'll need you to sleep."

After saying that, Jiang Chen slapped Ruan Hao's head with his palm. Ruan Hao rolled his eyes and fainted immediately. In a flash, Jiang Chen once again vanished into thin air. He didn't kill Ruan Hao, as the guy had no grudges with him. Although Ruan Hao was a disciple of the Invincible Sect, he hadn't had anything to do with Jiang Chen before this.

Nevertheless, Jiang Chen was going to use Ruan Hao's identity. When Jiang Chen left Changling City, his face had changed into Ruan Hao's. After that, he began rushing over to the Invincible Sect. When Ruan Hao later awakened, everything would come to an end.

In order for Jiang Chen to sneak into the Invincible Sect, he would need a proper identity. And, in order to get in touch with the Ferghana Stallion, he would need a rather important identity. Thus, Ruan Hao was the perfect choice. Soon it would be morning. Jiang Chen needed to lure the Ferghana Stallion out as soon as possible, attracting it to the traps he had previously set up.

Invincible Sect. Similar to most other sects, it was built on a mountain range. It was a place with a magnificent scenery and dense natural Yuan energy. A perfect place for cultivation.

When Jiang Chen finally arrived at the Invincible Sect's entrance, the sky had started becoming bright. Wearing white clothes, Jiang Chen strode toward the entrance.

A few of the disciples standing guard appeared in his sight. When they saw someone coming, they immediately walked up. Upon seeing it was Ruan Hao, they quickly bowed their heads.

"Senior disciple Ruan, I thought you had returned home? Why did you come back so soon?"

One of the men said in a rather flattering manner.

"En."

Jiang Chen nodded his head unconcernedly. He didn't pay much attention to these disciples, and went straight into the Invincible Sect.

Following what Ruan Hao told him earlier, Jiang Chen found the direction to the Invincible Peak and flew over there straightaway. Since Ruan Hao's status and position in the Invincible Sect was quite good, he wasn't stopped by anybody on his way, and was able to quickly reach the Invincible Peak.

The Invincible Peak was the Sect Chief's exclusive cultivation place. During normal times, aside from the Sect Chief himself, the other resident of this place would be his mount, the Ferghana Stallion. Right at this moment, at the top of the Invincible Peak, a burly man was sitting with folded legs. He was wearing a blood-red robe, and even his hair was blood-red. The man had a very masculine body, and his disheveled red hair gave him a ferocious touch. His eyes shone with a red gleam, and his body was emanating a very powerful demonic energy.

This burly man was none other than the Ferghana Stallion who Jiang Chen was looking for.

Jiang Chen came straight onto the Invincible Peak and strode up to the Ferghana Stallion. The Ferghana Stallion stared at Jiang Chen, then with a cold voice, he said, "The Invincible Peak is not a place anyone can come to. It looks like you don't know the rules."

"I'm Ruan Hao, a core disciple of the Invincible Sect. Junior greets master Ferghana."

Jiang Chen cupped his fist and greeted the Ferghana Stallion.

"What is your purpose here?"

The Ferghana Stallion asked with an impatient expression. He didn't know this Ruan Hao. Well, as the Invincible Sect had so many disciples, he barely knew any of them. During normal times, he only followed the Sect Chief.

“Master Ferghana, I’m here looking for the Sect Chief. However, since the Sect Chief isn’t around, I have no choice but to see Master Ferghana’s help. Two days ago, while I went out to temper myself, I stumbled upon a strange place. At that place, I found two pills, and both of them were emitting pure Yang energy. Nevertheless, as my cultivation was too weak, there was no way I could break the seal of those pills.”

Jiang Chen said.

"En? Two pills?"

The Ferghana Stallion’s eyes instantly lit up. The pills that were sealed, they must be pills of excellent quality. Also, since it was a seal even a Third Grade Combat King couldn’t break, it proved that these pills were no ordinary ones.

“That’s right. That place was originally a desolate valley, but because of those two pills, the place is now filled with spring air and energy. I’m guessing that these two pills are some incredible treasures. If they are found by anyone else, it will be a great loss for us, the Invincible Sect. And since the Sect Chief isn’t around, that’s why I came here, hoping that Master Ferghana can personally help me with this matter.”

Jiang Chen said like it was something that had really happened.

“Is this real? Does such a mystical pill really exist?”

The Ferghana Stallion stood up straightway. As a demon with a rare bloodline, he knew there were some natural treasures that existed in this world. If what Ruan Hao said was true, these two pills must be of superb quality.

“I would never dare fool Master Ferghana!”

Jiang Chen said, intentionally showing some fear as he spoke.

“Fine, I doubt you have the guts to fool me. I’ll follow you and pay a visit to that valley. At that point of time, we’ll split the pills; one for each of us.”

The Ferghana Stallion said.

"Thank you, Master Ferghana!"

Jiang Chen pretended to be extremely grateful.

The Ferghana Stallion grabbed onto Jiang Chen’s shoulder and vanished into thin air. A disciple of the Invincible Sect would never fool him, that’s why the Ferghana Stallion didn’t doubt Jiang Chen’s words. More importantly, as the Sect Chief had gone to Mount Luoxia, staying in the Invincible Peak by himself was quite boring. If he could find himself a mystical pill, perhaps it could help him break through to the Combat Emperor realm. It would truly be marvelous if that happened.

Jiang Chen wore a faint smile on his face throughout the entire journey. Yet, only he was aware of what the smile meant. The Ferghana Stallion had fallen into Jiang Chen's trap, and what awaited him was an inevitable death.

When Jiang Chen arrived at the valley with the Ferghana Stallion, the sky was filled with light. Tyrant and Tan Lang had long ago hidden themselves inside the formations, and since the illusionary realm was controlled by Jiang Chen, the Ferghana Stallion wouldn't be able to discover Tyrant and Tan Lang.

"Master Ferghana, look, this is the place."

Jiang Chen pointed his finger at the valley.

The Ferghana Stallion looked at the situation inside the valley. When he saw the brimming energy lingering within the valley, his eyes instantly lit up.

"The natural Yuan energy is lacking in this place, and this place is filled with desolate energy. I never expected this place to actually be so beautiful! It looks like this is really caused by these two pills."

The Ferghana Stallion was filled with great joy. He finally made a conclusion that Ruan Hao wasn't trying to fool him, and he didn't suspect Jiang Chen at all. He immediately rushed into the valley. Tyrant and Tan Lang who were hiding inside the illusionary realm could clearly see the Ferghana Stallion arriving. The two men quickly held their breaths, and dared not leak out any of their aura, scared that they would alert the Ferghana Stallion.

In fact, the Ferghana Stallion's attention was currently all focused on those two pills hovering above the large rock. He could clearly sense the pure herbal energy contained within the two pills. For the Ferghana Stallion, the Nine Solar Holy Water's attraction was irresistible to him, and extremely tempting.

"There are really two pills here."

The Ferghana Stallion's eyes lit up.

"Master Ferghana, the two pills are protected by a seal, and I have no way of breaking them."

Jiang Chen said.

"Let me have a look."

The Ferghana Stallion stretched out his hand, grabbing toward one of the pills. However, he instantly felt a repelling force.

"Indeed, they are protected by a seal. This seal is very difficult to break for any cultivator below the Sixth Grade Combat King realm. For me, this is a piece of cake. "

The Ferghana Stallion exerted his strength, and with a cracking sound, the seal was broken, and the Profound Nine Solar Pill fell into his palm. This pill was the genuine one, not the one with

poison.

After obtaining the pill, the Ferghana Stallion brought it to his nose and gave it a good smell. After that, he sent out his divine sense and examined it thoroughly. After making sure there were no problems with the pill, he said, “It is indeed a top grade pill. If I can consume this pill, it will certainly bring me great benefits.”

“If that is the case, Master Ferghana should consume it right away. This is Master Ferghana’s luck and fortune!”

Jiang Chen quickly flattered. He knew it wouldn’t be easy to fool this Ferghana Stallion, and that he would definitely examine the pill thoroughly. That’s why Jiang Chen purposely concocted two of them, one normal, and one poisoned. Once the Ferghana Stallion consumed the first pill, he wouldn’t suspect the second one.

“En, you’ve done good, young man. Let me try this pill first.”

The Ferghana Stallion looked at Jiang Chen with praise. He then placed the pill straight into his mouth and swallowed it. Witnessing this, a smile once again emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. He knew that once the Ferghana Stallion took the first pill, he would not give the second one to Jiang Chen.

Chapter 564 - You're Not Stupid, I'm Just Clever

Hiding somewhere and witnessing everything, Tyrant and Tan Lang couldn't help but give Jiang Chen a big thumbs up. Although he currently didn't resemble Jiang Chen in any way, they knew Jiang Chen had the ability to disguise himself as anybody. Now, seeing the Ferghana Stallion falling into Jiang Chen's trap one step at a time, deep in their minds, they had thrown themselves at Jiang Chen's feet in admiration. Especially when they saw the Ferghana Stallion consume the first pill, they just couldn't hold back their admiration. This guy could even predict that the Ferghana Stallion would suspect the first pill, so he simply made two of them.

If Jiang Chen had only concocted a poisonous pill, the Ferghana Stallion would definitely have sensed something wrong about it. At that point of time, all their effort would go to waste. But now, it was a completely different story. The Ferghana Stallion had consumed a perfectly normal pill, and he had no reason to suspect the other pill, which looked exactly the same as the first one.

Swoosh...

After the Ferghana Stallion consumed the Profound Nine Solar Pill, a windy sound could be heard from his body. At the same time, his body could be seen glowing with a golden light, and it was as if he had turned young again. The transformation was very obvious. Of course, a peerless pill concocted by the greatest Saint underneath the heavens that also contained a large amount of Nine Solar Holy Water, the result would indeed be frightening. Even if it

was consumed by the Ferghana Stallion, who was a Ninth Grade Demon King, the result would still be excellent.

The Ferghana Stallion took a deep breath and praised, “This is indeed a peerless pill. Since this milky white rock is able to support both pills, I’m guessing it must be a treasure as well. I’ll bring this rock back later as well. What a fortune! Ruan Hao, you have made a great contribution! When we return, I’ll reward you handsomely!”

The Ferghana Stallion patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder and said in a praising manner. After consuming the Profound Nine Solar Pill, he felt his constitution changing, and felt that this was indeed a great fortune for himself. After that, as expected, the Ferghana Stallion moved his glance over to the other pill; a greedy look visible in his eyes.

“Master Ferghana, I can tell that your cultivation has reached the peak of the Ninth Grade Demon King realm. If you consume the last pill, perhaps you can find an opportunity to break through to the Demon Emperor realm! Wouldn’t that be great?”

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing that, an expression of great joy instantly emerged on the Ferghana Stallion’s face. However, he pretended to be embarrassed, “I don’t think this is appropriate. I previously promise you that we would each take one pill. If I take them both, it would seem like I’m bullying you.”

Although the Ferghana Stallion said it like that, he was unable to move his eyes away from the last pill. He was very happy and delighted that this disciple would come up with the idea of letting him enjoy both pills by himself.

“It’s certainly more important for Master Ferghana to break through to the Demon Emperor realm! If I take this pill, the result will be far less effective. I’m wholeheartedly willing to give this pill to Master Ferghana! I just hope that Master Ferghana can promote me in the sect.”

Jiang Chen said with utmost sincerity. His sincerity truly touched the Ferghana Stallion. Once again, the Ferghana Stallion patted Jiang Chen on his shoulder, then said with a loud voice, “Alright, Ruan Hao, you’re an excellent disciple! I’ll put your kindness in my heart. From now on, you’ll be under my protection. In the future, if anyone dares to bully you in the Invincible Sect, I’ll be the first one to punish them. Also, once we’ve returned, I’ll immediately reward you with a better status and cultivation resources. From now on, I’ll make you rise to a position of great importance; I’ll make you skyrocket through the roof!”

The Ferghana Stallion kept putting out promises. He really like this disciple. Initially, he thought it would be rather shameful for him to seize the last pill by force, but he never expected this disciple to be such a sensible man. This truly moved him.

“Thank you, Master Ferghana! I will definitely serve Master Ferghana faithfully!”

Jiang Chen showed a look of being overwhelmed by the favors, and cupped his fist toward the Ferghana Stallion. Looking at how he was behaving, Tyrant and Tan Lang were soundlessly laughing until their stomachs nearly cramped. This guy could really put up a good show, and his acting skills had reached an expert level. However, it was rather shameless as well.

"Excellent."

The Ferghana Stallion nodded his head and stretched out his arm once again, shattering the seal protecting the last pill. Under Jiang Chen's ardent glance, he simply put it into his mouth and swallowed it.

The pill turned into a raging medicinal energy and flooded the Ferghana Stallion's entire body in an instant. Without having any doubts regarding this last pill, the Ferghana Stallion straightaway began absorbing it. His intention was to use this pill to break through to the Demon Emperor realm, so he made sure to absorb it thoroughly. This method of absorption could infuse all the medicinal energy into his bones and blood. This also meant that it would infuse all the poison contained within the pill into his bones and blood, thus making it impossible for him to expel it from his body.

Jiang Chen began laughing wholeheartedly. The moment the Ferghana Stallion swallowed the pill, he knew his plan had worked. Also, as the Ferghana Stallion was now standing right in the middle of the formation Jiang Chen had laid down, he was like a tortoise in a jar, and it would be near impossible for him to escape.

Before the Ferghana Stallion could express his pleasure, his expression changed dramatically. A layer of black mist suddenly emerged on his face.

“Something isn’t right, there is a problem with this pill.”

The Ferghana Stallion was greatly frightened. The deadly poison was now swimming around inside his body. In an instant, he opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of black blood. The Venomous Nether Toad and Green Hellish Python’s poison combined could be considered the deadliest poison underneath the heavens. The Ferghana Stallion was lucky, as he was a powerful Ninth Grade Demon King. If it was any other ordinary man, the poison would have instantly killed him.

In fact, if the Ferghana Stallion could detect the poison upon swallowing the pill, with his abilities, he would be able to expel the poison from his body. Even if he couldn’t expect the poison, he could still at least temporarily suppress it. But unfortunately, as his guard was down upon consumed the last pill, the poison had now penetrated deep into his blood and bone marrow, corroding his body and all his internal organs at a constant pace. The damage caused to him was unimaginable, and it was nearly impossible for him to suppress the poison any longer.

"Pu... this poison is so strong!"

The Ferghana Stallion once more threw up a mouthful of blood. His condition after being poisoned was far more serious than what

Jiang Chen had expected. The Ferghana Stallion turned to Jiang Chen who was standing beside him, and he could see that Jiang Chen was wearing a smile while staring at him. When he recalled what had previously happened, he immediately understood what was going on, "You did this?"

"Haha, that's right."

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out. At this point of time, there was no need for him to remain disguised. His facial bones began twisting, and in the blink of an eye, he returned to his original look. At the same time, the magnificent scenery transformed into a desolate valley. The crystal clear water pond had transformed into a pool of dead water. The milky white rock the Ferghana Stallion had planned on bringing away had also disappeared. Everything was like a dream; vanished upon waking up. At the same time, two figures revealed themselves, and they were staring at the Ferghana Stallion with smiles on their faces.

"Bastard, who are you? You actually dare plot against this king?!"

The Ferghana Stallion furiously shouted. Up until this point of time, even an idiot would know he had been fooled. What happened today was something that had been prearranged, including those two pills. He hated to admit this, but this trap had worked out well. Even if he had to repeat this once again, he would still be fooled.

"I'm Jiang Chen. Ferghana Stallion, the poison in your body is a mix of the Venomous Nether Toad and Green Hellish Python's poison. Your greed made you completely absorb the pill, and now,

the deadly poison has penetrated deeply into your blood and bone marrow. You're doomed, give up on defending and surrender now."

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out as he took out the Heavenly Saint Sword. Although the Ferghana Stallion was poisoned, causing his combat strength to be greatly reduced, he was after all still a Ninth Grade Demon King with a rare bloodline, so Jiang Chen had to deal with him using his full strength.

"Pu..."

The Ferghana Stallion threw up another mouth of black blood. His condition was getting word, especially after hearing the Venomous Nether Toad and Green Hellish Python's name. His expression immediately became extremely unsightly. He obviously knew of both these poisonous demons. Both of them were kings amongst the myriads of poisons. With his current condition, if he rushes to Mount Luoxia now and obtains the Sect Chief's help, he might still have a chance to expel the poison in his body, allowing him to survive. The more he delayed, the worse his condition would get.

"You're the Jiang Chen who attracted Heavenly Tribulation? It's surprising that you're still alive! But, you actually dare harm me? This is ridiculous!"

The Ferghana Stallion spewed out his words through his tightly clenched teeth. He had long ago heard of Jiang Chen's name; a man who could attract Heavenly Tribulation at the Combat King realm; the monster who destroyed the Freezing Hell Jail! Jiang

Chen's fame had spread far and wide. However, the Ferghana Stallion had no idea why Jiang Chen wanted to hurt him after returning.

However, it was useless to think about that now. The Ferghana Stallion knew he was in an extremely dangerous situation.

"Save your breath! Ferghana Stallion, you can go to die now!"

Jiang Chen shouted. He forcefully swung the Heavenly Saint Sword, aiming at the Ferghana Stallion's head.

"Hmph! You must be dreaming! You're only a Fifth Grade Combat King, there is no way you can defeat me. Even if I'm poisoned, my strength is still not something you can ever match. However, since I'm in a unique condition today, I'll spare your life temporarily. Some day in the future, I will definitely cut you into a thousand pieces and let that serve as my revenge!"

The Ferghana Stallion dodged the Heavenly Saint Sword. After leaving behind a threatening speech, he instantly ripped apart space and entered the void. He just wished he could kill Jiang Chen and the other two, but he was well aware that his current condition didn't allow him to delay further. Thus, leaving this place and rushed for the Sect Chief was his number one priority.

Bam!

But in the following moment, the Ferghana Stallion was knocked

straight out of the void. Jiang Chen's trapping formation had completely sealed off this valley.

Chapter 565 - Powerless To Turn The Tables

"What's going on?"

The Ferghana Stallion was knocked back, and only then did he realize that the surrounding space had been sealed off by a formation. This formation was extremely profound, and he could tell that it was created by an amazing person. The illusionary realm he had previously seen was brilliantly setup as well, that's why he wasn't aware of it when he arrived.

In fact, Jiang Chen was one of the major reasons that he was in this situation, as the Ferghana Stallion would never have expected a disciple of the Invincible Sect to plot against him. That's why he didn't take any precautions against Jiang Chen.

"Ferghana Stallion, there is no way you can escape today. Prepare to die!"

Without saying anything else, the Heavenly Saint Sword once again aggressively slashed toward the Ferghana Stallion. If the Ferghana Stallion was at his strongest, he might have a chance of breaking out of this formation laid down by Jiang Chen. However, in his current condition, it would be rather difficult to do so, let alone the fact that Jiang Chen would never give him the chance to try.

"Damn kid! Today, I'll let you know that an emaciated camel is still bigger than a horse! Even if I'm poisoned by you, I'm still not someone who you, a mere tiny shrimp, can ever compete with!"

The Ferghana Stallion gritted his teeth because of his hatred against Jiang Chen. A vigorous energy burst out from his body as he raised his palm into the air and unleashed a dazzling golden hoof. Countless runes could be seen all over the hoof, and with tremendous force, it charged into Jiang Chen.

Boom

Jiang Chen and the Ferghana Stallion exchanged attacks, and he was knocked back a few steps. Just like the Ferghana Stallion had said, an emaciated camel is still bigger than a horse; the Ferghana Stallion was after all a peak Ninth Grade Demon King, and although his combat strength had greatly suffered, he still wasn't someone that anyone could easily deal with.

Pu!

Nevertheless, although he managed to knock Jiang Chen back with a single strike, the Ferghana Stallion was in no better condition. He threw up another mouthful of black blood.

“Haha, Ferghana Stallion, the deadly poison has completely penetrated into your body. The more you circulate your Yuan energy and fight, the faster the poison will circulate in your body.”

Jiang Chen roared with laughter. Although the Ferghana Stallion was still very strong, he would still die unless he was able to escape; there was no way he could survive this.

The Ferghana Stallion let out a long neigh that echoed through the entire place. It sounded tragic and stirring, as he was being belittle by someone over his weak condition. After that, the anger transformed into an enormous killing intent. Using his cold gaze, he locked down on Jiang Chen and said, "If that is the case, I'll kill you first before treating myself."

By now, the Ferghana Stallion knew that in order for him to leave this place, he would have to kill Jiang Chen first. Otherwise, with Jiang Chen obstructing him, there was no way he could leave.

"Tyrant, Tan Lang, active the killing formation! Let's attack this stallion together!"

Jiang Chen shouted at Tyrant and Tan Lang. The Ferghana Stallion had been pushed into a desperate situation, and it was no time to underestimate him. However, this situation was also in Jiang Chen's expectations, that's why he had laid down this killing formation prior to this. The formation allowed three men to merge their combat strength together and fight against the Ferghana Stallion.

"Alright."

The two of them were previously given a talisman by Jiang Chen, which allowed them to control the killing formation at their will. In the blink of an eye, the killing formation was activated. It connected the auras of the three men together. Tyrant and Tan Lang's Yuan energy was instantly channeled into Jiang Chen's

body, causing his combat strength to rise abruptly.

"Stallion's Neigh!"

The Ferghana Stallion roared out. In a flash, he transformed into a Ferghana Stallion. This Ferghana Stallion stood three meters tall and nine meters long, and it looked very majestic. Its body was filled with blood red hairs that shone brightly.

Following the Ferghana Stallion's furious roars, soundwaves began coming out from his mouth. Each of these soundwaves resembled a scythe, and not only were they razor sharp, they could also penetrate deep into one's soul and attack it. This was an innate ability of the Ferghana Stallion, similar to Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune. However, it was much weaker compared to Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune. Although the Ferghana Stallion was a rare species among horses, when compared to Dragon Horses who were Divine Beasts, the gap between them was enormous.

The soundwaves shattered the space and transformed into a vast ocean, shrouding Jiang Chen's head.

Although he was facing a formidable attack like this, Jiang Chen showed no signs of panicking, and simply countered with a strike of his sword. The Heavenly Saint Sword was a frightening weapon, and there was nothing it couldn't break, even soundwaves; it could destroy them like cutting through butter with a hot knife. Countless sword energies flew out through the sky, each of them transformed into the figure of a dragon, and they were proudly flying through the air. Finally, they twisted and interweaved into a gigantic net of sword energies and clashed against the Stallion

Neigh unleashed by the Ferghana Stallion.

Boom!

At that instant, the entire space was destroyed by the violent impact. A huge amount of fiery sparks burst out from the spot where the sword energies and soundwaves had collided, and ignited into a large ocean of flames.

The Ferghana Stallion was indeed frightening. Even though he wasn't at top shape, the soundwaves unleashed by him had still knocked Jiang Chen back, and that was under the situation where Jiang Chen had utilized the killing formation; merging the combat strength of Tyrant and Tan Lang together. It wasn't difficult to imagine that if this Ninth Grade Demon King Ferghana Stallion was in top shape, there would be no chance of Jiang Chen defeating him.

“Damn it, this kid is just a mere Fifth Grade Combat King, how can he be so strong?! It's a shame I am affected by the poison and can't unleash all my strength. Otherwise, I would definitely cut this kid into a thousand pieces.”

The Ferghana Stallion couldn't help but curse. He didn't feel well currently, as every time he launched a powerful attack, the poison's effect would become stronger. If the situation continued on like this, his combat strength would become weaker and weaker, and in the end, he wouldn't be able to deal with Jiang Chen, and might end up at the mercy of Jiang Chen.

A single slip could mean death. Originally, the Ferghana Stallion was cultivating in the Invincible Sect, but because of his own greed, he had fallen into Jiang Chen's trap, which eventually brought him into this life-threatening situation. It was a tragedy.

“Hmph! Nine Phantom Wolves! I don't believe I can't kill you today!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. With a sway of his body, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared and surrounded the Ferghana Stallion. At the same time, Tyrant and Tan Lang who were channeling their combat strength into Jiang Chen's body at one side couldn't help but feel shocked upon seeing Jiang Chen unleashing such an amazing movement skill.

The Spatial Shift used by Jiang Chen previously was an incredible skill, and they never expected to see yet another amazing movement skill like this one. In a split second, nine figures had appeared. Using an amazing movement skill like this in a battle was simply frightening, and it wasn't an exaggeration to describe it as a skill that was beneficial in all aspects, especially against the Ferghana Stallion now.

If the Ferghana Stallion was in top shape, he might be able to tell who the real Jiang Chen was with just one look. However, the current Ferghana Stallion's mental state was currently in great disorder, and he felt incredibly confused as he looked at the nine Jiang Chen. He had no idea which was the real one.

Aouu!

The Ferghana Stallion threw his head back and furiously roared into the sky. He was clueless, and failed to identify which was the real Jiang Chen. Thus, he could only launched an attack and target every Jiang Chen at the same time.

This was the exact result Jiang Chen wanted. As the Ferghana Stallion's energy had split into multiple attacks, none of them could bring any threat to the real Jiang Chen. With a casual swing of the Heavenly Saint Sword, he could easily destroy the attack that came to him. And, when the other Jiang Chens were destroyed by the Ferghana Stallion, Jiang Chen would use the skill again; unleashing nine identical Jiang Chens again and surround the Ferghana Stallion.

Aouu!

The Ferghana Stallion furiously roared out, wishing he could leap onto the real Jiang Chen and devour him alive. But unfortunately, this was one cunning kid. Form the moment the Ferghana Stallion stepped into Jiang Chen's trap, his destiny had basically been decided. All this time, anything Jiang Chen wanted to accomplish, he would.

“The Ferghana Stallion is finished. Little Chen is just too crafty.”

Tyrant shook his head. He could now see the Ferghana Stallion's ending.

“Everything is under his control, including the Ferghana

Stallion's life. This was a flawless plan from the beginning. Becoming Jiang Chen's enemy is just the beginning of a tragedy."

Tan Lang said with a sigh. The more time he spent with Jiang Chen, the more frightening he seemed. Jiang Chen was like a kind who could control anything, whenever he wanted. Anyone who became his enemy would always face a devastating ending.

The battle continued developing just as Jiang Chen had predicted. The battle went on for another dozen minutes, and with the helped of the Nine Phantom Wolves, Jiang Chen forced the Ferghana Stallion to counter with all his strength each time. He had no other choice but to do this, as he failed to identify which the real Jiang Chen was. If he didn't launch target all the Jiang Chens, he might leave an opening for the real one to attack, which could severely damage him. After fighting this guy, the Ferghana Stallion was forced to admit that compared to any other man he had met, this guy who was just a mere Fifth Grade Combat King was much more frightening.

Within this time frame, the more Jiang Chen fought, the stronger he became. On the contrary, the Ferghana Stallion's condition worsened. He was severely affected by the poison, causing his combat strength to constantly be reduced, and he had begun showing signs of losing his strength.

"Haha, Ferghana Stallion, you're finished!"

Jiang Chen began laughing as he retracted all phantom selves back into his body. The moment he had been waiting for had finally arrived. The Ferghana Stallion was fading, and now, it was

time for Jiang Chen to counterattack.

The Heavenly Saint Sword rose high up into the air and produced a loud cry that shook both heaven and earth. The entire sword looked like a real dragon that had just come alive. It tore a huge crack in space as it slashed toward the Ferghana Stallion's head with tremendous momentum.

Aouu!

The Ferghana Stallion furiously roared out and tried resisting with all his strength. But unfortunately, in his current condition, he couldn't even unleash ten percent of his original combat strength. With such combat strength, how was he going to fight again Jiang Chen?

Puchi!

Like splitting bamboo, the Heavenly Saint Sword sliced away half of the Ferghana Stallion's body. Even half of his head had been cut off. It was a deadly injury, and blood splashed all over the place. The Ferghana Stallion let out a miserable shriek. He knew he was finished, he knew today was his last today. However, when he thought that a Fifth Grade Combat King was the one to kill him, his heart immediately filled with depression.

"Die!"

Jiang Chen swung his sword once more, slicing apart what

remained of the Ferghana Stallion's head; destroying it and revealing a blood red demon soul. At the same time, Jiang Chen unleashed the True Dragon Palm and took hold of the Ferghana Stallion's body, and began drawing out its blood essence.

Chapter 566 - Danger Is Safety

To Big Yellow, Ferghana Stallion's blood essence was far more important than the demon spirit. Extracting the Ferghana Stallion's blood essence was not easy, it had to be done at the moment it was killed. If there was some delay, the blood essence in its body would be extinguished along with the life of the Stallion.

Extracting the blood essence from the Ferghana Stallion wasn't considered an easy feat. But to Jiang Chen, he was well-versed in the method.

Very soon, a small amount of blood essence was drawn. However, several black threads could be seen within the essence. The Profound Nine Solar Pill was clearly highly toxic. The lethal toxin had penetrated into the essence of Ferghana Stallion. It was a frightening concept. Of course, if it wasn't for the lethal poison that took effect on the Ferghana Stallion's body, Jiang Chen's would need a backup plan as killing it without the poison would not be as easy as it was.

Swoosh...

Jiang Chen waved his palm and the big formation disappeared along with the movement of his palm. The battle that had just taken place was responsible for the carnage in the surrounding areas. The mountains crumbled and collapsed, clouds of black smoke were rising into the air. The carcass of the Ferghana Stallion was not far away; Jiang Chen didn't even bother to look at it.

“Wow! You are truly a sinister fellow. The formidable stallion was slain by your hands!”

Tyrant walked over to Jiang Chen and flashed him a thumb. The death of the Ferghana Stallion was perfect in every way; the execution of this flawless plan impressed him to no end.

“Little Chen not only possesses great combat strength, he also shows tremendous potential. I would not believe what occurred today if I had not witnessed it for myself.”

Tan Lang laughed and spoke. Jiang Chen’s strategy against the Ferghana Stallion’s life was cunning and cruel. This was eligible to be recorded in the history book.

One’s power could be judged by his combat strength and means of killing, but also the intelligence of the individual. A true god of war was never reckless.

“Big Yellow had been unconscious for too long. It's time to wake him up.”

Jiang Chen spoke. Big Yellow was knocked out in his attempt to save Jiang Chen. He could not express his sense of guilt. His only option was to heal Big Yellow back to health.

“But, Jiang Chen, even if the demon spirit of Ferghana Stallion has been extinguished, its blood essence contains deadly poison. Big Yellow would die if he consumes it.”

Tyrant spoke with a concerned tone. He could recall the death of the Ferghana Stallion after it was poisoned. The memory instantly sent a jolt down his spine. This toxicity of this poison was too strong, it was very likely Big Yellow would also die from the poison.

“Little Chen must know of ways to rid the poison in the blood essence.”

Tan Lang spoke.

“No, to remove the poison from the blood, we can only refine it with Fiery Thunder, but this method will destroy a majority of the essence of the blood, thus, greatly diminishing its effects. The benefits of the blood essence and demon spirit of a Ninth Grade Demon King will overcome any side effects of the toxin. I will let Big Yellow consume this essence of blood without any refining.”

Jiang Chen continued.

“What?”

Tyrant and Tan Lang exclaimed. This was no different than gambling.

“There is no need to worry, this poison was able to take effect on the Ferghana Stallion’s body, but Big Yellow will be fine. His body can deal with it by filtering it out of the body.”

Jiang Chen said it with a smile. This poison wouldn't do Big Yellow any damage as Jian Chen remembered how he coped with the Dark Python poison Jiang Chen unleashed onto him. Big Yellow was fine after a short series of vomiting.

“Are you serious? This is madness!”

Tyrant and Tan Lang rolled their eyes a few times in disbelief. It seemed as if Jiang Chen wasn't the only abnormal being. Big Yellow Hound was also an unexplainable anomaly. As long as there weren't any external distractions when Big Yellow consumed the blood essence, he wouldn't be in any danger. They did not doubt anymore. They believed Jiang Chen wouldn't put Big Yellow's life at risk.

“If that is what you believe, feed him the blood now!”

“No, I have to find a quiet location for Big Yellow. This is our priority as Ferghana Stallion's death will soon be detected by the masters of the Invincible Sect. Now we have to find a safer place.”

A beast on the level of the Ferghana Stallion possessed its own pride; It wouldn't allow anyone to ride on its back in normal circumstances. However, the master of Invincible Sect had a very close relationship with this beast, they had established a companionship. So, its death would cause a great deal of grief to the master.

“There is a safe place.”

Tyrant grinned.

“The Heavenhawk Island.”

Jiang Chen and Tyrant spoke the words out simultaneously, they were spelling out the name of the island.

“That’s right, the most dangerous place is the safest place to be. We ravaged all over Heavenhawk Island and massacred so many of the Asura Palace’s people. They must be looking for us everywhere, but never in their lives would they suspect that we are going to take refuge on their island/”

Perhaps Tan Lang had been closely examining Tyrant and Jiang Chen all this while, his thought process had improved drastically.

Then, the extremely audacious trio decided to travel to the Chaotic Ocean after their discussion. Although Heavenhawk Island had been ravaged, it wasn’t hard to find a place to hide. This was because the island had become a wasteland. To Jiang Chen, it was the safest place to hide.

On the top of Gorge Mountain was a flat and wide open area. It was the battle arena of the four great geniuses of State of Liang. As dawn approached, the war kings of the four major powers emerged. A battle was impending.

The master of Invincible Sect was of average height. He was

wearing a clean and light yellow robe and seemed to be somewhere in his fifties, but he showed absolutely no signs of the fatigue that came with old age. His face was without a beard or mustache. A thick, dark long hair twisted neatly in a bun. His eyebrows were exuding a calm but proud and an intimidating expression. He was a war king, a warrior many battles. As the master of Invincible Sect, his gestures were never far away from the nobles. He was coined the Invincible Nie, a contemporary master of Invincible Sect.

Besides him were an old man and a young cultivator. The old man looked like he was already in his seventies, he was obviously frail, but his eyes had a piercing look. He was no doubt an elder from the Invincible Sect. The other war king seemed much younger. He might be only thirty years of age, but his cultivation matched Xiao Nan Feng's.

He was a man of sturdy stature donning linen-made clothes.

On his back was a golden spear, illuminating a golden radiance to his surroundings. Part of the aura he exuded had to do with his arrogant expression. He had the right to be arrogant; his name was Qian Wen Yu, the number one genius of Invincible Sect who was a Ninth Grade Combat King. Wen Yu approached Xiao Nen Feng of the Asura Palace in combat ability.

At this moment, Invincible Nie's calm facial expression underwent a dramatic shift. His body shook as if he had experienced a massive shock. He coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood.

“Who did this?”

Both of his eyes started turning red as his demeanor slowly descended into that of a mad man. He roared facing the sky surprising everyone. They were staring at their master having no idea why he had become so furious. His anger could almost be felt. It seemed as if there was a serious problem.

“Master, what's wrong?” asked Qian Wen Yu.

“Someone has slain my Ferghana stallion” Invincible Nie’ eyes were exuding a fiery light.

“What? The Ferghana Stallion is a Ninth Grade Demon King, it possesses incredible combat power. All the great war kings of State of Liang are gathered here, who could have the power to contend with it?”

The elder watched in shock. They knew very well that a strong relationship existed between Ferghana Stallion and Invincible Nie.

“So brother Invincible Nie's Ferghana Stallion was murdered.”

A voice rang out from the opposite side. That person seemed to be around the same age as Li Tian Yang, who was in his early middle-age. He was wearing a black robe, with a ferocious head skull of a devil embroidered on his chest. He was the master of Sky Devil Palace, a new generation of the King of Devil, Dark Ming Zi.

The four major powers in the State of Liang had been competing amongst each other, their relationships with one another weren't

great, especially the relationship between Sky Devil Palace and the other three powers. Dark Ming Zi was the happiest amongst them all after hearing about the death of Invincible Nie's Ferghana Stallion.

“Dark Ming Zi, was it you who ordered someone to murder my Ferghana Stallion?”

Invincible Nie pointed at Dark Ming Zi with his spear.

“If you say I am the murderer, so what?”

The facial expression of Invincible Nie didn't concern Dark Ming Zi.

“Haha, Invincible Nie, two devil kings of Sky Devil Palace are present today, your Ferghana Stallion possesses a strength of a Ninth Grade Demon King. Very few people in the State of Liang are capable of killing your Stallion, not to mention it died in your territory. I think there must be an outside force in play here.” said Li Tian Yang.

“Humph, I don't care who it is, anyone who dares to kill my Ferghana Stallion will die under my hands!”

Invincible Nie spat that sentence with rage. He turned to the elder and Qian Wen Yu before continuing, “The two of you will stay here and continue to fight. I will return and see who has the extreme courage to kill my precious mount.

After finishing his words, he vanished without giving the elder and Qian Wen Yu the opportunity to respond.

As Invincible Nie was rapidly making his way back from Gorge Mountain, Jiang Chen's group had hidden themselves perfectly in Heavenhawk Island. The Heavenhawk Island resembled a barren wasteland after yesterday night's intense battle. Not a single person was present on the island, not even the people of Asura Palace. The people of Asura Palace wouldn't think that Jiang Chen would be here.

Jiang Chen simply found a spacious cave to hide in. He took Big Yellow out from his Dan Tian and placed him on the ground. Circles of golden light drifted onto his body, the effect of the Thunder Dragon Nine Solar Pill was not disappointing. It was helping him to recuperate. When Big Yellow woke up, the full effect of Thunder Dragon Nine Solar Pill would reveal itself.

Chapter 567 - The Fury Of Invincible Nie

“Little Chen, Big Yellow’s life energy is becoming stronger. It seems that the Thunder Dragon Nine Solar Pill is having some effect,” Tyrant couldn’t help saying.

He was staring at Big Yellow, who was laying on the ground full of energy. He had taken a Thunder Dragon Nine Solar Pill before, and was well aware of the incredible power it had. With the support of some relics and the pill, he could push his combat king combat level to the seventh grade in no time.

It isn’t easy to break through to the sixth grade. It’s one of the later grades in the combat king realm, after all, and is naturally harder than the grades before it. But, with the aid of some relics and the Thunder Dragon Nine Solar pill, it wouldn’t be too difficult to reach this higher level.

“You’re right. Big Yellow’s body and internal injuries have recovered completely. What has to happen now is that the Ferghana Stallion’s blood essence and demon spirit awaken Big Yellow’s dragon-horse blood.

Jiang Chen gave a cold smile as the thought of Big Yellow’s awakening floated around in his head. This was indeed good news.

Tan Lang shook his head, “I was shocked when I heard Big Yellow has the body of the legendary Dragon-horse Beast. He looks like a hound, nothing like a dragon-horse.”

The dragon-horse beast was a divine and valiant creature. Who would think that a hound is related to the legendary dragon-horse beast? It was really a joke.

“Our world is full of wonders. There must be some special reason for Big Yellow’s form. When he finally takes on the true form of the dragon-horse beast, he will surely be very powerful,” said Jiang Chen.

There were many things in this world that couldn’t be understood. There were many exceptional species. Jiang Chen was one of them himself. Even now he had not fully grasped how he should train the Dragon-transformation skill. He believed there was more than one way to train the skill; there had to be some great secret to training it. The Blood Talisman of Purgatory Hell in Purgatory City had aroused a sense of familiarity within Jiang Chen. It had increased his blood flow, and had automatically activated the dragon-transforming skill.

There was no doubt that that situation was truly abnormal. Jiang Chen wasn’t an idiot. He had lived two lifetimes; his experience and knowledge wasn’t comparable to any normal human. He knew about the connection between the blood talisman and dragon-transforming skill. He understood that he had to return to Purgatory Hell once he mastered the dragon-transforming skill; the blood talisman occupied a big portion of his memory.

“With the blood essence and demon spirit of a Ninth Grade Demon King, plus the Thunder Dragon Nine Solar pill in Big Yellow’s body, there is no limit to this guy’s power,” Tyrant said jealously.

Big Yellow had the body of a Dragon-horse beast. As he regained his consciousness, his blood would undergo another metamorphosis. It was similar to Jian Chen's Nirvana rebirth. The transformation with the help of the blood essence and demon spirit of a Ninth Grade Demon King made it difficult to estimate the power Big Yellow would possess.

"If I'm not mistaken, Big Yellow can reach Sixth Grade Demon King at the very least. He might even reach Seventh Grade Demon King or higher," Jiang Chen said with confidence.

He was honestly not too sure how many level boundaries Big Yellow could break through. Big Yellow's body contained four elements, after all - blood essence, demon spirit, Thunder Dragon Nine Solar Pill, and the blood metamorphosis of the Dragon-horse beast. He couldn't make a good tentative estimation under these circumstances.

This was a good chance for Big Yellow, none-the-less. 'If you do not die in a disaster, you will reborn', or so the saying went.

A cool breeze whispered through the air, but the atmosphere in Heavenhawk Island was dead quiet. It had been thus ever since the intense battle of the previous night. This was now the burial ground of many disciples of the Asura Palace, so many people were too afraid to go near the town. No one could be found within a ten-mile radius of the island. People who could travel on the sea would even circle around the island. They didn't dare to go past the island directly.

For this situation, it was in Jiang Chen and his buddies' best interest. Everyone wouldn't have thought of this, they would expect Jiang Chen to escape and disappear from the State of Liang after the battle. No one would have thought he was still in the Heavenhawk Island.

In the spacious cave, Jiang Chen was injecting all the blood essence and demon spirit into Big Yellow's body. This was all he could do for his friend. The rest Big Yellow had to do himself. Tyrant and Tan Lang still had some worries for him, especially considering the deadly poison contained within the blood essence. This poison was the mixture of the poison from nether toad and hellish green python. Not even the Ferghana Stallion could withstand this poison, any flaw was harmful to Big Yellow. However, Jiang Chen's facial expression was confident, there wasn't a single trace of worry on it. It made the two relieved - they shouldn't worry about anything Jiang Chen wasn't worrying about.

Meanwhile, the master of Invincible Sect, Invincible Nie, was on his way back from Gorge Mountain. His heart was connected to the heart of the Ferghana Stallion, so he could discover its whereabouts easily. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen had left the scene, and only the ruins and the dissected carcass were left in the area.

“Who did this? Who exactly did this?” raged Invincible Nie.

The fury of a combat emperor rose up to the sky above the valleys. The demon beasts and beginners within a few hundred miles shivered with fear. They could feel the intense rage rising

out of nowhere.

“Damn! I don’t care who it is, I will find the person and send him to the gates of hell.”

Invincible Nie’s fury was rushing to the sky. There was no way for him to calm down. The Ferghana Stallion wasn’t just his mount, it was his best friend. The two of them were companions. Their relationship involved the connection of their blood. When the horse was killed, Invincible Nie was injured, and his blood essence was damaged. It was no longer possible for Invincible Nie to reach Second Grade Combat Emperor in one year. Blood essence couldn’t be recovered in a short period of time, so it would take him at least three years to reach the next level.

After a period of fury, Invincible Nie finally calmed down. He started contemplating the matter deeply. He began to think of the possible causes of the incident. Him being one of the contemporary kings of Invincible Sect proved that he was a superb individual

‘Ferghana Stallion normally located itself on the summit of Invincible. If there isn’t an important matter, it wouldn’t leave Invincible Sect. How could it appear in this desolate place? There is nothing in this valley that could possibly attract it, not to mention with its level of Demon King, no one in the State of Liang should be able to kill it. Even if I were to attack it, there would still be room for it to escape.’

Invincible Nie thought carefully about the key points of the matter.

After a while he turned around, and disappeared. He was heading to Invincible Sect.

Currently, the circumstance in Invincible Sect was still the same, no one knew that Ferghana Stallion was killed until the powerful fury reached the mountains of Invincible Sect. The flaring of such great power left no one with any illusions; something big had happened.

“What happen? I thought master was bringing along brother Qian Wen Yu to Gorge Mountain? Why has master returned with such a furious aura?”

“I have no idea either. In all the years I have been in Invincible Sect, this is the first time I’ve witnessed our master’s fury.”

“There must be a reason. Didn’t you notice that only master returned? Neither Elder nor Qian Wen Yu was with him. The battle at Gorge Mountain must not be over. There must be something more important than the battle that forced master to return.”

Everyone was surprised, all of the disciples of Invincible Sect were shocked. They had no idea what had happened.

“Did anyone see when Ferghana Stallion left Invincible Sect?”

Invincible Nie hovered in the air above Invincible Sect. His voice

reverberated in the ears of every disciple and elder. Some of them even hummed in pain.

A few combat kings flew to Invincible Nie's side. The weakest of the elders was at the eighth grade, and the strongest was in the ninth grade. Not even they could remember a time when they had seen the master so furious.

“Master, I didn't see Ferghana Stallion leave. Has something happened to it?”

One ninth grade combat king elder asked curiously.

“Humph, Ferghana Stallion was murdered in a valley. There must be a reason for this, someone must have done it deliberately.”

Invincible Nie humphed in an impolite way. He wasn't surprised that no one knew of his horse's absence. If he wanted to sneak out of the sect, no one would notice him leave.

“What? Ferghana Stallion is dead?” a few elders exclaimed in surprise.

Their faces were full of disbelief. If these words weren't coming out of Invincible Nie's mouth, they wouldn't believe it at all. However, this was the truth; Ferghana Stallion was dead. They finally understood why their master was so furious. Everyone know how important the horse was to their master.

“No way! How could Ferghana Stallion be murdered? So this is why our master is so angry, he even abandoned his battle in Gorge Mountain, and returned to Invincible Sect alone.”

“Who did this? Who has the nerve to plot to kill Ferghana Stallion?”

“What I was curious about is the combat emperors of four major powers were already in the Gorge Mountain. Who could be the opponent of the horse in the whole State of Liang? Could it be there are still other combat emperors hidden in this state or combat emperors from other big states? But our sect has a good reputation and hasn’t offended anyone.”

.....

The atmosphere in Invincible Sect became nervous. The death of Ferghana Stallion could start a storm in Invincible Sect. Not only this area, it could perhaps affect the entire State of Liang. The fury of Invincible Nie wouldn’t only stimulate their group. His burning desire of revenge on his horse’s killer would ignite everyone in the State of Liang.

Chapter 568 - The Ultimate Arrest

“Who was on guard duty last night?” Invincible Nie asked again.

A few disciples flew towards their master with trepidation. They were merely common guards of the sect. They could hardly see their master’s face on normal days. This was the first time they’d be this close to their master. His intimidating presence and his fury were was enough to put them on their nerves.

“Master, we are the ones that guarded the sect last night,” the leader said with a downturned face.

“Did you notice anyone suspicious pass through the gates?”

Invincible Nie asked this question to gather information about the killer. He wanted to know how someone capable of killing his horse was able to escape the notice of so many guards’ eyes. It was just a piece of cake for him to do so, but he was Invincible Nie!

“Master, there wasn’t any suspicious person last night.”

The disciple suddenly thought of an important fact after finishing his sentence.

He continued and said, “Brother Ruan Hao came back to the sect from his house all of a sudden. If I am not mistaken, he headed to the summit of Invincible after entering the gates.”

“What? Ruan Hao?”

Invincible Nie’s eyes sparkled. He still had some impressions of this disciple, he was a third grade combat king, but his strength far exceeded others of the same level. This disciple was now the suspicious one, but Nie couldn’t believe that this disciple could get rid of his horse. Ruan Hao couldn’t even enter summit of Invincible with his qualifications. This was rather strange.

“Where is Ruan Hao now?” Invincible Nie demanded.

“Master, Brother Ruan Hao returned to Changling City yesterday and has yet to come back.”

A good friend of Ruan Hao added that he had not returned to the sect after going home.

“It seemed that there is something suspicious about this guy, I would like to go to Changling City to find out,” said Invincible Nie.

He disappeared again after turning around. Silence filled the area. Everyone was staring at one another. There was nothing in their eyes but shock. They couldn’t make the connection between the death of the Ferghana Stallion and Ruan Hao. Could it be Brother Ruan Hao that killed the horse? It was a joke, he was definitely incapable of doing that. Not to mention that such thoughts were taboo for every Invincible Sect disciple.

Ruan Hao, his dad, and two of his elder brothers were sitting

around the table in the chief of Changling City's house. Ruan Chang Shan, the chief's third son, was his pride. Ruan Hao was one of the core disciples of Invincible Sect, not everyone could say that.

Today Ruan Hao had returned from the Sect. It was a joyful reunion in the family. While Ruan Chang San, Ruan Hao and two of his brothers were having joyful conversation with one another, Ruan Hao was the only one distracted by his own concerns. His concerns overwhelmed his intention to spend his time with his family. Last night, the matter was about Jiang Chen. It was the two questions that were asked by Jiang Chen. He had no idea what the other's intention was, but he didn't feel comfortable about the matter.

Furthermore, Ruan Hao knew everything that happened in Chaotic Ocean, especially that the supposedly dead Jiang Chen had returned. The first incident was the bloody massacre in the stronghold of Asura Palace - all of the innocent disciples were dead, including Second Tycoon Zhang Liang. This was stirring news, but Ruan Hao felt extremely lucky to be alive after meeting someone capable of slicing an eighth grade combat king in half. His life would have belonged to Jiang Chen during his close encounters with the killer.

“Third Brother, why the sour face? You seldom come back. You're finally here, and yet it seems your heart is preoccupied with something.”

This young man was Ruan Hao's elder brother.

“It's nothing, really, big brother,” Ruan Hao grinned to distract

him from knowing the truth.

Swoosh!

All of a sudden, the air in the big hall rippled, a shadow of a man appeared instantly, and caused the temperature in the building to drop. The sons and father were observing the intruder with plaintiff expressions. When they recognized who the man was, their expressions changed dramatically.

“I pay my respect to you, master.”

The father and sons quickly got off from their chairs. They bowed in respect to Invincible Nie with fear in their eyes. Save for Ruan Hao, everyone had met the master before, so the master wasn't strange to them.

Cold sweat started to ooze from the pores of Ruan Hao's forehead, this feeling of anxiety wouldn't be present if he hadn't met Jiang Chen. If not for this meeting he would think his master's visit to their family compound a great honor. Today was different, however, his master was supposed to be on the Gorge Mountains battling, but he had left that important matter and come to them. His guess was that something big had happened, but he couldn't understand what his family's relation to the matter could be. This could only be a bad thing.

Invincible Nie didn't make eye contact with the father or the eldest two sons, all of his attention was focused on Ruan Hao.

“Ruan Hao, let me ask you a question, is the death of the Ferghana Stallion related to you?”

“What? The Ferghana Stallion is dead?”

Ruan Hao exclaimed, shocked. This was bigger than what he expected, truly beyond his expectation. It was no wonder Invincible Nie could leave the battle and return to the sect in person. As an Invincible Sect disciple, he fully understood how much the horse-like beast meant to the master.

“I definitely don’t believe that you are capable of murdering my stallion, but there is one thing that I have to ask you. You went to the summit of Invincible when you returned to the sect last night if I am not mistaken.”

Invincible Nie said it without a pause. The only purpose to this visit was to find out who the murderer of his stallion was. It was impossible for Ruan Hao to have killed it.

“No sir, I was in my family compound for the entire day yesterday, I never returned to the sect.”

Ruan Hao’s facial expression changed, his face was full of cold sweat and his heart felt faint. He was sure that he didn’t leave his home, plus Jiang Chen had knocked him out. He didn’t even have the chance to return to the Sect. Even if he had returned to the sect, it was utterly ridiculous to think that he had intruded on the summit of Invincible, he knew it was forbidden. He was only familiar with the publicly accessible places in the sect. He didn’t

have the nerve to break into the summit of Invincible.

“Humph! How dare you lie through your teeth! I will crush you and your father to ashes with my fingertips.”

Invincible Nie’s raging, cold, and cruel energy flowed out of his body in all directions. A shapeless whirlwind was created in the hall, turning the firm tables and chairs into powder. Their fear of death caused the whole family to fall to their knees. They wanted to beg for mercy.

“I DO NOT DARE... I SWEARRRR my words are true...”

Ruan Hao was scared to death.

“Please calm down, master. There must be some mistake. There was no doubt that I was in my compound the whole time. In addition, as the disciple of Invincible Sect, I am bound by oath to not commit any misconduct and I wasn’t stupid enough to make any attempt on your ninth grade demon king stallion. It would be nothing but seeking death for me to do so,” Ruan Hao answered sincerely.

Invincible Nie frowned. His eyes could tell whether Ruan Hao told a lie or not. It was impossible for a young man of third grade combat king level to lie in front of him. It seemed Ruan Hao was really in his compound yesterday, but it was equally true that the guards saw Ruan Hao returning to the sect. Those disciples wouldn’t even dare to tell a lie to him. There had to be something unsolved or unseen.

Ten seconds later, Ruan Hao, who was kneeling down, thought of Jiang Chen and said, “Master, I know that this incident is related to a person.”

“Tell me.”

Invincible Nie’s eyes sparkled at the comment.

“Jiang Chen,” said Ruan Hao.

“Jiang Chen? Which Jiang Chen?”

Invincible Nie was stunned for a moment.

“This is about the disaster that happened a few months ago. He was the one who destroyed the Cold Hell Prison. He didn’t die, but has returned. He came to find me last night to ask about the situation of the Ferghana Stallion, and knocked me out. When I woke up again, it was already early morning.”

Ruan Hao told the whole story without even the slightest mix of deception.

“To my surprise, this kid didn’t die, but he wasn’t the opponent of the Ferghana Stallion in any aspect.”

Invincible Nie frowned in disbelief.

“Master, Jiang Chen came in search of me after his massacre of over thirty Asura Palace disciples in Chaotic Ocean. One of the strongest was Zhang Liang who was an eighth grade combat king.” said Ruan Hao.

“What? This kid’s become this strong in just a few short months? He could kill Zhang Liang? It seems that a person who could ignite disaster has singularly hidden his body. What about the matter that one of the guards saw you returning to the sect? How do you explain that?” Invincible Nie asked.

“Master, I have no idea what really happened. My guess is that Jiang Chen has mastered the shape shifting technique. He could have transformed into my figure and entered the sect.”

Ruan Hao’s justification and guess was correct. He had make every effort to prove his innocence. He knew that Invincible Nie was been suspicious of his relationship with Jiang Chen, any misunderstanding would not only cost him his life, but his family theirs as well.

“I shall forgive you since you haven’t lied to me. Since you are a disciple of Invincible Sect I will not pursue this matter any further. You and your family should stay in the compound for the time being. Wait until I capture Jiang Chen. You can prove your innocence then,” Invincible Nie warned.

“Thank you, master.”

The family sounded frightened, they kowtowed to the master with their forehead touching the ground.

Invincible Nie disappeared again. Despite being at the combat emperor level, he searched for Jiang Chen for a whole day without any success. The second party was Asura Palace, their desperation to look for Jiang Chen was equal to Invincible Nie's. Sword Wu Xiang School was the other party that was also looking for Jiang Chen for revenge. Many of their disciples had been killed, especially by the monk. They wanted to settle the blood debt owed them.

Another day later, Invincible Nie had no choice but to issue a warrant for Jiang Chen's arrest. The whole world was informed. Anyone that could provide any clues of Jiang Chen's whereabouts would receive a great reward from Invincible Sect. Those that could provide information would be awarded a middle or high rank discipleship in the sect. The arrest would bring another storm into Liang Province. Everyone now knew of the death of the Ferghana Stallion. It sent a jolt down their spines.

Chapter 569 - The Awakening Of Big Yellow

“Too cruel... Ferghana Stallion died? This is unbelievable! Invincible Nie issued the warrant personally. This is the first time in history this has happened. Is it true that Jiang Chen has that kind of combat power?”

“This isn’t possible, there has to be something that’s as yet undiscovered. Jiang Chen could get rid of an eighth grade combat king warrior, but his level of wasn’t enough to fight against a ninth grade demon king beast.”

“Too brutal...the night before last was a bloody massacre in Chaotic Ocean. Jiang Chen was like a Devil King, he didn’t leave any Asura Palace disciples alive. The scene was extreme.”

“The intensity of this convulsion in Liang Province is greater than the last one. Jiang Chen is practically the Devil King of Chaotic Ocean. He had disappeared for a few months, his latest appearance in the province was good enough to summon a new pattern of storm, so any following days are unlikely to be peaceful.”

.....

Astonishment was the dominant emotion in people’s heads. It created an awkward atmosphere in the Liang Province. The Devil Religion was still the most peaceful among all the four major powers. The other three major powers were busying finding traces of Jiang Chen and the monk, but the results were all

disappointing. The ultimate arrest for Jiang Chen was an unprecedented act in the history of Invincible Sect.

Who could have thought that the three of them were hiding in the ruin filled lands of Heavenhawk Island while the storm raged elsewhere?

Meanwhile, in the cave of Heavenhawk island, the three friends had no clue about the situations that were happening outside. The three's focus had been put on Big Yellow. Big Yellow's robust body was lying on the ground. There was a big, golden cocoon wrapped its body. It was covered with symbols and patterns that Jiang Chen couldn't understand.

Over the course of the day, Big Yellow's status was changing constantly. Numerous leases of live resurfaced, the clean golden fur on the surface of his body dazzled their eyes, and his head was giving out golden radiance as if he was going to be awake very soon.

Strange enough, many black threads were continuously emerging from Big Yellow's internal body. Tyrant and Tan Lang recognized those threads, they were the lethal poison absorbed by the blood essence of Ferghana Stallion. At first, they were very afraid that this poison would harm Big Yellow's body, but all those feelings had since vanished.

Those were deadly poisons that came out of the body. It was unbelievable that his body could remove these harmful substances on its own. The poisons would emerge from Big Yellow's body, and slowly disperse and vanish into thin air.

“Amazing... His body is terrifying! It can excrete deadly poisons with ease. His body is extraordinary, a normal dragon-horse beast would not have this ability.”

Tyrant gave voice to his respect for Big Yellow. To anyone, nether toad's poison was death. Once one came into contact with the poison, one would have to find a way to get rid of it. For Big Yellow, however, his body could detoxify all the poisonous blood essence and expel them out of his body through metamorphosis when he was still SLEEPING...

“Little Chen. You and Tyrant stay here to take care of Big Yellow. I will go out to acquire the latest information out there.”

Tan Lang said, “Ferghana Stallion is killed, Invincible Nie would be extremely furious now. I have no idea whether the battle in Gorge Island has ended. I'm also pretty sure the Asura Palace is coming for us. I think it is better for us to be informed of the latest happenings as soon as possible. I will travel with great caution.”

When they heard this, Jiang Chen and Tyrant nodded in agreement. Tan Lang was being reasonable. Hiding in the desert island wouldn't bring them any latest news, letting one person go out and scout out some information could actually keep them updated. Among the three, Tan Lang was the most suitable candidate; Jiang Chen couldn't afford to leave as Big Yellow was undergoing a vital process in his metamorphosis. Jiang Chen had to stay to ensure the process proceeded smoothly. Tyrant, the monk, wasn't a good choice because he could be recognized by a lot of people. Tan Lang was different. He was very familiar with Liang

Province, he knew the way to disguise himself, and his new identity would not be noticed by anyone.

“I understand, but you have to be careful. Inform me immediately once you sense any danger coming.”

Jiang Chen took out the spiritual message talisman he had refined himself, and put it on Tan Lang's palm. If Tan Lang faced any danger, he could use it to inform Jiang Chen.

“Okay.”

Tan Lang received the spiritual message talisman and walked out of the cave. After looking around for a moment, he left Heavenhawk Island and was on his way to the Chaotic Ocean.

Not long after Tan Lang left, another surprising thing happened. Big changes happened on Big Yellow again. His body trembled. It was a pleasant and surprising incident for the two of them.

“Look like he is waking up,” Tyrant said.

“It is about time...”

Jiang Chen smiled and nodded his head. With Big Yellow's natural ability, it should be about time for him to wake up.

Hum...Hum...

Big Yellow's skin began to glow. The rippling radiance became stronger and stronger over several minutes. The sound of cracking rang out continuously as the cracks shot across the golden cocoon.

Bang...

Once the cracks covered enough of the cocoon's surface, it exploded. The cocoon fragmented and collapsed. Big Yellow opened his sparkling eyes. Two beams of light shot out of eyes like a double-edged sword.

After that, Big Yellow breathed a sigh of relief and sat up. He could feel the powerful energy trying to explode in his body. It was like a vast ocean trying to find a vent to flow out its excess volume.

Roar...

Big Yellow raised his head with pride and roared insanely. Layers of sound waves escaped from his mouth. They vibrated all the loose things in the cave. Fortunately, Jiang Chen had prepared for this. He had sealed the entire cave with a spell. Had he not done so, their whereabouts would now have been revealed. It felt like the vibrations would collapse the cave.

Tyrant gave his thumbs up to Jiang Chen. He admired his foresight, how he could anticipate that Big Yellow would be bursting with so much energy upon his awakening. This was just a normal roar. If he had used the Spirit Kill Divine Roar, it would not have been this tame. Given this possible outcome, Jiang Chen

had to be mindful and well-prepared.

Boom...Boom...Boom...

Big Yellow had awoken, but the amazing changes didn't stop. The booming sounds sounded continuously. It was like his body was sounding the battle drums. It was due to the impact of the energy contained within his body, and the effect of the metamorphosis of his blood and veins. The combination of these two elements caused Big Yellow's qi to rise unabatedly. In the blink of an eye, he had reached third grade demon king.

This was merely the beginning. Jiang Chen and his companion were dazzled by it. Under their gaze, Big Yellow's level rose smoothly and rapidly. In a minute amount time, he reached peak third grade demon king. Soon after a light cracking could be heard once more; he had broken through the fourth grade as well!

Kacha! Fifth grade demon king.

Kacha! Sixth grade demon king.

Kacha! Seventh grade demon king.

In just half an hour, Big Yellow's level broke all the way through to the seventh grade smoothly. His momentum slowed at this point.

Tyrant sighed with relief. His forehead was covered with sweat.

The speed with which Big Yellow had broken through was simply too frightening. He had broken through from third grade demon king to seventh grade demon king in such a short amount time. This was completely unbelievable. If he hadn't witnessed this himself, he would not believe it even if his life was threatened.

To him, it was a blessing that Big Yellow's momentum largely dissipated at this point. If he had broken through to the eighth grade, Tyrant was afraid he would have fainted and died on the spot. Jiang Chen's improvement from first grade to fourth grade back in the Western Region was already too much for him to bare. Big Yellow just made everything worse.

In the end, Big Yellow didn't break through to eighth grade demon king, its energy stopped at the peak of seventh grade demon king. It wasn't too far off the eighth grade. They believed that Big Yellow could reach that level in no time.

It was completely unbelievable, and yet just as undeniable. The fast increase was assisted by the blood essence and demon spirit of a ninth grade demon king. Not only that, Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill and metamorphosis of blood and veins were the other two important elements. If Big Yellow could not achieve this result, his ability would be far inferior to what was expected.

Huff...Huff...

The energy flowed out of Big Yellow's body. Under his control, all of it was absorbed back into his body. He cooled down and returned to his original state. The cave was peaceful once more.

By the look of Big Yellow, not much had changed. The only overt difference was that his dragon horn had grown bigger. The horn was the identifying characteristic a dragon horse beast. Even though he had achieved seventh grade demon king status and the dragon horns, he still looked like a hound.

Big Yellow opened his eyes. The first thing he saw was Jiang Chen and Tyrant. He opened his mouth to speak.

“Wakaka, you two bastards didn’t die. Of course, the life and death of the two of you wasn’t my concern. What I am concerned about is that I am still alive, haha,” Big Yellow laughed loudly.

His words would have been offensive, but when Jiang Chen was able to hear his voice again, he felt a sense of familiarity.

“This hound’s words aren’t friendly at all,” Tyrant said with a serious aura.

“Bastard monk, you still want to act serious in front of me? Do you believe that I won’t kick your ass easily? You know, I am a seventh grade demon king warrior now.”

When Big Yellow spoke, his eyes stared directly at Tyrant’s butt.

“Damn it, you are still an annoying stupid dog.”

Tyrant scolded, but he would not want a fight to happen between him and Big Yellow as the hound possessed the strength of a seventh grade demon king. His evil ability could even take down a ninth grade combat king. He wasn't stupid enough to actively seek out his own suffering.

“Haha...” Jiang Chen laughed happily.

The teasing between the two of them reminded him of Han Yan and Wen Tian. It was the time in the East Continent, they enjoyed themselves very much when they were together. In the Divine Continent, he had not seen them once the space channel was broken. Another of Jiang Chen friends' - Wu Ningzhu - whereabouts was still unknown, she came to Divine Continent with Jiang Chen in search of her mother, but had no clue of the chaos in the area. Her gentle nature would cause her a lot of unnecessary troubles.

Chapter 570 - Accomplishing Great Mission

Jiang Chen wasn't very worried about Han Yan and Nangong Wentian. Although they were from the Eastern Continent, their abilities were good enough to survive in the Divine Continent. For Han Yan, he had the blood of the ancient divine devil. Every one of his metamorphoses would bring him to a higher level, the potential in his blood could provide him with a bright and unimaginable future.

Nangong Wentian had learned the Infinite Matter Profound energy, this energy carried the essence of ancient matter. He had obtained the key mastery of training this energy, his training in the future would bring him to the next level with ease.

Jiang Chen was more concerned about Wu Ningzhu. Although she had greater talent than other people and her blood was one-of-a-kind, she was too attractive. Pretty women would never have peace in their lives.

Jiang Chen had already prepared and planned, once the matter in Liang Province was done, his next task would be finding Wu Zhu and his other friends.

Big Yellow shifted his gaze to Jiang Chen.

He noticed the difference in the qi Jiang Chen possessed and said, "You really have the same luck as I have, the exceptional blessing on the verge of death. You trained quite fast, didn't you? And you, monk, you actually reached the peak of sixth grade combat king! I

can't BELIEVE IT!"

When Big Yellow sensed Jiang Chen and Tyrant's improvement, he couldn't help to be surprised. This wasn't a big matter to Jiang Chen, however. He was a freak, a non-human that had created countless miracles already.

"Big Yellow, how do you feel?" Jiang Chen asked.

"I feel GREAT! What did you feed me to make my blood metamorphose directly? I've undergone a massive change!"

Big Yellow fixed his eyes on Jiang Chen. That he could be awake, and that he could undergo such drastic changes, was all thanks to Jiang Chen. He knew his own injuries well; an ordinary person would not be able to wake him up. He had assumed he would have to rely on his own efforts and abilities to wake up again. Only a freak by the name Jiang Chen could possibly help him.

"It was the Nine Solar Lighthing Dragon-Pill pull and the blood essence and demon spirit of a ninth grade demon king beast that boosted you to your current grade. I am the extraordinary one here, not you. You should grateful for my help," Jiang Chen said.

"I appreciate you, brother, I lost my broken blade when I tried to save your life."

Big Yellow felt the pain like a deep cut on his flesh as that broken sword was his most precious item.

“So, what kind of treasure was that broken sword? A sword that could cast great power?”

Tyrant the monk asked with curiosity. This was also the question that Jiang Chen had been asking Big Yellow but he seemed reluctant to answer it.

“I don’t know, but that broken sword is certainly a valuable treasure. I am still able to use the sword with force. That confrontation with the three bastards of Asura Palace just to save you made me lose my precious sword. My sword...”

Although he just regained his consciousness, he was brooding over his broken sword.

“Humph, your broken sword was under the possession of Asura Palace, we are going to take it back sooner or later.”

Jiang Chen made a disapproving sound. It was Big Yellow’s thing, it must be taken back. His grudge against Asura Palace would be endless until one party died.

“Exactly, my things aren’t something that people can take whenever they want!”

Big Yellow was gnashing his teeth. Not only had he lost his broken sword, he had also been unconscious for so long. This ignited his desire of revenge on Asura Palace. If this revenge was

not taken, the needle in Big Yellow's heart wouldn't be removed.

“Ya, how long did I actually sleep? During this period, what had happened? What is this place? It is obviously filthy...”

Big Yellow opened his mouth and asked. He realised that his time spent on sleeping wasn't very short, judging from the increase in Jiang Chen and Tyrant's strength, he knew many things must have happened.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant recounted the tales of their goings on during Big Yellow's mental and spiritual absence. It began on the day Tyrant saved their lives, until they arrived in Western Regions, and then the incident in Tian Yi Men, and finally it was related to Zhuang Fan. That time Jiang Chen's killings raged in Liang Province, it included the murder of Ferghana Stallion.

Big Yellow jumped up after listening to the stories. He was turning and rolling his body in situ like a mad hound, without wanting to stop.

“Wa ah...there are so many exciting stuff that I had missed, I was so unlucky...I feel regretful.”

Big Yellow was jumping up and down, as if he was relieving his sharp pain. To him, it was a huge loss, missing so many fun activities, it had become one of his regrets.

“Hey kid, I have to say, killing Ferghana Stallion was a nice one. I

didn't mix with the wrong person, truly evil.”

Big Yellow gave Jiang Chen a praising gaze. The best of his act was getting rid of Ferghana Stallion with his flawless strategy that would impressed everyone. And, Jiang Chen's killings of over thirty disciples of Asura Palace was a stimulating one. The only thing undone was Zhuang Fan's revenge, Zhuang Fan was killed and he was humiliated after he was dead. This was a sad tragedy and that was why Jiang Chen erupted into fury and began his killings.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes, is this dog boasting about himself? My god...how uncomfortable it is...

“But, we cannot keep on hiding in Heavenhawk Island right? Activities are important... I now possess the peak of Seventh Grade Demon King, any Eighth Grade Combat King couldn't stand my power, and not even a Ninth Grade Combat King is my opponent.”

Big Yellow was bursting with confidence. He felt he was invincible. The fact that he had slept for such a long time made him sensitive towards immobility. With his aggressive character, he wanted to release all of his confined feelings that was caused by boredom inside of him out.

“The situation is in chaos, we are not strong enough to match the major powers. Wait until Tan Lang comes back, then we will see what to do,” Tyrant said.

“This kid is the first person who got the blessings on the verge of

death,” Big Yellow nodded.

To begin with, there was a catastrophe that he and Jiang Chen had faced that was also caused by Tan Lang.

Another hour passed by, Big Yellow was hitting the limit of his patience. He seemed to have the urge of charging out of the cave at any time. When Tan Lang came back, his facial expression wasn't bright, but it changed when he saw Big Yellow had awoken.

“Big Yellow...You are awake, fantastic!”

To Tan Lang, it was very pleasing that Big Yellow was able to move again. He felt guilty and sorry for him because Big Yellow fell into a coma because of saving his life.

“Tan Lang, how was the news? You don't look very good,” Tyrant asked.

“The situation out there is bad. Except Heavenly Devil Palace that stayed put, the other three major powers have begun their search for us, especially Asura Palace and Invincible Sect. The master of Invincible Sect, Invincible Nie abandoned his battle in Gorge Mountain and returned. Now he has issued the ultimate arrest, anyone who can provide leads to Jiang Chen will be rewarded greatly or rewarded with top rank discipleship of Invincible Sect,” Tan lang said.

“How did this guy know Ferghana Stallion was killed by us?”

Tyrant was puzzled by this question.

“It has to be Ruan Hao, but it isn’t a big deal. I did not plan to hide the fact for long. Invincible Nie and Ferghana Stallion had an extraordinary connection. He can sense the blood of his stallion when he sees Big Yellow. There is no way to cover this up. Furthermore, nothing needs be hidden. If he wants to kill, then so be it. This is revenge on enemies. An ultimate arrest? Humph... many will have to sacrifice their blood to arrest us.”

Jiang Chen humphed. He had never intended to hide Ferghana Stallion’s death to begin with. If this wasn’t his intention, he could have killed Ruan Hao when he saw him.

“Little Chen, there is a very complicated matter.”

Tan Lang frowned while talking.

“What was it?” Jiang Chen asked.

“Do you still remember the few disciples of Asura Palace that followed me in Rainbow City? One of them included the young chief of the city. My identity was revealed the day before yesterday’s massacre in Heavenhawk Island. Now the elders of Asura Palace had to release their anger of the over thirty lost people on my disciples. Now, Chang Qing and the rest are imprisoned in Asura Palace, there was no exception for the young chief either. They are all innocent. They were involved because of me, I am very concerned about their lives now as they are all in danger now.”

Tan Lang said. He was a man of righteousness. Now that many of his disciples had been made the scapegoats because of their relationship, it induced his concerns for their lives like a heavy rock putting pressure on his heart.

Tyrant and Jiang Chen started to frown after hearing Tan Lang's words. This matter was absolutely complex. These people were imprisoned in Asura Palace, one way to saving them was to intrude into the palace which wasn't a place could easily break into.

“In my opinion, we should kill our way into Asura Palace and start a mass killing. I will fart in the air above the palace, if it doesn't kill them, it can smoke them to death.”

Big yellow was wagging his sturdy tail.

After listening to Big Yellow, Jiang Chen's eyes glowed like he had figured out something crucial. He faced Tan Lang and asked, “Did you get any news about Li TianYang whether he had returned from Gorge Mountains.”

“Not yet, but I guess it won't be long,” Tan Lang said.

“In other words, there isn't any combat emperors guarding Asura Palace right? The most powerful will be a Ninth Grade Combat King warrior.”

A sly smile appeared on Jiang Chen face. Big Yellow also opened

his mouth wide because he knew what Jiang Chen was thinking. He recognized a smile like this would mean an awesome plan.

“Little Chen, don’t tell me you are going to break the prison to save their lives?”

Tyrant was able to guess what Jiang Chen was thinking. Although it was intimidating, his face was full of excitement. An intrusion into Asura Palace was surely an adventurous trip.

“Exactly! With Big Yellow’s level, it was sufficient to handle a Ninth Grade Combat King. We should take the opportunity to break into the place during the absence of Li TianYang. If a Dragon horse beast isn’t strong enough, we will send another one, letting them know that we aren’t the party that they want to have a fight with.”

Jiang Chen’s aura emerged from his body.

Chapter 571 - A Fart, Collapse And Die

“Wa Ka Ka...pan...pan... I have this great mission the moment I wake up. I will leave a deep mark on Asura Palace. I will let them know the consequences of offending me, The Master Dog.”

Big Yellow jumped up and down again, completely prepared to charge towards Asura Palace.

When the sour-faced Tan Lang saw how determined Big Yellow and Jiang Chen was to begin their prison break in Asura Palace, his lips couldn't help to shiver. The two individuals before him were too audacious; intruding into Asura territory by themselves was an absurd thing to do. Even though Tan Lang wanted to save Chang Qing and his friends, he knew the danger of the situation all too well. He knew the power of Asura Palace better than anyone else, anyone who didn't have the level of a combat emperor couldn't walk into it at any time.

“Little Chen, are we going to Asura Palace to save people?”

Tan Lang asked with doubts. Such an Earth-shattering action would never cross his mind, but if he had to do it, the exhilaration hidden deep in his heart could be ignited again, giving him an adrenaline rush. As a man who lives only once, an Earth-shattering action would leave him with a great experience. Plus Chang Qing and the rest were imprisoned because of him, he had good reasons to join the prison break.

“We had gone to Cold Hell Prison before, do you care about this

prison break anymore?”

Jiang Chen smiled. As the number one saint, there was nothing he wouldn't dare to do, there wasn't anything that could stop him. Even if there was something, it would certainly not be Asura Palace. It didn't have a combat emperor warrior at the moment. As long as combat emperors were absent from the territory, Jiang Chen would have the chance to escape. It would be impossible for a warrior of the Ninth Grade Combat King to match his speed, not to mention with Big Yellow's help, handling the Ninth Grade warrior would be a piece of cake.

After listening to Jiang Chen, Tan Lang was touched. He remembered those days when Jiang Chen broke into the Cold Hell Prison, and destroyed it without hesitation just to save him. His noble deed would be remembered forever. Jiang Chen had saved his life in Southern Continent, his life was a gift from Jiang Chen.

“Haha, if this is the case, we will set out immediately, time is of the essence. We have to grab the opportunity Li Tian Yang's absence has granted us to settle our matters.”

Tyrant laughed. Although he was a Buddhist, his personality was no different than Big Yellow, peace was the thing he feared the most, only exciting happenings could satisfy him.

To observers, this decision was to seek death. A matter that could shock the entire Liang Province was handled nicely by a few men. Then, three men and a dog left Heavenhawk Island silently, heading to Asura Palace.

On the road, Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Tyrant were joking and laughing among themselves happily. They didn't look like people going to war, it looked like there were going on a trip. Tan Lang told himself with envy that three guys were natural born devil kings by different titles, peace was never an option when they were near.

There were only things they chose not to do, not things they dared not do.

The distance from Chaotic Ocean to Asura Palace wasn't short at all, but it wasn't a problem for Jiang Chen and his friends. They were Combat Kings, after all.

The three men, and an animal, reached Asura Palace at noon. The sun was scorchingly hot. From outside, Asura Palace seemed calm as usual, but there was a suppressive atmosphere around the area caused by Li Tian Yang's rage, the rage that accumulated after the fall of the Cold Hell Prison.

On the day before yesterday, Jiang Chen's violent massacre in Heavenhawk Island, which included a few Tycoons, gave a nervousness and anger injection on each of the disciples' emotions. As the disciples of Asura Palace, they were honored to walk on the street, but Jiang Chen's presence crushed all their pride. Over half of the thirteen Tycoons were killed, this was an insult.

In the hearts of many disciples were fear, it was a fear of Jiang Chen and Tyrant. Although Asura Palace was hunting Jiang Chen

down, these disciples were scared to confront him as a warrior of Eighth Grade Combat King could die under his hands, not to mention Ferghana Stallion's death was also his doing. They could imagine what they would become if they saw this matchless devil.

Above the Palace, in the sky, four figures appeared, they had no intention to hide their Qi. It was absolutely getting a lot of attention, letting others to know of their arrival.

“Being this high-profile, is it good?”

Despite Tyrant's question, his face was carrying a bright smile. He believed their action was the right one.

“Little Chen, breaking into this place isn't a game. There are no combat emperors guarding this place, but there are still no less than eight Ninth Grade Combat King elders in there. We should decide on our strategy before we begin our mission.”

Tan Lang opened his mouth and said. As a disciple, he knew very well about the Palace's background. Breaking into the place would be impossible even in the absence of the combat emperors because there were many Ninth Grade Combat Kings plus core disciples that had high level of Combat Kings.

“The strategy is: I will raise my voice, making the entire Palace chaotic and you all will go and save your friend.”

Big Yellow wagged his tail and licked his lips, showing his

impatience.

“Let’s go, follow Big Yellow’s instruction, we will create havoc in the Palace, Tan Lang and Tyrant will go and save the others. Remember, our time is limited, Li Tian Yang and Xiao Nan Feng will be back from Gorge Mountain at any moment.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright, we’ll depend on Big Yellow today.”

Tyrant’s face was full of joy, he wanted to know whether a Seventh Grade Demon King could defeat a Ninth Grade combat king opponent.

Four of them flew into the Palace in a swaggering way, exposing all of their Qi to their enemies. Their Qi made the air and spaces vibrate, layers of ripples were created in the air. Such a big energy fluctuation alarmed the people in the Palace. Some of them could be seen them coming from places in the distance.

There were four disciples that guarded the mountain. They flew up to stopped them. One of them shouted, “Who are you? You dare to trespass the Asura Palace? Do you want death?”

The one who spoke was a First Grade Combat King. This core disciple just happened to be a guard today.

“Tan Lang... It was Jiang Chen and his friends. Quickly...Inform

the elders, Jiang Chen has actually come to fight us.”

When the First Grade Combat King disciple asked for their identity, he recognized Tan Lang. He wouldn't have recognized the others, but he couldn't forget Tan Lang's face. The identities of the rest were revealed because of the unique composition of the group: a young man, a dog and a monk in a group.

Today the entire Liang Province was informed about Jiang Chen's group. There were two followers who were a Big Yellow Hound and an evil monk. The three of them were the group that had their killings in Heavenhawk Island.

“Call me Dog Majesty and you will be forgiven.”

Swoosh...Big Yellow vanished and appeared again in front of the group. For the period he experienced while being unconscious and losing his broken sword, he was definitely not in favor Asura Palace.

“Go and die...you are just a dog, you dare to speak?”

The disciple suddenly moved this palm towards Big Yellow, intending to claw his head. He knew the incredible power of Jiang Chen, but this was Asura Palace where a lot of Ninth Grade Combat Kings were keeping guard over the territory. Being in his territory gave him a natural sense of safety.

Seeing the disciple make his attack on Big Yellow, Jiang Chen

and his friends shook their heads, their eyes were filled with pity.

Big Yellow didn't pay attention to his attack at all. Swoosh! He twisted his body slightly, and aimed his buttocks at the few disciples. Seeing this happening, Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and retreated without delay. He stopped after going backwards a few feet.

Tyrant and Tan Lang could not understand the reason of Jiang Chen's sudden retreat, but they would get it very soon.

Bang...

A sound of bang was heard, as if the sky was bombed by. This was something that Tyrant and Tan Lang would never forget in their lives. It was hard for them to imagine such an Earth and Sky-shattering skill was actually a fart from a dog.

Ah...

The power of Big Yellow's fart was unimaginable, green gases came out directly from his body and then exploded like a powerful bomb producing a blast of green air, thrusting them away. They gave out a blood-curdling shriek. The flow of green gases covered their entire bodies like poisonous bone ulcers, their facial expressions were full of distaste and ferocity, and their eyes were full of fear.

The energy released from the fart was enough to take away the

lives of those disciples, but the result wasn't the worst of all. Tyrant and Tan Lang saw the few disciples fall from the sky. When they fell on the ground, their bodies were moving like the contractions of the throat when one swallowed. White foam was forced out of their mouth, and their faces became entirely black. Despite the fact that they had lost their breath, their bodies twitched continuously, as if suffering excruciating torture to the point that their souls were leaving their bodies.

“The taste of my Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart isn't bad, I had suffocated for so long and today is the time to release all of that suffocation.”

The occasion stunted Tyrant and Tan Lang. They never noticed the green gases had reached them until they were aware of it.

“Yuck! It stinks!”

“Poo...What on earth is this? How can it be this stinky? Am I gonna be alive? My god...Poo...”

Chapter 572 - Big Yellow's Senses

Tyrant the monk and Tan Lang were using their Yuan force to blow away those green air. They opened their mouth and vomited. They had underestimated the power of the gas. They had no idea that this gas could be this powerful, and this 'STINKY', it stunk at its maximum. Any of the smell that entered into your nose would cause you to regurgitate all the food without stop, no one could stand it, and it was too brutal in other aspects.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen giggled at their innocent reaction.

Tyrant and Tan Lang had the feeling of rushing towards Jiang Chen, wanting to strangle him to death. Now they finally know the reason of Jiang Chen's retreat before the skill was cast, his ability to prepare in advance was impressive. They can blame no one but themselves for not understanding Big Yellow well enough, not knowing the ultimate power of his skill.

“Godly...Pan...Pan...You two bastards, are you telling me that you two vomited because my fart wasn't tasty enough?”

Big Yellow was staring at Tyrant and Tan Lang while shaking his stout buttocks. When the two of them saw Big Yellow, they instantly moved far away from him. It gave them a creepy feeling when they witnessed the death of a few Asura Palace disciples. These people weren't dead because of falling from the sky, there was eighty percent certainty that they were smoked to death by the

fart.

“It was like causing the souls to leave their bodies, very scary...”

Tyrant said. He had an unanswered question for the god, ‘How can this world have such a fine quality? The supernatural talents and powers can be this superb and **’.

Tyrant and Tan Lang swore that this was the most horrifying fart, and that there wasn’t anyone like this. It was lucky that they only smelled the disgusting smell of the fart. It was out of their imagination to think about the condition of those disciples that were exposed at the central point of the green gases.

“How dare you!”

Someone in the Asura Palace shouted. At least a few figures moved in quickly from the inside. One of them was the Seventh Grade Combat King elder who came out instantly, without saying a word, he casted a Dharma Seal, smashing over Big Yellow.

Quack...Quack...

Big Yellow was exhilarated. He wanted to release all of his stifling feeling today once and for all. Why would he even have any problems fighting this enemy of Seventh Grade Combat King? He sent another attack using his head without hesitation.

Bang...

The unlimited power of Dharma Seal clashed together with Big Yellow's solid head, the spell broke as quickly as the sound began, turning into fragments. Big Yellow's speed of attack didn't slow down as though a golden light penetrating the glasses or windows, he continued to flash, appearing before the elder in a blink of an eye. Only then did the elder realized his amazing speed and it was already impossible to attempt any escape.

Despite his slow reaction, the elder was still able to make a promptly counterattack, intending to reflect Big Yellow's incoming attack. He thought that this hound must be out of his mind to attack him using its head, it was like digging a grave for himself.

Unfortunately, he lacked the understanding of Big Yellow's power.

Bang...

Puff...

Big Yellow's head faltered the attack and made a powerful impact on the elder's chest. He could feel the impact like a huge mountain pressing on his chest, causing him to fly away from his original position. Blood was spurting from his mouth continuously while his body was still in the air, then, fell on the ground. All of the movements on his body stopped after a few contractions of the major muscles.

Wah...

Everyone was in a state of shock, they were all shaken by the incident. The disciples of Asura Palace who rushed out following the elder were frightened to retreat one after another, as if they had seen a haunting ghost. The expression of their eyes were covered with fear, the hound was too strong, he could kill a Seventh Grade Combat King by just ramming him.

“My goodness... How hard is this dog’s head?”

Tyrant the monk couldn’t accept it either. Tan Lang was willing to prostrate himself before Big Yellow in admiration. This dude didn’t only know how to fart, his head was as hard as a diamond, killing the Seventh Grade Combat King by the impact of his head. Although his ability was still far away if it was to be compared with the ability of Master Ran Feng to kill a person of the Ninth Grade Combat King using eye contact, he possessed a power that was hard to believe without witnessing it.

Quack...Quack...

His lively laughter soon filled the air above Asura Palace. If the news of a hound showing off his ability was to spread out in Asura territory, the Palace would lose the respect of other people.

Big Yellow wasn’t paying attention to the fearful feeling of the people. He twisted his body around, aiming his backside at them again. Tyrant and Tan Lang shook their heads when they saw Big Yellow in this posture. They felt that their existence in the scene

was unnecessary, Big Yellow alone was enough to cause a total confusion in this place.

Hiss...

Many of them were gasping their last breath of fresh air. Those who had witnessed the horrifying effect of Big Yellow's fart made a prompt escape from the scene, flying away as far as they can like a mad bird. The rest went blank and stunned, they absolutely had no idea that the worst thing of their lives was going to happen, not knowing why the hound had tilted his buttocks higher than usual. They were having doubts about his action, 'This hound could also use its backside to make his attack like how it used its head?'

They had made the right guess.

"Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart."

Bang...

Followed by Big Yellow's roar that could tremble the sky and land, the loudness of the sound waves could match the sound produced by the combination of lightning and land mines which was deafening. If one goes closer to the source of the sound, his spirit could also be vibrated.

A cloud of green gases rushed out from Big Yellow's buttocks, and bursts out after that, the flow of gases were forming multiple double-edged swords, travelling in all directions. This was no

different than the previous attack, but it seemed like Big Yellow wanted the entire Asura Palace to be totally enveloped by his fart.

The disciples who stayed put in their position could feel a wave of hot air passing through their bodies, then followed by an excruciating pain as if they had entered into hell.

“Some of them retched...It was unpleasant...wah...”

“Puff...extremely stinky...Let me die for good.”

“For f*ck’s sake! How can this dog possibly let out something so smelly? If I die under this dog’s fart and enter into the underworld, I will not have courage to face my ancestors, Bleeuuurrrggghh...”

.....

Big Yellow’s fart was his most powerful weapon, it attacks his enemy physically and psychologically.

The whole scene fell into a mess. Everyone in the sky was vomiting, some even vomited blood, letting out piercing shriek. The men in scene were the elites of the elites, it was a shock that all of them vomited in such a way. But it couldn’t be helped, the fart of this hound was way too revolting. Some people tried to use their Yuan Force to blow away the flow of gases, but soon realized that the gases were like stubborn bone ulcers, once they had touched their skin, there was no way of getting them away.

“Quickly, inform Elder Liu.”

Someone screamed. Asura Palace had invited an unprecedented chaos. They had totally forgotten the past incident of Jiang Chen murdering the Second Tycoon, at this point, they only had the magnificent Big Yellow Hound in their head, truly unimaginable, they did not understand how the world could have such great gifts.

Whizz...Whizz...Whizz...

Suddenly, roughly six to seven of insolent shadows flew out from the internal area of the Palace. These people were at the supreme level, they wouldn't appear under normal circumstance, only putting all their efforts in training. They are all of the Ninth Grade Combat King, their ultimate desire was to break through the bottleneck and become combat emperors.

“Wah...what's with this unpleasant smell?”

One of the elder expelled out the air he just breathed in. They frowned and found out that the air in Asura Palace was rotten, it obviously did not fit the normal air quality anymore. When they saw the disciples who retched and vomited, they went blank for a moment, not knowing the source of the smell, they thought that the sound they heard just now was robbery attempted by a group of fools.

“Humph...”

Elder Liu made a sound of humph. He possessed the power of a high level Combat King, his specialty of skill was fire, blazing flames were spurting out from his body, burning away all the polluted gases in the sky above Asura Palace, restoring the clear and blue sky.

This was because the skill was casted by Elder Liu. If it was a normal disciple, eliminating the fart entirely was impossible.

Swoosh...

Jiang Chen twisted his body around and appeared beside Big Yellow, ready to confront a few Ninth Grade Combat Kings, but Tyrant and Tan Lang wasn't in the map at that moment. Apparently, they were acting according to their plan, Tyrant and Tan Lang would take the chance of chaos, when all of their attention was directed on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, sneaked into the Asura Palace to save their friends.

Elder Liu stared at Jiang Chen, as though his fiery eyes were spouting flames, he wouldn't forget the incident the day before yesterday which not even two Ninth Grade Combat Kings could chase him, thus, allowing him to run away freely. This shameful loss added to his anger. This guys dared to break into Asura Palace, plus he had himself a dog. From their looks, it seems that they are here just to show off.

“Jiang Chen, you don't hide yourself but came to our place to cause troubles?”

Elder Liu pointed at Jiang Chen and spoke the words loudly. He had not a clue of what was Jiang Chen's thoughts. He had to be out of his mind to think that he was invincible given his level of power and came into their territory to ask for a fight.

“Are you not looking for me everywhere? Now that I have come. Come and catch me if you are good enough.”

Jiang Chen said it with his provocative look, trying to stir up their anger.

“Okay, since you don't want choose the path to heaven but instead intruded into the gates of hell, I will fulfill your death wish. You have killed so many of our disciples and escaping to any part of the world would also mean DEATH.”

Elder Liu said it with a stern look. A few of his comrades shifted their positions slowly, surrounding them, making them at the center of the circle.

Excitement was the only expression on Big Yellow's face, Jiang Chen's face was showing a carefree sign. Given his Fifth Grade Combat King, he couldn't defeat any of the Ninth Grade, but his enemy couldn't kill him as well because his was partnering with Big Yellow who was an abnormal being. His tacit mutual understanding with Big Yellow was synchronized.

At this time, Big Yellow's voice flew into Jiang Chen's ears all of a sudden, “Kid, inside the Palace has treasure.”

Jiang Chen eyes sparkled after hearing the latest information. It had been a long time since Big Yellow sensed any treasure. It hadn't been anything ordinary and it had always been something rare, this fact had already been proven a long time ago in their past encounters.

“Treasure, it should be the broken sword right?”

Jiang Chen asked curiously.

“No, the broken sword wasn't in the Asura Palace, I can sense it. The treasure in the Palace was impressive. I have just sensed its aura, it was carrying the properties of ice but I am unable to determine its specific location now.”

Big Yellow said.

Chapter 573 - The Lingering Of The Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart In The Air

Jiang Chen's eyes reflected two beams of sparkling light, regarding the ability of Big Yellow's sharp senses, he had no doubt about it. Since Big Yellow had claimed that there is a hidden treasure in the palace, it must be there. The properties of the treasure was of coldness and frost, it resembled Jiang Chen's journey in the Cold Hell Prison. That time, he entered into the prison to save Han Yan, he didn't notice the temperature of the surroundings. Thinking back now, he thinks that the prison is extraordinary, the frosty air in it was fascinating, it seemed like this type of air only can be produced under special condition.

Jiang Chen reasoned with the facts and histories. Big Yellow could sense the treasure, it is likely related to the Cold Hell Prison, but it is not the current problem now. These enemies with Ninth Grade Combat King weren't like the beginners, they must be handled with caution.

“Act now, take them down, and be careful not to let him run away this time.”

Elder Liu gave off the command, he did not have any concerns regarding these two lads, in his eyes, Jiang Chen was only a Fifth Grade Combat King, he only possess the ability to escape even if he has the power of the devil. Today, he cannot escape again, if he does so, it will put Asura Palace to shame in front of everybody. In fact, the hound wasn't even his concern at all, he is just a Seventh Grade Demon King beast, not worth considering him.

Boom...

Few of them started to release their Qi. A while later, waves of energy were flying straight up to the sky, creating a terrifying effect.

“Let’s attack!”

Jiang Chen shouted. The mark of the Fire Dragon was formed immediately, thrusting to the direction of an enemy. At the same time, Big Yellow was roaring madly with his Soul Crunching Tune at another enemy, his god’s gift was more terrifying than before because the level of his Grade is at the peak of Seventh Grade Demon King now, it was hard to measure how powerful he has become.

Roar...

Endless waves of sound lashed in the enemies’ direction, forming layers of spiral, this wasn’t the same attack made, but an attack made specifically to the Ninth Grade Combat King. If Big Yellow attacked his enemy focusing on one, his Soul Crunching Tune could deal a lot of damage to his enemy, but the attack on multiple targets wouldn’t make any impact on them as his opponents could stop and break his spell with their shared strengths.

“Humph, he is just a Fifth Grade soldier and dare to be this presumptuous?”

A Ninth Grade Combat King made a proud and cold humph. With a wave of one of his hands, he unleashed another Dharma Seal, colliding with Jiang Chen's mark of the Fire Dragon. Mighty impacts directly tearing and breaking the space. The mark of the Fire Dragon was destroyed instantly, Jiang Chen's body was shaken but no damage was done on his body.

“Huh.”

The elder's face was full of surprise, he changed his way of thinking at Jiang Chen. He did not expect that a Fifth Grade Warrior, who could just die by the pinch of his fingers, could endure one of my attacks and still alive, no..., there wasn't any wound on his body.

However, the elder who was truly shocked was the one that Big Yellow confronted. The Soul Crunching Tune was too powerful, this was because he underestimated Big Yellow, and he was defenseless. He was attacked from the front, the feeling of rupture could be felt from his spirit, turning his face pale.

“This hound was scary, and can never be underestimated.”

That elder gave his comments quickly, affecting the rest of the elders and focusing on Big Yellow.

Wa...Ka...Ka...

Big Yellow laughed happily. His speed was fast, a pair of golden

wings appeared on his back, going past the barrier they set in a blink of an eye, breaking away from their encirclement. At the same time, Jiang Chen built an escape route in the space zone, and managed to break free from the elders.

“Kill!”

Elder Liu shouted with force. He had never thought that these two lad in front of him could be so cunning, and moved in such a great speed. They changed their underestimating view on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow and began to chase after them at full speed.

“Big Yellow, don’t fight them head-on, but earn more time for Tyrant and Tan Lang.”

Jiang Chen said. The Heavenly Saint Sword was on his hand, making a slash on a Ninth Grade Combat King. Although Jiang Chen isn’t a Ninth Grade Combat King, he is clever in his tricks and strategies to fight a battle, plus the wonderful skill of space zone, he could drive his opponent to confusion.

“If that’s the case, I will surround the entire air of Asura Palace with my Fart that could induce ecstasy.”

Big Yellow said. He twisted his body around, showing his fatty buttocks to the few attackers coming in his direction.

“Elders, be careful!”

Seeing Big Yellow pull out the same stunt again, those disciples who suffered painfully before took their first move and shouted to warn them. But those warnings did not stay rooted in their heart, it had to be a joke to handle a young man and an animal with unnecessary care. Plus, the question is ‘How can a few elders with Ninth Grade Combat King be unable to deal with these two individuals whose level was way lower than theirs?’.

Big Yellow’s buttocks had grown larger in size, deliberately twisting it in front of his attacker.

“Go to hell FOOLISH DOG! I will SKIN you to stew a pot of meat.”

An elder opened his mouth and cursed. From his point of view, Big Yellow’s deliberate act was an insult to them. Being a high rank elder in Asura Palace and a Ninth Grade Combat King senior, it is more than a disgrace to be humiliated by a hound.

Bang...

The Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart was released again, the earth and sky were shaken. His action wasn’t just to serve as a humiliation to his enemies.

Green waves of gases drifted across the sky. Without any precautions taken, these elders would never escape this attack even with their level. When they are hit by it, they might be able to blow them away but the process of puking is unavoidable.

Bleu...act...(Sound of vomiting)

They ended up in a tragedy. Several of them were heading in Big Yellow's direction to make their first kill, but the intense smell ran in their nostrils making them empty inside out. It was worse than eating a housefly, the puking was not under their control as if the remains in their stomach were struggling to get out from their mouth when the tongue tasted the particles of the Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart.

“Big Yellow. Do not stop.”

Jiang Chen had flown to a farther location carrying his sword, and shouted at his friend.

“Okie.”

The restraint that Big Yellow felt when he was incapacitated still bothered him. Now is the best time to release all of the stifling feeling once and for all as he possesses the Seventh Grade Demon King and fart skill is that he is very good at.

The incident that followed was bad news to Asura Palace, it was a real tragedy. A pair of wings grew out from Big Yellow's back, he was flying around the palace in a three hundred sixty degree rotation. His backside was like a spraying can with continuous ejection of green gases.

Dong...Dong...Dong...

The sound created in the sky was endless, those were the fart of Big Yellow. Instantly, green air particles flowed in the entire Asura Palace . The gas was no longer the flow of gas that could only make people vomit, hurricane-force winds were travelling at great speed, covering the whole area.

“Ah...STICKY SHIT! BLUACCCTTTT...”

“F***! Kill the dog now!”

“FOR GOD SAKE!... BLUACCCTTTT... It will smoke me to death.”

.....

Everyone in the palace went insane that included the disciples on the ground, they too could not escape from the intensity of the stinky smell, trying to grab something before puking.

Wakaka...Wa...HAHA...

The mad laughter of Big Yellow joined in the flow of green gas, it was heard by many of them.

Elder Liu was on fire, putting out all of his effort to incinerate all the unpleasant gases, but it did not make any impact on it as the gas was way too thick plus Big Yellow was still releasing them

without a pause. So, making the air fresh again wasn't a feasible option at this moment.

“Kill him, Quickly! STOP HIM!”

Elder Liu screamed using all the breath in his lungs. His hand was holding a combat blade, charging at Big Yellow. His body was surrounded by fire, he was not affected by any of the green gases. As for the rest of the Ninth Grade Combat King, they had to bear the smell while continuing to make their attack on Big Yellow, giving up on their target which was Jiang Chen.

There was no choice, this dog is a hateful being for covering the Palace fully with the foul gas. If this dog is not dead today, the Asura Palace will be an eternal laughing stock in Liang Province, there will be endless shame.

“Haha! You all want to kill me? I don't think you all are capable to! Come and follow my back, wait to taste my fart, it is freshly made!”

Big Yellow laughed with happiness, not even having the slightest fear for his enemies. The lightning speed of his pair of wings increased his speed further, matching the speed of Jiang Chen in the space zone. It was not possible anymore for the Ninth Grade Combat Kings to chase him.

What followed was that, Big Yellow's Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart was unlimited, it couldn't be stopped. As Big Yellow did not have the intention of stopping his attack, the gases spread all

over of Asura Palace Mountains as if creating a layer of dark colored fog.

Few of the elders cried out with rage, but none of them were able to even catch Big Yellow's tail. It was very disappointing for them.

Below them, Tyrant and Tan Lang were in cold sweat. The impression they have for Big Yellow had changed drastically. They were going to collide with a big wave of green gases, perhaps those gases had received some kind of instructions from Big Yellow, and they dispersed and move to different directions when they were about to collide. Despite the fact, they couldn't escape from the unpleasant smell which made them frown.

“This hound is a gift from the god, he is invincible.”

Tyrant shook his head and was speechless.

“We better get going to save them, I do not want to stay here any longer.”

Tan Lang thought that if anyone who stays in this situation for a certain period of time, the smell would be embedded in the person's skin; impossible to wash away.

“You were once the disciple of Asura Palace, you should know the place that they are imprisoned.”

Tyrant asked.

“The Hall of Law has an underground prison. If I am not mistaken, they should be there. Since the Cold Hell Prison was destroyed by little Chen, the prison underground is the only left to be used.”

Tan Lang said. Two men sped towards the Hall of Law. The whole Asura Palace is in confusion currently, many of them were busy vomiting. No one noticed the two uninvited guests intruding into their palace.

In front of them was a First Grade Combat King meditating with his legs crossed, using his Yuan Force to resist the outer green gases but Tan Lang awoke him by slapping him.

That disciple opened his eyes. His face changed when he saw Tan Lang. Tan Lang wasn't the same as before. He who was his comrade has now become his enemy. If Tan Lang were to kill him, he wouldn't have a chance.

“Bro... Brother Tan Lang.”

The disciple was struck with intense nervousness.

“I come to ask you, where are Chang Qing and the others imprisoned?”

Tan Lang asked.

Chapter 574 - The Rescue

“In...In the Dungeon.”

The disciple did not dare to hide any of the truth, telling them the exact location of Chang Qing. The Asura Palace is in a state of chaos right now, the stinky smell is everywhere. Meeting Tan Lang and a frightening monk in such a chaotic situation was a disaster; he could die at any moment.

It was under Tan Lang's estimation. The Cold Hell Prison was destroyed. Even if it was rebuilt, it won't be possible for them to finish its construction in a short period of time. In addition, Chang Qing and his friends did not commit a serious crime, it wasn't heavy enough to be imprisoned into the Cold Hell Prison.

Tan Lang and Tyrant rushed to the direction of the Hall of Law without any delay. To them, rescuing Chang Qing and his friends was their only task, but it was truly difficult to be put in this unpleasant situation where the air was so stinky it was suffocating.

Tan Lang was very familiar with the path; they reached their destination in no time. The Hall of Law is a very important department, it is indispensable. The elder who was in charge here possessed a Ninth Grade Combat King, but all of the Ninth Grade together with the Eighth Grade, had gone out to face Big Yellow and Jiang Chen. The highest level of combat king in charge now an elder of Seventh Grade Combat King. At this time, not many guards stayed in the hall and it became somewhat isolated.

No one would be able to notice that there is someone attempting to break into the Asura Palace on a rescue mission in this chaotic situation. In truth, for the people in the Asura Palace, the thought wouldn't even cross their minds. They wouldn't even think that Jiang Chen would make his intrusion into the Asura Palace at all costs just to rescue his friends who are just ordinary human beings. Breaking into the Asura Palace just like that would mean death.

Tan Lang was once a core disciple of the Asura Palace, coming into the Hall of Law wasn't his first time. That's why he was so familiar with this place. He and Tyrant went past the guards without getting noticed and sneaked into the Dungeon silently.

The Dungeon was dark and cold. It was built in the empty space under the Hall of Law which was a mountain. Of course, the Cold Hell Prison was much larger. No stranger was allowed to enter the Dungeon if it was during normal hours due to the strict guard system.

But now, since the Asura Palace had been totally distracted by the polluting gas, they have a golden opportunity.

Very quickly, they had arrived at the big gates of the Dungeon. The gates were made of volcanic rocks, it was very solid. In addition to that, there was a Prohibition Seal on the gates which made it even harder to open it.

“This is the Dungeon, Chang Qing and the others is jailed in it.”

Tan Lang said.

“Step aside.”

Tyrant waved his hand.

Tan Lang wasn't able to react in time and saw Tyrant's palm slammed on that rocky gate. A loud bang could be heard, the door crumbled into pieces as quickly as the sound was heard. Not only that, the Prohibition Seal was torn, this attempt made the entire Dungeon to shake.

Tan Lang rolled his eyes. This is a brute monk. That Prohibition Seal was simple, it wasn't difficult to remove it, so it was unnecessary for him to break the solid gate with his fierce slam. This clearly would attract enemies stronger than us.

Fortunately, all of the Ninth Grade Combat King were busy hunting down Big Yellow; none of them could spare their energy in guarding this place. If not, the rescue plan would become extremely difficult.

“Little Chen destroyed the Cold Hell Prison. And we destroyed the Dungeon.”

Tyrant smiled and strode into the Dungeon.

“Who trespassed the Dungeon?”

At this very moment, a shout came from outside. Later, his shadow appeared outside of the Dungeon with lightning speed. When he saw that the rocky gates of the Dungeon were destroyed, his facial expression changed. He raised his head and clearly saw two men heading into the Dungeon.

He shouted, “Stand right there!”

Tyrant and Tan Lang waved their hands to him. Tan Lang smiled and continued in his direction into the Dungeon with faster speed than before without looking back. Maybe no one knew how powerful the monk was but he was certain about his abilities, it was the peak of Sixth Grade Combat King. So, eliminating a Seventh Grade Combat King is a piece of cake. If he had encountered an Eighth Grade Combat King, the monk’s power was sufficient in defeating him, and killing him wouldn’t be impossible.

KENG

The elder recognized the monk. He heard Tyrant and Jiang Chen’s name before; it had spread within the Liang Province. He knew that he was incapable in dealing with him, but he still wielded his own combat weapon, it was a long and narrow sword. The tremble of the long sword shattered the air around it while slashing on Tyrant’s head.

“Infinite Light!”

Tyrant ferociously slammed the elder’s sword attack with his

palm; it was a radiating big palm print. It wasn't an Immovable Ming Emperor's palm print, it was just a normal palm print of Buddha but it was enough to counter the attack of the Seventh Grade Combat King.

BANG

The terrifying palm print met the elder's sword. The combat weapon held by the elder flew out after the impact; his palm that was used to grip his combat weapon was shattered. He made a melancholic scream and his entire body flew out of his original position, he then lay on the ground with all parts of his body twitching continuously.

An intimidating Seventh Grade Combat King succumbed to the palm of the monk and had become disabled and was totally defeated. It was merely a common palm print, if it was the Immovable Ming Emperor's palm print, he would be dead.

“Infinite Light”

Tyrant put his palms together, the robe on his body started to vibrate. He stood outside the Dungeon as if he was a man that could defend thousands of army. With his current Combat King ability, it is enough to fight any people from Asura Palace that are below Eighth Grade.

It was damp and dark in the Dungeon, the condition here was terrible but it wasn't a big deal for a strong friar. At least, this place was a lot better than the Cold Hell Prison.

At this point, there were roughly seven to eight prisoners. These people's faces were very unattractive. It was Chang Qing and the others; they were the followers of Tan Lang when he was still a disciple of Asura Palace. The prison cell was made of ordinary materials. They could just break the bars with ease, but they chose not to because it was just useless. There was no way out of this place.

Chang Qing and the rest were had a disheartened expressions on their faces. Besides anger, endless sadness could be sensed from them. They were the disciples of the Asura Palace and were very loyal to the palace, making this place as their home. It was because they had followed Tan Lang before that their imprisonment was definite. The metal cell in front was just an insult to them.

They had entered into the Dungeon for a day and today was the day they erased all their emotional attachment to the Asura Palace. This ruthless Sect would only bring nothing but a great deal of sadness.

When the rocky gates opened, light shined from outside. The listless Chang Qing suddenly stood up, paying attention to the source of the light. They just heard the sound of fighting, then a shadow that moved with lightning speed sprinted towards their direction. A feeling of surprise was all over their faces when they saw the person's face clearly.

“Brother Tan Lang.”

“It’s great! Brother Tan Lang is here to rescue us!”

.....

Everyone was amazed when he appeared. Originally, they were the followers of Tan Lang. At first, they blamed Tan Lang for their imprisonment, complaining that he was the cause to all their troubles. But after a day staying in the prison, their point of view changed. All the complaints shifted and the blame is put on the Asura Palace now. Seeing Tan Lang barging into the Dungeon to save them, a feeling of gratitude filled their hearts.

BANG

Tan Lang waved and produced a ray of light, the prison cell before him was crushed and fell. Chang Qing and the rest came out of the cell. Tan Lang made a sigh of relief in his heart when he saw none of them suffered any injuries.

“Brother Tan Lang, what made you come all the way here? It seemed like the situation outside was in chaos.”

Chang Qing asked. The moment the rocky gates of the Dungeon was destroyed by the monk, they could hear the sound coming from outside. From their past experiences, the Asura Palace hadn’t been this chaotic before. They also felt that Tan Lang’s power wasn’t the same as a few months before, he was much stronger now which made them feel stressful but, at the same time, delighted.

“Jiang Chen was dealing with the elders out there. Let me bring you all out of this place.” Tan Lang said.

He turned around and flew towards the exit of the Dungeon. A few of them saw a monk blocking the gates with domineering aura. In front of him was several people lying on the ground, paralyzed. Chang Qing and his comrades were shocked. These people lying on the ground wasn't someone they did not know. They were all the elders guarding the Hall of Law, the lowest was Sixth Grade Combat King but all of them were beaten up as though dead dogs lying on the ground.

“Monk. I have rescued them.” Tan Lang said.

“You two leave this place immediately after the rescue.”

At this time, Jiang Chen's voice sounded in both Tan Lang and Tyrant's ears. The two of them looked at each other and nodded. Currently, it is the most chaotic moment in the Asura Palace. Chang Qing and his friend's Combat King level were too weak, they could only escape during the confusion. As for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, escaping isn't a problem at all. If these two exceptional people want to leave, no one can stop them.

“Let's go! But, hold your breath!”

Tyrant reminded everyone and left the place.

“Woah! Very stinky! What kind of smell is this? Blueeaccct...”

Chang Qing was the first to puke after leaving the Dungeon. He swore that it was the stinkiest smell in the whole world. The rest had their faces changed and turned pale, then they vomited.

“I told you guys to hold you breath.” Tyrant shook his head.

Now they understand the reason for the monk’s reminder as the smell was poisonous.

“We will leave from the back of the mountain.”

Tan Lang said. All of them were the disciples of the palace and were very familiar with almost all the routes. Then, after they bore the disgusting smell, they continued on their route to the back of the mountain with faster pace.

Wakaka...

Above the sky, Big Yellow was laughing out loud. There was no end to the fart of this hound, it wasn’t going to finish. The entire Asura Palace had been made a mess because of him.

Chapter 575 - The Escape

“Let’s do the Profound Sky Formation now, and shred this dog to pieces!”

Elder Liu shouted with haste. The Eighth and Ninth Grade Combat Kings of the Asura Palace had gone mad. The combat weapons that was held in their hands were flying in the air. While trying to hunt down the hound, they vomited from time to time which had mostly diminished their image.

From the Ninth Grade’s point of view, chasing after the dog behind his back and couldn’t even catch him, and instead, they were being fooled. It was a total disgrace.

Elder Liu couldn’t stand it anymore. The speed of the hound was too fast, there’s no way they could match his speed. If this dog wasn’t stopped and continued farting, the entire Asura Palace would not have peace. It would put all the elders’ faces covered in shame once the news spread out.

After receiving the direct order from Elder Liu, they instantly joined together to start the Profound Sky Formation. The sky above the Asura Palace was locked and sealed, they wanted to use the formation to trap Big Yellow, ready for their capture of the hound.

“Haha... Using this formation to catch me? It seems my fart really paralysed many of your brain cells.”

Big Yellow laughed. It was pointless to use the formation on Big Yellow, he was well-equipped with the knowledge of formations in the holy book. Big Yellow had long since uncovered many complex formations, so a simple Profound Sky Formation would not trouble him.

Hua La

When it was completed, the Profound Sky Formation showed a crystal clear appearance. The force from the formation enveloped Big Yellow without giving him a moment's warning, but it didn't work on him. He just twisted his body and flew out of the formation like a cunning loach.

“What?” Elder Liu said, his eyes widening.

It wasn't something easy to believe. There were so many elders taking part in the formation, but Big Yellow just escaped with minimal effort. The formation couldn't trap him. No, it was just that nobody could stop him. It was amazing for the dog to be at this level.

“Haha... You want me? Do you believe that I will let you eat my crap?”

Big Yellow laughed. His sturdy body was drifting above the sky while his buttocks kept on releasing the green gases. Those words weren't exactly what he meant, they just simply came out from his mouth. But, this made those who heard his statement to panic and be frightened. If the dog had the powerful ability to release

poisonous fart, excretion of solid wastes would definitely send a lot of people to hell. They had a good reason to believe that this dog had the ability to do that.

“Kill! Kill him. We must kill him at all costs!”

Elder Liu’s eyes were becoming red, making him look like a madman. Big Yellow was the only one who can affect someone who had strong and firm willpower like Elder Liu to go insane.

All the attention were put on Big Yellow, none of them had noticed Jiang Chen, andalso Tyrant and Tan Lang who was escaping with his friends during the chaos.

Currently, Tyrant and Tan Lang had already brought Chang Qing and the rest out of the Asura Palace from the back mountain. A feeling of fear lingered in Chang Qing and his friends’ heart, it was like the feeling after a robbery. They looked back and saw that the Asura Palace had fallen into chaos, mixed feelings filled their minds, as if a bottle of five separate flavours had mixed after it is overturned, it was an unknown feeling.

“Brother Tan Lang, where do we go now?”

Chang Qing gazed at Tan Lang. The rest of them did the same. At this time, without a doubt, Tan Lang was their leader in their hearts.

Tan Lang frowned while contemplating and said, “Return to

Rainbow City. Jiang Chen has reappeared. All the attention are now on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, they have no time to look after you guys. Moreover, the Asura Palace want a good image for themselves. Putting you guys in more trouble isn't going to help their reputation."

What Tan Lang said was right. The reputation of the Asura Palace had faltered. The entire Asura Palace was manipulated by Big Yellow Hound's fart, it was very shameful to them.

"Very well. We will follow Brother Tan Lang's advice."

The rest of them nodded.

"Let's go. We will leave this place first. Little Chen and Big Yellow will find their own way of retreat." Tyrant said.

Vibration could be observed on Tyrant's robe, the space zone was broken by his bare hands. A powerful gravitational force formed from his robe, laying itself on the disciples who had a combat soul. Soon, all of them involuntarily entered into the space zone and were brought away.

In the sky above the Asura Palace, Big Yellow was thrilled in making fun of them which meant stopping wasn't any of his intentions. This hound was only scared of the peaceful moment in the world, moreover he didn't have any good feeling towards the Asura Palace. So, today, he wanted to express all of his stifling emotions created out of helplessness during a few months of deep sleep. His Invincible Whirlwind Spirit Fart was the cruelest

weapon of all, besides its powerful effects, it could also make people go insane.

Jiang Chen positioned himself further away from the scene, a layer of fiery red shield was covering his entire body, incinerating all gases that tried to attack his body. Since all of them were distracted by Big Yellow, Jiang Chen had become idle which also made him feel bored. He thought that at least they should assign two of them to capture him, he was totally disregarded and it's somewhat shameful.

No one came to attack or capture him at the moment. He was delighted and felt peaceful. He didn't have a slightest worry for Big Yellow's life. Even if all those people come together to attack Big Yellow, seeing injuries on his body was impossible. Jiang Chen was confident about that.

Jiang Chen scanned the palace. He activated the Great Soul Derivation Technique secretly, trying to locate the treasure that Big Yellow mentioned earlier but he found nothing.

“It is a treasure with properties towards coldness and it was sensed by Big Yellow. It had to be a rare treasure hidden underneath. Even my Great Soul Derivation Technique can't locate it, it has to be hidden very deep inside and is very related to the Freezing Hell Jail.”

Jiang Chen talked to himself. He had no idea what the treasure that Big Yellow mentioned was, but he felt that the treasure hidden in the Asura Palace would have great effect on him. The sixth sense from the Great Soul Derivation Technique was very precise and

mysterious.

Jiang Chen closed his eyes slowly; letting the Great Soul Derivation Technique to reach the peak state. With his Fifth Grade Combat King, it was enough to allow his spiritual strength to penetrate into every part of the space zone in the Asura Palace.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen opened his eyes. His spiritual strength felt the existence of another space zone. The zone wasn't completed, it must be built not long ago. The coordinate of the space zone was right above the Freezing Hell Jail.

In other words, after the Freezing Hell Jail was destroyed by Jiang Chen a few months ago, it was rebuilt. Although the structure of the building had been built, it was still far from completion.

“For a combat emperor to create a perfect space zone in such a short period of time isn't an easy task. It seems the treasure is in the Freezing Hell Jail. There had to be a connection between rebuilding the Freezing Hell Jail and the treasure.”

Jiang Chen's eyes brightened. There were a few key factors in his calculations. He discovered its relation by connecting the incident last time in the Freezing Hell Jail and the cold properties of the treasure sensed by Big Yellow.

“I will have to go in the Freezing Hell Jail to find the location of the treasure.”

Jiang Chen prepared to make his visit in the Freezing Hell Jail again. But his facial expression changed before he had the chance to leave.

“Big Yellow. Run!”

Jiang Chen shouted at Big Yellow who was still in joyful mood while playing with his fart. Then he spun and break open the space zone and it disappeared as fast as it appeared. On the other hand, Big Yellow didn't dare to delay his escape, intensely making flaps on his wings and entering into the space zone like a drill and vanished.

Three tyrannical figures flew towards their direction far away from the sky a few seconds after they disappeared. These three weren't strangers, they were LI Tian Yang, Elder Yuan and Xian Nan Feng who just came back from the Gorge Mountains,

Rage filled their faces. Apparently, when they just returned to Liang Province, they heard the news that Jiang Chen was still alive and the incident where Jiang Chen killed the Second Tycoon and over thirty disciples. There was no way for Li Tian Yang not to be angry, not to mention the disgusting condition of the Asura Palace caused by the green gases.

“WHAT HAPPENED?!!”

Li Tian Yang shouted with rage.

“Master, it was Jiang Chen...”

Elder Liu roared with his fiery eyes.

He used the God Recitation Messenger to transfer all the information of the incidents that had happened in a blink of an eye.

“They’ve ran towards that direction. Get them!”

Xian Nan Feng could sense the motion of the space zone and determined Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s traces of escape and immediately rushed towards it.

Li Tian Yang and Elder Yuan’s were so angry, as if their faces were becoming extra red. They followed Xiao Nan Feng’s back. Jiang Chen didn’t die and had come to the Asura Palace to show off his abilities. He was certainly seeking death.

Li Tian Yang’s intense hatred for him wasn’t ordinary. There was no escape for him this time, he must catch Jiang Chen, torture him violently for making this mess and then refine him into his exceptional incarnation.

Jiang Chen casted the space zone spell, penetrating into deeper zone as if a dragon swimming in the vacuum with great speed, which was not traceable by anyone. Big Yellow wasn’t on his side now. When he felt the strong masters approaching, he and Jiang Chen separated. He was savvy and had his own way of escaping.

At first, Jiang Chen wanted to trespass the Freezing Hell Jail in search for the treasure, but luckily he did not. He wouldn't have the chance of leaving the place if he did.

“Damn! It's getting closer, it seems like I can't run away today.”

Jiang Chen muttered to himself in disappointment. Although he has the space zone's passage, there is a wide gap between a Fifth Grade Combat King and a First Grade Combat Emperor, not to mention, Li Tian Yang who had reached the peak of the First Grade Combat Emperor.

Elder Yuan was also a First Grade Combat Emperor, he possessed great power. Xiao Nan Feng hadn't reached the Combat Emperor realm yet, but he was already at the peak of Ninth Grade Combat King, he was just halfstep to the next realm. He is incomparably better than Elder Liu who was also a Ninth Grade Combat King.

“Jiang Chen. I've found you. Surrender now, it is pointless in escaping.”

Li Tian Yang roared at the space zone, the air particles trembled due to the sound waves and penetrated into the space zone. He had found Jiang Chen's coordinates and he wouldn't let him escape this time.

Chapter 576 - There Is No Way To Run

Li Tian Yang's voice was vibrating with rage. It sounded like a stream of air particles was trying to escape from the lid of the kettle. No one dared to defy one of the four overlords of the State of Liang. If he said one, no one would dare say two. Nobody would question his ability. By dominating the State of Liang, countless of gifted young people went to Asura Palace to find benefits. However, Li Tian Yang fell under the hands of Jiang Chen, now, feelings frustrations and humiliations were running inside him.

Accepting the fact that his Freezing Hell Jail, which was built by his exhaustive efforts, was destroyed, that large numbers of his young, gifted disciples were killed and, now, the Asura palace was filled with poisonous gases was never easy for him. It was not just slapping his face, but igniting his resentment against Jiang Chen, wanting to skin him off and consume him raw.

“If you can catch me, we will talk.” A cold smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face. He was like a dragon entering into the spatial shift. His movement in the spatial shift was so fast, it was shocking. Even the skill was perfect, and it was still unknown if Jiang Chen was at his maximum ability. With his current grade of power, he couldn't unleash his real power. If Jiang Chen had mastered Combat Emperor or even Minor Saint now, his power to travel in the spatial shift would be at least 10 times his current speed. A jump would be equivalent to miles. His speed was unpredictable and they called this ‘travelling without a trace’.

“Great Elder, you and Nan Feng go to the other side to stop him. We must capture this young lad by any means necessary!”

Li Tian Yang said while gritting his teeth.

“Good”

Great Elder and Xiao Nan Feng responded without any objections. The two of them transformed into rays of light that flew onto the other side, rushing towards Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was a heterogeneous being that could cause catastrophe, he was sending his enemies a myriad of feelings. They were wondering how a Fifth Grade Combat King that would easily die under their grip could travel in such an incredible speed. There were two First Grade Combat Emperors and a Ninth Grade Combat King but none of them were able to match his speed. If they didn't experience it personally, they would not believe it if they just heard it from others.

“Damn! Can't get rid of them!”

There was nothing in front of Jiang Chen, but behind his back, the unexpected was going to happen. Jiang Chen was moving quickly at his maximum speed as if lightning was helping him. Although he was still ahead, the Combat Emperors and Ninth Grade Combat King could catch up to his speed at any time. With his current combat power, he could kill an Eighth Grade Combat King. For him, a Ninth Grade Combat King was really out of reach. There was even a great difference between him and the Combat Emperors.

“Jiang Chen, boy, where are you running to?”

At this moment, a loud sound came from the other side, a powerful aura was locking on Jiang Chen's, and it indicates violence and intensity. This force is way stronger than Li Tian Yang's hatred. Someone must have wanted Jiang Chen to die long ago.

“Not good.”

Jiang Chen wasn't good at underground passages, but he could easily guess it by his instincts that it was the Invincible Nie. He was blocking Jiang Chen further away at the front, welcoming him. He could also feel the power of the other two from the back, they must be the Great Elder and Li Tian Yang.

Invincible Nie was searching for Jiang Chen all this while. His power as a Combat Emperor allowed him to find Jiang Chen anywhere once he knew Jiang Chen's coordinates. With this much of events happening in the Asura palace, Invincible Nie could sense him easily.

Combat Emperors were already incomparable to Jiang Chen, the appearance of another School of Invincible put him in an extremely dangerous situation.

BANG BANG

Only the sound of space cracking could be heard when at least three of the Combat Emperors made their attacks. The attacks broke the spatial shift of Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was helpless, he

was then being forced out of the spatial shift and fell in the sky on top of the mountains.

Whizz Whizz Whizz

One by one, rays of shadows flew out from the spatial shift, surrounding and holding Jiang Chen firmly. All these people were full of murderous aura, their eyes flickered as if flames were trying to escape from it. If the sight could kill, Jiang Chen's body would be shredded into different parts by now.

Out of the 6 people, there were four 1st Grade Combat Emperors, two of them were young Ninth Grade Combat King. The masters of Asura Palace and School of Invincible all came to seek for him.

“Jiang Chen, did you kill my Ferghana Stallion?”

The Invincible Nie demanded for an answer when he saw Jiang Chen.

“That foolish stallion was stupid enough to fall for my trap, it was poisoned to death.”

Jiang Chen admitted it frankly without hiding any of the truth. Admitting his faults would not make any difference in his current situation, as no one would let him go.

The Invincible Nie wailed the moment Jiang Chen finished his sentence. Then his eyes glowed as if fire was coming from inside

out. He gritted his teeth and said, “Good, very good, Jiang Chen, I would let you taste all the torture and pain to the greatest extent and grant your death wish once you could not take it to avenge my stallion”

Invincible Nie’s intensity of aura exploded and rose up to the sky, his gestures meant that he wanted to kill this man.

“Stop!!!”

Li Tian Yang shouted, “Invincible Nie, Jiang Chen is mine. He had killed so many of my people and destroyed my Freezing Hell Jail. I must kill him myself.”

He would not allow anyone, even the Invincible Nie, to capture Jiang Chen who had the ability to initiate disaster. The mystery embedded in this young man’s body had endless benefits. He had seen this potential in him a long time ago, thus he wanted to train him to become the incarnation of his previous saint life.

“Li Tian Yang, you are stopping me to take my revenge on him!” The Invincible Nie glared at him.

“Let me help you take your revenge on him, isn’t it the same? Li Tian Yang was not giving even the slightest chance for the Invincible Nie to take Jiang Chen away from him.”

Jiang Chen was silent. He was glancing around, finding his way out of here.

At this moment, there were few figures rushing towards their direction from different areas. There were three people from each direction. Their level of Combat Kings were on par with the one from Asura palace without a doubt. They were masters from the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace. They were also heading to the mountain of Luo Xia, on their way back, it just so happened that they met the incident.

These mountains were not ordinary mountains where only green plants and animals occupied the surface of it. Many of the trainee of Combat Kings were living on it. They were able to notice this incident. That was why so many of them were coming over to check what had happened. All of their faces turned pale when they saw the situation.

“My god, it is so scary to have so many Combat Emperors around.”

“Are these not the masters from the four strongest territory in mountains of Luo Xia? Every one of them is a powerful person of the State of Liang! The heads of the four strongest territory were here and that included Great Elder and the genius first, all of them were besieging this young man. This is the first time such a scene happened in the State of Liang.”

“That young man was the one involved in the uproar over the state of Liang. He killed the Ferghana stallion, the Invincible Nie had decided to kill this man no matter what. All of them wanted him dead as he also took many lives in the Asura Palace and in the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace. He was

extremely audacious!”

.....

Nobody wasn't shocked by the scene. Every one of the trainee's faces had a color of excitement. The scene was extreme to them.

“Dark Ming Zi, Taoist, these are our problems, why are you coming here for, joining in the fun?” said Li Wu Xiang.

“Jiang Chen has also killed the disciples of Peerless Sword Faction. I am here to claim his life for revenge.”

The Taoist, who is the master of the Peerless Sword Faction said.

“I from the Heavenly Devil Palace, I am here merely to join in the fun, but I am very interested in that young man's ability to induce catastrophe.”

Dark Ming Zi was the master of the Heavenly Devil Palace. He was wearing a black robe and he made a gloomy laugh as if he was the old man who was distributing every spoonful of soup for the prisoners.

“Ha...Ha...”

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen laughed.

“Kid, what are you laughing at? You are still able to laugh when you are facing death?”

Dark Ming Zi stared at him joyfully

“I did not expect myself to become the steamed bread of corn to you all. Since all of you want to take my life. Why don't you guys have duels within yourselves, the one who won will be the one to take my life. How does that sound to you guys? This idea is not bad right?”

Jiang Chen's face was serious as if he was putting a lot of effort to help them find a solution, he did not seem afraid at all. He was, in fact, not afraid at all. He had a trump card and if he uses it, unleashing the force of the origin of combat power left by the Grandmaster of Ran Feng, these humans would have turned into powder in an instant.

However, this talisman that was presented by a Ninth Grade Saint was a very important treasure, it's ultimate purpose was to protect his life . He would not use it until he is in the verge of dying. In other words, this talisman is the last lifesaving technique of Jiang Chen.

“Young man, do you not fear death?”

Xiao Nan Feng's eyes released two rays of light, as if letting two cold knives fall on Jiang Chen's body. His hatred towards Jiang Chen was inexplicable. This was because he thought that he was better than Jiang Chen. He was a self-proclaimed genius who hated

anyone better than him. It aroused his discomfort. In this incident, death is definite. Even if a 9th Grade Combat King was put into this kind of situation wouldn't be this calm, how could a 5th grade combat king acted in such a way?

“I am scared and I am afraid of dying, but what disgusted me is that I am talking to a person who dressed like beast, another word of mine is another humiliation.”

Jiang Chen glanced at Xiao Nan Feng and said in a very rude manner. Every time he sees him, he will think of Zhuang Fan. When he thought of Zhuang Fan's sufferings that were caused by him, that pain wrecked his mind. Now that Zhuang Fan had died, the responsibility of revenge fell on his shoulders.

Chapter 577 - The Sot Old Man

“You bastard!”

Xiao NanFeng was so furious that his fury was spilling out from his body, producing a strong wave of force rushing towards Jiang Chen. He could not wait to kill this guy. He was humiliated every time he met this man, as if his face was being hit by a hammer. The thing that provoked him the most was that he saw disdain and disrespect from Jiang Chen's eyes every time. He was the head of the Asura palace and he successfully achieved Ninth Grade of Combat King at a young age, he was one of the four geniuses in the State of Liang. Who dared not to pay respect to him? A person with only a Fifth Grade of Combat King was not eligible enough to disrespect him.

For him, tarnishing and killing other people's wives weren't wrongdoings. Anyway, it was just a part of a female's life. To him, the woman should feel honoured when someone who had the identity of genius was attracted to her. Any rebellious actions would only result in her own death.

These were the thoughts of Xiao NanFeng. Honour and reputation were his only motivation in all of his actions, he only cared for his own goal, claiming everything he did was right. However, his evil deeds angered Jiang Chen a lot.

Jiang Chen once met his strongest enemy, Nan Bei Chao, he was the most arrogant person he had ever met. He was a pretentious guy and by mastering the skill of an emperor, he would be able to conquer everything. However, he looked up to this arrogant guy

who was his enemy that determined his life and death. Ever since Nan Bei Chao was born there was an aura of an emperor inside his body. His aura was the indication of a real emperor. His gestures were way better than Xiao NanFeng. The comparison between the two would paralyze anyone's intelligence.

That instant flashback made Jiang Chen frown. Although he had defeated Nan Bei Chao by chopping off half of his body, he knew in his heart that his enemy was still alive as he would not die easily. He had a feeling that that man would appear before him sooner or later with incomparable imitation of dazzling heroic qualities.

“Heng...” Humphed Jiang Chen. He shook his shoulder once and created a real dragon handprint, destroying the wave of force of Xiao NanFeng completely.

“Have you guys finished with your discussions? If not, fight within yourselves to determine who will be the one to take my head.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glanced through everyone.

“Good kid, you are very courageous to say that! If he is a follower of the Devil Religion, I will accept him as my disciple. Unfortunately, he fell into the situation which he could not escape his death.”

Dark Min Zi fixed his eyes at Jiang Chen, admiration was reflected in his eyes. Dark Min Zi admired his fearless attitude even if he was an enemy. The Devil Religion was brutal, their style of

working was never sloppy. The principle was to never fear anything. This young lad naturally aroused the interest of the master of the Devil Religion .

“Gentlemen, Jiang Chen had obviously offended all of the major powers in the State of Liang. If that’s the case, I would like to assist you all and bring him along with me, and make your revenge on him. I would grant you all the revenge slowly and torture him to the greatest extent. It wouldn’t need the efforts of you all, but it would double the pleasure you would have. What do you all say?”

These words were said by Invincible Nie. He was bound to take Jiang Chen’s life by his own hands because Jiang Chen was the one who killed his precious horse. This hatred could only be alleviated through paying homage to the soul of his horse using Jiang Chen’s dead body.

“No way! The first party he offended was us, the Asura Palace. Many of our disciples have died in his filthy hands. It only happened just now that he brought a dog with him to Asura Palace to begin his wanton massacre, making the palace full of foul smell. The act of revenge must be taken by me. In my opinion, I will deal with this young man on behalf of you all.”

Li Tian Yang said it with determination.

“Okay, in truth, all of us know that Jiang Chen was able to cause disasters. He must have some secrets inside his body and you all want to capture him to discover this secret. It seems like no concession would be made among anyone of us, why don’t we hold him captive in a place and do the experiments together, how is it?”

said the head of Pearless Sword Faction with a smile.

“This idea is feasible.”

Dark Min Zi nodded.

“Okay, we will do it together then, this person is going to die today anyway! But, there have been rifts in the relationship between the Devil Religion and our Righteous Religion, so, it would be better if they do not join.” Invincible Nie said.

“Is that so? Why don’t we have massive battles of three hundred rounds before we talk?”

All of a sudden, a dark wave of force rushed out of Dark Min Zi’s body, heading towards Invincible Nie. He was really a hot-tempered person. Any disagreements would lead to fights. The Devil Religion was unreasonable and they fought whenever they wanted.

“Alright! Let’s do this, the four major powers will hold captive of Jiang Chen at the same time.” Shadowless Taoist quickly said.

As the head of the four major powers, he knew every one of them very well. However, the problem lied on Dark Min Zi who was the toughest to handle as he had a tyrannical attitude. If they did not bring him with them, all of them will be entangled in an endless series of fights and battles.

Li Tian Yang was dissatisfied by the results, but he had no other ways. He was the one to blame for not having Jiang Chen in their custody while he was still in Asura Palace. At this moment, he was not the only one who can make a decision. While Shadowless Taoist was able to deter one party, the other parties seemed impossible to accept his deterrence.

“Jiang Chen, let me catch you!”

Shouted Li Tian Yang. He then sped to capture Jiang Chen with his bare hands.

Two cold electron beams were released from his eyes. Even if Jiang Tian unleashed all his ultimate spells it still would do him no favor as there was no escape. When he saw Li Tian Yang was going after him, Jiang Chen’s hand also flashed out a golden beam of light. The talisman of Origin of Combat Power that was left by his grandmaster Ran Feng was casted instantly.

If they were compared in terms of ruthlessness, Jiang Chen was the most ruthless of them all. When he had decided to do something, he would achieve it at all costs. By activating his talisman, all of the people in this area would not return to their places alive. If they were all dead, the State of Liang would need to shuffle the cards again.

“I’ll see who dares to lay a finger on me!” Jiang Chen roared.

At this very moment, when Jiang Chen was just about to unleash all of the power from his Talisman of Origin of Combat Power, a

very loud sound was heard from the sky. The sound was very intense, it's like the rolling thunder was resounding throughout the sky, their souls were shaken. Li Tian Yang's face changed dramatically, and he pulled his hand back to its original position without delay and looked up into the sky.

Jiang Chen shook his palm and the talisman disappeared. He also looked up and saw a man wearing a black robe was stepping down from the sky as if he was going down in an invisible stair. Black smoke surrounded him, the smoke steamed of devil force. It was clear that he was part of the Devil Religion.

The old man's aura was too strong, he had reached the sky above the mountains in a blink of an eye. He seemed trembling and his body was very skinny but his fascinating and brooding eyes were like a spatial tunnel that could make anyone lose himself. Judge not this old man's body as no one dared to look down on him. Everyone was able to feel a very powerful pressure coming from him. From Jiang Chen's eyes, he could discern the true strength of this old man, he had reached the Sixth grade Combat Emperor.

Judging from the devil force released by the old man, people could easily identify that he was a master of the Devil Religion. He was a true old devil, which was very scary.

Jiang Chen was doubtful about this old man. He was certain that he did not know him. He had not seen him before. He had never known any Sixth Grade Combat Emperor before. It wasn't in his memory. It seemed that this old man was here to save him and this made him rather feel even more dubious.

“Who is this old man? What a scary feeling! He prevented Li Tian Yang from killing Jiang Chen, is he here to help Jiang Chen?”

“This is an old devil of the Devil Religion, the Heavenly Devil Palace absolutely did not have an existence with such an intense power, how is it possible for Jiang Chen to establish a relationship with the Devil Religion?”

“I don’t know, let’s see, the situation had changed, it seemed Jiang Chen would not die today.”

.....

There were a lot of trainees that were observing the scene. The ending of this situation was definite. The emergence of the old man was the game changer, it had turned the situation around. This old man was the real master of the Devil Religion, with a Sixth Grade of Combat Emperor Power, this kind of being could easily wipe everyone at the State of Liang off the map.

Li Tian Yang’s face became even unacceptably ugly. While facing such a great Sixth Grade Combat Emperor, their only course of action were to stand in their position and never move.

However, Dark Min Zi was extremely excited with the existence of a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. If this old man was from the Devil Religion, with this power, he must be from the Dark Devil Religion. The comparison between his Heavenly Devil Palace and the Dark Devil religion was like heaven and earth.

Dark Min Zi took huge steps towards the old man and bowed to him sincerely and said, “I am the master of the Heavenly Devil Palace, I am honored to meet you.”

“Uh...You are a polite kid, I am Sot Old Man of the Dark Devil religion.”

Sot Old Man declared his true identity by his first sentence.

“What? You are Sot Old Man?”

Li Tian Yang and the others exclaimed with uncertain voices. These three words of ‘Dark Devil Religion’ were frightening. All of the people here had heard his name before. Even though his power wasn’t a big deal in the Super Martial Art School in the Mysterious Domain. However, it was not the entirely scary part, it was the means he used it. He was called Sot for his addiction in killing. There was one night when he immersed himself into the dark magic, wiping off his enemies and their families with a total of three hundred people, showing no mercy to anyone who was alive, letting the blood to pollute the river.

At least no one dared to challenge him given his power and attitude.

Moreover, he was from the Dark Devil Religion which was one of the five major powers in the Mysterious Domain. That domain consisted of super powerful spheres of influence. The alliances of all masters in the State of Liang wasn’t enough to make an impact on the old man. Li Tian Yang did not expect that an old devil of the

Dark Devil Religion would take the initiative to help him. If this was the case, their revenge on Jiang Chen was not going to happen.

“I represent the Heavenly Devil Palace to pay my respect to you, Sot Old Man.”

Dark Min Zi was in fear and trepidation while he was leading Great Elder and the geniuses of Heavenly Devil Palace to greet Sot Old Man. If the tiny Heavenly Devil Palace could get themselves allied with the Dark Devil religion the benefits would be endless.

“Sot Old Man, the Dark Devil religion was amongst the super powerful power, why would you intervene with the conflicts in our State of Qi? Jiang Chen had committed unforgivable crimes. We must take our revenge!”

Li Tian Yang was holding his fists before the old man. Even those words were said by him in an amiable tone.

Chapter 578 - A Promise For War Ten Days Later

“Humph, who the hell do you think you are to talk to me this way? I could immediately crush you to death.”

Sot Old Man humphed, it instantly frightened Li Tian Yang to the extent that his face turned pale and closed his two fists as tight as he could. Even though he hated Jiang Chen very much, he did not want to pick a fight with this old man. He was a man who would kill anyone without blinking. For the old man, killing him would be as easy as moving his fingertips.

“Let me tell you all, Jiang Chen is a friend of our young master. You all wanted to kill him? Does that mean that you did not put our young master in your eyes? Are you swines trying to offend him?”

Sot Old Man said in a cold way.

“What?”

Every was shocked for a moment. Not only did all the onlookers exclaimed, Jiang Chen himself did the same. The old man pulled a real stunt. This news was really shocking. Jiang Chen could not imagine that their young master had befriended such a person like him. That's absurd! He couldn't recall meeting a friend that was the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. It was absolutely stunning.

“From now on, Jiang Chen is a friend of the Heavenly Devil Palace, we swear to protect Jiang Chen and keep him safe with our lives.”

Dark Minzi changed his attitude immediately. He now viewed Jiang Chen as his friend in front of the old man. It was a joke if he did not try to make friends with the young master of the Dark Devil Religion as he would enjoy endless benefits from the friendship.

‘Yee...It was not right. The leader of the Dark Devil Religion did not have any kids, so how is it possible for a young master to appear?’

I couldn’t care that much anymore, since Sot Old Man was protecting Jiang Chen, the Heavenly Devil Palace must obey his will. It would be stupid to lose this golden opportunity.’ Dark Minzi thought.

Jiang Chen was confused, his mind didn’t contain any piece of information regarding this person. He had no idea what was going on. Regardless of all these, the purpose of the appearance of this old devil was to save him. He didn’t care about whether the old man was from the Dark Devil Religion or not. He only knew the distinction between the kind and the bad, that the help coming from a devil was not that different from the help coming from a kind person.

“This is ridiculous! Jiang Chen is actually a friend of a young

master of the Dark Devil Religion, this is unbelievable!”

“Ah! Can’t believe this will be the turnaround. The Dark Devil Religion is too powerful. Anyone from that religion can easily eliminate all the four major powers of the Liang Province. They are no match for them. With the support of the Dark Devil Religion, the desire of Li Tian Yang and Invincible Nie to take revenge on Jiang Chen could only be left unfulfilled.”

“Exactly, judging by this old man’s attitude, upsetting him would result in the death of all the people on Asura Place and Invincible Sect.

.....

No one had ever calmed down at that moment. This turnaround made everyone worry about what might happen. The ending of the story had been turned into the beginning of another new story.

Shadowless Taoist displayed a friendlier side than Li Tian Yang and Invincible Nie. The casualties they’ve received were heavy but the resentment between Jiang Chen and the School of Sword Wu Xuang was lighter. The two disappointed leaders hated Jiang Chen’s guts, they even wanted to eat Jiang Chen raw. These unsatisfied desires caused overwhelming disagreements in their hearts.

At this moment, something changed. A powerful, strong force drifted through the air, its level was not any worse than Sot Old Man, he was another Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. It was

impossible to see any of these people here as these Combat Emperors only existed in the Mysterious Domain. The emergence of the two Combat Emperors today was unexpected.

“Sot Old Man, with the identity you have, are you degrading yourself by interfering in the matters of the State of Liang?”

His words reached all of their ears. He reached the sky above the mountains as fast as a blink of an eye. He seemed to be in his fifties, he had a white and clean face and also wore a white and clean shirt. The power he released from his body matched the old man.

“Thunder Core, this is none of your business.”

Sot Old Man humphed dismissively. Apparently, both of them knew each other and were rivals...

“What? Thunder Core from the Freedom Palace showed up today. It seems that the situation would be even more exciting.”

“The five big powers were the Freedom palace, Nebula religion, Skyhill School, Tan Family and Dark Devil religion, they dominated the Mysterious Domain. They would not even recognize the existence of Liang Province. The appearances of these two were really a breakthrough!”

“Look! This will be exciting. The Dark Devil religion is scary but the Freedom Palace is not afraid. These two old man must have

been fighting for a long time.”

.....

“Okay.”

Thunder Core replied to him naturally. He looked at Sot Old Man again and said, “Sot Old Devil, your religion is not allowed to intervene between the matters of the other state according to the rule of the five big powers. We have to leave their matters into their own hands.”

“Ha...Ha... This must be a joke, are you blind Thunder Core? So many Combat Emperors were surrounding a Fifth Grade Combat King. You are a righteous man but are you blind now? To be frank, Jiang Chen is the friend of my young master. Don’t ever think about touching him while I’m here.”

Sot Old Man laughed.

Thunder Core fixed his eyes on Jiang Chen and two beams of cold light came out, “To ally yourself with the Devil Religion, you are not a good man.”

“You? Give me one year's time and I will crush you with my finger.”

Jiang Chen said to Thunder Core in an impolite way. He said that he didn’t care about how powerful they are. Anyone who wants to

challenge him will become his enemy and they will be dead sooner or later.

“Lad, what did you say?”

Thunder Core asked furiously. It's his first time meeting a young man speaking to him in a very arrogant way.

“Ha...Ha... good, you are worthy to be called our young master's friend, boldness! You can still remain calm even in your situation.”

The old man laughed and praised Jiang Chen.

“I heard that the master of the Dark Devil Religion found a genius who had the Ancient Devil's blood by accident. It was like giving birth to a new baby, treating him like a son. Your young master is a real busybody!”

Thunder Core said it in a cool way.

All of the sudden, Jiang Chen's eyes brightened after he heard Thunder Core's words. He now understood the reason why the old man was saving his life. This young master was not only his friend, they were good friends. After realizing this, Jiang Chen laughed.

The body of an Ancient Devil can never be found even in million people. He knew his friend the most, he had no doubt that it was Han Yan. It seemed that Han Yan had a very good luck when he reached the Godly State and became one of the masters. Jiang

Chen felt relieved after knowing Han Yan's situation and whereabouts.

“I could not deny that my master had great insights about the ancient devil. When the body of an Ancient Devil was nurtured with care, its future development will be unlimited. The talent that lied in the younger master's body was not in any one of your imaginations.

Our young master's friend is in my hands now, who wants to fight with me? I am bringing Jiang Chen, Thunder Core, don't you ever think of stopping me!”

Sot Old Man said an extremely aggressive tone.

“Heng, Sot Old Eagle! I am not afraid of you! I will say the same sentence I said to you. Any matters of the state should be settled by their own. Your interference would arouse my attack on you. This kid caused a siege of so many Combat Emperors, which means he had committed a heavy crime and he must be punished.”

Thunder Core replied using the same tone.

“Thunder Core, I will grant your wish, let's fight here then, but believe it or not, the whole State of Liang would have no beings left after our battle.”

Sot Old Man was not kind to anyone when it came to battling, he would always go all out.

“Wait.”

This time, Jiang Chen spoke, his interference caused all people to have their eyes on him.

“I, Jiang Chen, will handle my own problems. If the two of you are battling here, the consequences will be deadly. The matter between us can only be settled by ourselves. However, I am under siege of so many Combat Emperors, this is shameful isn’t it? I have an idea.”

Jiang Chen shouted.

“What’s your idea?”

Li Tian Yang asked.

“A gang of Combat Emperors and old men are trying to bully me? This is shameful. My solution is to challenge any of your geniuses. Give me ten days time, at this place I would confront Asura Palace, Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction’s geniuses. Of course, if you all think that you can’t gain the upper hand at that time, all of the younger generations can join the fight, I will accept all the challenges.”

Jiang Chen said this because his conflicts with the Asura Palace must be solved. He did not want to rely on the help of the Dark Devil Religion. He must depend on himself. He would retrieve the

broken sword of Big Yellow Hound. No one should know about this secret. And nobody should also know about the treasures in the Freezing Hell Jail.

He was borrowing the power of the Dark Devil Religion to give himself more time, this act was more than enough to convince them.

“Arrogance!”

“Leader, I promise that I, alone, am enough to pinch to death.”

“It is too presumptuous, ten days isn’t enough, even after a hundred days, I, Qian Wen Yu, can kill you as easy as blowing off dust.”

After listening to Jiang Chen’s words, Xiao NanFeng was the first among the three who could not take it. This was a great humiliation to them. Jiang Chen did not even pay any respect to them. They are known as the number one geniuses, having the ability of a Ninth Grade Combat King; but being provoked by a tiny Fifth Grade Combat King was exceptionally hard to swallow.

“Jiang Chen, this is not a place where children play their sand on, you must think it again with caution.”

Sot Old Man reminded him. He didn’t expect Jiang Chen to suggest this kind of solution. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was simply a Fifth Grade Combat King. Despite the fact that he could get to the

Sixth Grade Combat king within ten days, he would still be no match to a Ninth Grade Combat King. There were three geniuses in the Liang Province. Every one of them had reached the peak of the Ninth Grade Combat King. This was not child's play. Was it possible for him to win?

Chapter 579 - I Have My Own Ways

“Don’t worry, as long as they agree and keep their promise about the battle after ten days I will let all of them face their death without burial. My only concern is that they don’t have the guts to do so.”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression showed sarcasm, he glanced through the three people he had just challenged.

“What a presumptuous kid! I will let your blood flow all over the land after ten days.”

Qian Wenyu of the School of Invincible could not bear Jiang Chen’s arrogant challenge anymore, he pointed at Jiang Chen and shouted at him offensively. Jiang Chen didn’t care about his ego, he did not even put him in his heart. His only task was to provoke these three men to acquire these ten days of time. He already had a new plan, he will need to take one step at a time to succeed. Today, the first step he would take would be the three of them.

Moreover, battling with the three geniuses of the Liang Province stimulated his will to fight. Not fighting them was totally a waste. Now, Sot Old Man as well as Thunder Core was still around. They were confronting each other aggressively, as the head of the State of Liang, Shadowless Taoist definitely would not want this to happen. Two Sixth Grade Combat Emperors would kill them all in an instant.

Plus Jiang Chen had provoked the three geniuses to their limits.

Li Tian Yang had no choice but to promise them, he was concerned that if they refused that promise it would make the three geniuses a laughing stock to everyone because of their timidity. They would lose their face everywhere they go in the Liang Province.

“Well? Do you dare to take the challenge?”

Jiang Chen looked through everyone everyone again for confirmation, his expression at the beginning was indifferent. He was calm as if he had no clue about the dangerous situation he was in right now. His courage and boldness gave people a hard time to believe that he is a young man that hadn't even reached 20.

“Okay, since you initiated the challenge, then we'll do it. It is actually a good idea for letting younger generations to have battle, so that the others would not say that we seniors bully the younger ones.”

Shadowless Taoist was the first to promise.

“All right, deal.”

Li Tian Yang had also promised while Invincible Nie had no choice but to agree as well, allowing Jiang Chen to live for ten more days. The current scenario would be unfavourable for any parties if a fight had really started.

Dark Min Zi nodded secretly, he could not help but to give a thumb up to Jiang Chen. This young man's attitude was to his

liking. He came here thinking that he will enjoy the scene but he didn't expect the friendship built between Jiang Chen and Dark Devil Religion. In other words, he will benefit endlessly if he could build his rapport with Jiang Chen who is the friend of the young master of the Dark Devil Religion.

“No wonder young master looks up to you, this kind of young man certainly has extraordinary boldness.”

Sot Old Man showed his appreciation and praised Jiang Chen. It doesn't matter whether Jiang Chen can defeat them or not, his boldness had surpassed countless of young men, making them run away with their tails between their legs.

“Humph, according to the rule, disrespecting me will result in killing you with one slap , but this is the matter of the Liang Province, I will not interfere.”

Thunder Core humph in a cool manner. Jiang Chen's disrespect was really getting him to burst out. Although he said he would not to interfere with the conflicts of other state, he wanted to slap Jiang Chen to death if Sot Old Man wasn't here.

“Thunder Core, you are not pleasing to my eyes, let's find a place to get rid of my unpleasantness.”

Sot Old Man said.

“Let's fight, I am not afraid of you.”

Thunder Core's body disappeared. Sot Old Man's legs trembled, a limitless devil force was released. He was heading towards Thunder Core's direction where he disappeared. When he passed by Jiang Chen, he tossed a crystal ball to him and said,

“Kid, this is from young master.”

The crystal ball was icy cold when Jiang Chen touched it. He knew that this icy crystal ball was used to replicate images. His guess was, inside the crystal ball was the record of images of Han Yan.

Sot Old Man and Thunder Core had disappeared and the scene returned to its original state. A nervous atmosphere manifested itself suddenly. Invincible Nie was staring at Jiang Chen, his eyes showed that he really wanted to kill Jiang Chen because of his deep hatred caused by the loss his Ferghana Stallion.

Shua

The moment Invincible Nie pulled out his sword, Dark Min Zi rushed to the front of Jiang Chen, blocking Jiang Chen's confrontation with the man and said, “Invincible Nie, the promised battle will happen after ten days, if you want to break the promise, I suppose you will have to go through me first.”

Dark MinZi was determined to protect Jiang Chen, he and Heavenly Devil Palace's future were placed on this young man's hands. He was well aware that the master of the Dark Devil

Religion had adopted a kid, granting him the position of a young master. Jiang Chen was this new master's friend, they should have known each other long time ago. That was why the young master ordered Sot Old Man to come here on the land of Liang Province to protect Jiang Chen. The special relationship between the two made Dark Min Zi to establish a good rapport with Jiang Chen as that would be equivalent to establishing good rapport with the young master as well. The formidable relationship between the new young master of the Devil Religion and Jiang Chen was discerned by him well.

“Master of Invincible sect, let him live for ten more days and I will make him regret for what he said.”

Qian Wen Yu said it without caring for Jiang Chen's feelings. He swore that he must have this battle with Jiang Chen. This was not about revenge but about his pride.

“Okay, you will have ten more days to live, I would like to see how you are going to fight with the three of them after ten days.”

Invincible Nie said it in a cold way and disappeared immediately.

He was followed by Li Tian Yang, Shadowless Taoist and Great Elder. The only left were Xiao Nan Feng and three others because this was a matter of the younger generation, but in truth, Jiang Chen was way younger than all of them.

“Jiang Chen, you insulted me repeatedly, it was too disrespectful! Ten days later, I must show you my means of killing.”

Xiao Nan Feng said it in a cool way.

Jiang Chen simply glanced at him and turned his head away as if nothing happened. This act made Xiao Nan Feng bit his teeth in unexplained anger as he knew that Jiang Chen had deliberately avoided the conversation from him as Jiang Chen thought every words spoken by Xiao Nan Feng would bring humiliation to himself.

This was complete disdain, this feeling was worse than hitting his face with a pan.

“Ten...Days...Later...! I WILL NOT LET YOU LIVE!”

Xiao Nan Feng left his last words then soared into the sky and left the place.

A genius of the Peerless Sword Faction was dressed in a white robe, a golden ribbon was hanging in his waist, projecting a suave and romantic feeling. His name was Wan Yi Ming, he was equally famous as Xiao Nan Feng.

“I have no idea where you get your courage from? A Fifth Grade Combat King? A promise of ten days? What a joke! What can you do in ten days?”

Wan Yi Ming treated him like an object of ridicule.

“It will be enough to kill you all.”

Jiang Chen replied without taking time to consider his words.

“I am curious to know, an evil-doer who can cause disaster, what will you do in these ten days time. Even if you successfully get to the Sixth Grade of Combat King, you know that you’re still not eligible to fight me, right?”

Wan Yi Ming said that in a sceptical way. He was suspicious of where he got his boldness.

“My eligibility? You will know soon.”

Jiang Chen said that with a smile.

“Humph.”

Wan Yi Ming made a cool humph and disappeared together with Qian Wen Yu.

“Thank you for your help, master of the palace.”

After all of them had left, Jiang Chen thanked Dark Min Zi with his fists, “You had helped me pull through the predicament, even though you just wanted to establish your sect in the Dark Devil Religion.”

“Brother Jiang, you are out of topic, you are the friend of the young master, but the promised battle in ten days with the three geniuses will be like a child’s play for them.”

Dark Min ZI frowned while he was saying that sentence.

“For you, this isn’t a child’s play, but a real battle. Their strength isn’t something that you can imagine, they are no ordinary Ninth Grade Combat Kings. And, you are merely a Fifth Grade Combat King, it may be possible for you to advance to the next level of Combat King, but any advancement after that would be almost impossible within ten days, and a Sixth Grade Combat King will never be enough to be called their opponent.”

The genius of Heavenly Devil palace said. He just came back from the Gorge Mountains (Luo Xia Mountains) and had fought with them before. He knew the horrifying power of those three young men. He said that Jiang Chen’s decision was not just as easy as a child’s play.

“Anyhow, I have my own ways.”

Jiang Chen would never make any uncertain decisions.

“Since the promise of battle had been fixed, any deviation from it would not be possible anymore. Brother Jiang, you can come over to my Palace to stay overnight. I will provide you with the best training environment.”

Dark Min Zi said.

“I thank you for your kindness. I must go to an important place to prepare for the battle.”

Jiang Chen greeted Dark Min Zi with both fists. In his hands, he had a lot of devil souls. He originally wanted to use these souls to make a deal with Heavenly Devil Palace. Now that he already had the whereabouts of Han Yan, he instantly gave up this idea as he knew the souls would be best use in the hands of Han Yan, his friend. He would give it to him as presents when they meet.

“Alright, then we will leave now, if you want my help brother Jiang, feel free to go to the Heavenly Devil Palace, the door of the Palace will be always open to you.”

Dark Min Zi greeted with his both fists. The three of them turned away and left.

Everyone had left, the onlookers were leaving one by one, but this place would become crowded again after ten days. The news that Jiang Chen challenged the three geniuses would spread throughout the Liang Province.

“I don’t know what Jiang Chen was thinking, he wanted to challenge the three geniuses, wasn’t it the same as seeking death himself?”

“That’s right, and there is only ten days’ time, what can he do in

ten days? Getting into Sixth Grade Combat King will be lucky for him, but luck won't help him to defeat Xiao Nan Feng and the other two geniuses."

"We'll see. I don't think Jiang Chen is a reckless person, maybe he has a way to defeat them, which will only be known after ten days."

.....

The gossips were far away to be heard, Jiang Chen was now alone in the entire mountain. His lips turned to a smile, he didn't expect the ending of today's situation.

"You can come out now."

Jiang Chen shouted at the spatial shift and a ray of light flashed out, the thing that came to his side was Big Yellow Dog.

Chapter 580 - Returning To Saint's Cliff

Big Yellow had been hiding himself in the dark. Li Tian Yang and the others focused all their attention on Jiang Chen. They did not even realise the existence of Big Yellow. Even without Jiang Chen's distractions, they could not detect him as only Jiang Chen understood Big Yellow's exceptional skill of hiding and escaping.

“You're truly lucky, you turned the dangerous situation around, that was awesome, but when did you establish a relationship with the young master of the Dark Devil religion? To my surprise, even a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor came to rescue you!” said Big Yellow with doubts.

He had been hiding in a hidden place and could not hear clearly what they were talking about in front of Jiang Chen. However, he was well aware that Sot Old Man came to rescue Jiang Chen on behalf of the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. He was dubious because of this. He knew Jiang Chen's past more than anyone. He remembered clearly the time they had been to the Divine Continent, they didn't know the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. Besides, their current level was way below the level of the young master and, certainly, he would not get in touch with any of the people of their level.

“You're hiding in the dark and you didn't pick up? The master of the Dark Devil Religion didn't have successor, but recently he found a genius who had the blood of Ancient Devil. It was like obtaining a precious gift and he adopted him as his son instantly. That was how the young master was born. Do you want to guess why the young master would want to save my life?”

Jiang Chen said it with a smile. He was very happy at the turn of events. That time when he came to the Divine Continent with Han Yan, they were separated because of the passageway in the spatial shift. Today, he got to know Han Yan's whereabouts, and he was actually living good life. Jiang Chen felt very happy for him.

“What? Is it Han Yan? It must be him since his body has the blood of Ancient Devil which is extremely rare, plus he is our good friend. I can't get a better person to replace him.”

Big Yellow's eyes brightened. He missed the message brought by Thunder Core just now. After understanding the facts he heard from Jiang Chen, he could confidently deduce that this young master was Han Yan, there was no doubt about it.

“He is like a half-god now, but he was a bit too mean, how come he didn't see us in person now that he has already become the young master of the Dark Devil Religion?”

Big Yellow said with dissatisfaction. He felt that Han Yan had reached a level that exposing his face to anyone was rare.

“Don't be this mean, I guess Han Yan must be very busy now. Oh...ya, that Sot Old Man left me a crystal ball, it must contain images of him, let's take a look.”

Jiang Chen overturned his palm, holding the crystal ball in his hand. A god spell shot out from his body and dropped into the crystal ball. A sudden humming came out from the crystal ball,

followed by an intense vibration. A ray of bright light shot out from the crystal ball and slowly formed into images. In the images, there was a young man with grey hair wearing black clothes, sitting on a black futon with his legs crossed, the air surrounding him was steaming of devil force. This young man wasn't anyone else, he was Han Yan.

“This brat dressed in black suit, he was a bit like the combination of dog and human.”

Big Yellow bared his teeth and felt very happy to be able to see his friend again.

The lights vibrated and the poker face of Han Yan turned into a bright smile, “Little Chen brother, you didn't expect right? Your brother had already become the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. Ha...ha..., are you jealous of me now? And, that dead dog, he must be biting his teeth while looking at my face right now, ha...ha... I had been inquiring about the whereabouts of you two and I learned that you two have caused a lot of trouble in Liang Province. But, this corresponds with how you always act. I will continue my training in the Devil Blood Pond, this was prepared specially by my foster dad, that was the reason I cannot come to meet you guys in person. I order Sot Old Man to help you two but I know you two will settle your problems yourself. After you finish your matters in the State of Liang, you are welcome to come to my religion and find me.”

A flash of light the images disappeared and the crystal ball became dark, it then cracked and turned to powder.

“Not bad! This bastard still remembers me as a dog even he had become the young master, wait until we meet again, I will bite him.”

Big Yellow said irritably.

“You should train harder. The Ancient Devil’s blood in his body is becoming more powerful plus he is receiving the best training resources. Do you think you can beat him after he came out from that Pool of Devil Blood?”

Jiang Chen said it bluntly as if pouring a pot of cold water on Big Yellow’s face. He didn’t think Big Yellow knew how scary the Ancient Devil’s blood can be. He knew it more than anyone, not to mention joining the Dark Devil Religion got Han Yan the limitless resources for training. The training could reach at least thousand miles in a day, putting the other geniuses behind his back.

“Compared to Han Yan, the two of us are worse. He had already become a young master. As for us, we were hunted everywhere we go to, our lives were too miserable, this was rather infuriating!”

“Don’t you have a promise of battle with the three geniuses ten days later? How certain are you in winning this battle?” asked Big Yellow, saying that this was the main point.

“If I fight them with my current strength, it will be a complete loss. On the other hand, if I am able to reach the peak of the Sixth Grade Combat King, that will be enough to eliminate ordinary Ninth Grade Combat Kings. However, Xiao Nan Feng and the other

two are no ordinary Ninth Grade Combat Kings, they are halfway into the realm of the Combat Emperor. I am afraid that I need to get to Seventh Grade Combat King to defeat them.”

Jiang Chen said while estimating the difference of power between him and the three of them.

“In ten days, it is not even possible to improve your level of Combat King by two. Unless you are undergoing the abnormal means of training which is the massive derivation of demon spirit that could increase your chances of winning the battle, but that means the training will bring certain effects to you.”

What Big Yellow meant was that if Jiang Chen did not use that method of training, getting his level to increase by two was a total nonsense.

“There is one place that I can visit.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were focusing at one direction, his eyes was fixed as if he was obsessed by it, and thinking about that place made him sentimental.

“What’s that place?” asked Big Yellow.

“The Saint's Cliff” said Jiang Chen. That place was his ending point, now it was his starting point.

“Where is the Saint's Cliff at?” asked Big Yellow.

“It is on a pure land in the Divine Continent but not in the eight territories. At the centre region of the Divine Continent lies a piece of pure land. That place was the most sacred land. The Saint's Cliff is just within that pure land. It was once the region with the most exuberant strength of land and sky. But, I am afraid that it has changed.”

When the Saint's Cliff was mentioned, Jiang Chen could not stand reliving his memories of the past. He didn't expect to be this fast in returning to the Saint's Cliff again. His level of Combat King was too far behind in the land of Divine Continent. However, he was forced to do so given his current situation. He decided to go there and retrieve the things that belonged to him.

“That was the place where the greatest Saint made his ultimate sacrifice a hundred years ago, right? What are you going to do over there?”

Big Yellow begged for explanation. He couldn't possibly think that Jiang Chen was the greatest Saint a hundred years ago even if he had completely squeezed his brain's juice.

“You will know when you go there with me, if you choose not to, I will go there myself.” said Jiang Chen.

“Don't even think of abandoning me, I want to explore the place, my concern is that the place might have become a land of death, a prohibited land.” said Big Yellow.

.....

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left their current location together, heading to the direction of the pure land in the Divine Continent. The distance from the State of Liang to there was very far, even with their speed in flying, it would take days to reach there even without stopping, so they needed to rely on the portals and gates of the many big territories along the way.

At the Divine Continent, every trainee was eligible to use the gate of their territory. Money was the only requirement, the further you go, the amount of Tian Yuan pills needed will increase. However, Jiang Chen didn't have that problem as the amount of Tian Yuan pills he had was sufficient to move around the entire Land of Saints a few cycles to and fro.

Jiang Chen wasn't worried about his two friends, Tyrant and Tan Lang. Their safety would never be a concern after his relationship with the young master of Dark Devil religion was exposed. Tyrant was not a weakling, he had the ability to protect himself and Jiang Chen was confident that Heavenly Devil Palace would find ways to protect them. This trip to the Saint's Cliff consists of objectives. Taking Big Yellow was enough as too many cooks would spoil the soup, disrupting the journey. He realised that his goal was a little too much for him because the Divine Continent wasn't a place for rookies like him.

After the departure of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the entire Liang Province was shaken by the news of Jiang Chen wanting to challenge the three geniuses of the three major powers in their province, as if Jiang Chen's presence restricted the peaceful

atmosphere there.

“Is Jiang Chen out of his mind? He actually dares to pick a fight with the three geniuses? It was like signing his death contract. He is merely a Fifth Grade Combat King, ten days wasn’t enough for him to surpass Xiao Nan Feng and the others.”

“Didn’t you see today’s scene? While Jiang Chen was under siege of the four major powers, the masters from the Mysterious Domain appeared. The Dark Devil Religion had sent a Sixth Grade Combat Emperor. At that moment, Jiang Chen made the promise to challenge the three geniuses. If he didn’t do that, the battle between Sixth Grade Combat Emperors would be inevitable and that wouldn’t benefit anyone but only caused massacre our province. However, Jiang Chen’s promise went over his capabilities, he was looking for his early death by confronting those three geniuses alone.”

“Exactly! I am clueless of what’s he's thinking about. But, he was known for his brilliance and prowess, it is unlikely to make fun of his decision, I guess that he might have his secret means of training, we’ll see after ten days.”

.....

Every conversation anywhere in Liang Province was about the promise of battle of Jiang Chen and the three geniuses. No one bet on Jiang Chen as the gap of power between them was too wide. Jiang Chen was crazy. Although he could kill an Eighth Grade Combat King, the difference of level between the Eighth Grade and Ninth Grade was way too far! This difference made Xiao Nan Feng

and the other two geniuses Jiang Chen's lethal opponents.

Chapter 581 - The Bone Of A Finger

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were very fast at their pace, in one day, they had already passed through three big domains and arrived at the Pure Land in the Divine Continent. This land wasn't as big as the other eight other domains, but this was the most precious land in the Divine Continent.

The energy in the Sky and on the Land on this land was ten times more exuberant than the Mysterious City. An abundance of energy can be found everywhere on this land. There was no deserted mountains in this area, every life on the mountains was living vibrantly, but this was also the place where the scariest and powerful race live. In addition, the Supreme Demon race also live here.

“This is an excellent environment for training.” Big Yellow couldn't help praising this land.

“This is a place where countless of cultivators go to, but their survival in this area is hard to estimate, we have to keep our profile low, we will head to the Saint's Cliff directly, we can't afford to make any trouble here.”

Jiang Chen warned Big Yellow as this dog was always irrational, trying to offend people everywhere he went to. This place wasn't comparable to the Liang Province, not even the Mysterious City, it would be worthless and only caused death if any cultivator here was offended slightly. Without any reliable backups, it was impossible to survive here.

“Roger that.” Big Yellow said ignorantly, but he knew that Jiang Chen’s warning wasn’t causing him unnecessary anxiety. He was well aware that this was a place where a lot of great cultivators come to, they could not protect themselves if they fight with any of the people here.

Jiang Chen was very familiar with Saint’s Cliff and the Pure Land. During that year, every place here had his footprint and shadow. In addition, he had left an eternal fame, no one wasn’t frightened when they heard the name of ‘Jiang Chen’.

The sentimental values on this land caused Jiang Chen to sigh, he realised that he wasn’t the previous Greatest Saint like before when he made his first step on Pure Land.

They were rushing to the Saint’s Cliff at maximum speed without talking. Their current speed allowed them to get to the Saint’s Cliff easily as if an effort of brewing a cup of tea.

The nearer they go to the Saint’s Cliff, the harder it was for Jiang Chen to calm himself down. He could feel the rustling of the sinister wind when they arrived within a hundred miles range of the area. This feeling wasn’t the same as the one he had before, this land was called the ‘Holy Land’.

As they approach nearer to the Saint’s Cliff, they were rather surprised, the sky above the Cliff was mingled with evil energy and black fog. It was hard to see the original shape of the Cliff. It was like what Big Yellow said, the Saint’s Cliff now had become a prohibited land, it was desolated and inhabited.

If there was an abandoned zone, that would be no doubt the Saint's Cliff that was once prosperous.

“Kid, are you sure that you can find the treasure that will help you in training in this kind of place? If you want to find the treasures left by the Greatest Saint, I suggest you to give up. I heard that the Greatest Saint was killed by an immortal with minimum remains of himself left. There isn't anything left here. Even if there was, a hundred years have passed and who knows how many times this place was being searched for treasures. I am afraid that not even a hair of the Saint was left.” said Big Yellow.

“What do you know? Let's go into the Saint's Cliff and we will know, but the evil energy here was very intense, you have to be careful.” reminded Jiang Chen since even an ordinary cultivators would find it difficult to approach the place with this much evil energy.

“Don't worry, I will not be frightened by the evil energy, even if I absorb these energy into my body, it is just tonics to me.” Big Yellow said confidently.

“Let's go.”

Jiang Chen made his first attempt to move forward. He jumped into the Saint's Cliff from the air. Everything here was destroyed, it was beyond recognition. Perhaps it could be explained that during his war with the immortals here was destructive. Almost all of the whole Saint's Cliff was being destroyed, creating a land of

desolation. An intense evil energy was accumulated over the a hundred of years.

Big Yellow didn't hear it wrong. At the time the Greatest saint was defeated, nothing was left, nothing at all except... he hid something during his last breathe in the spatial shift. There was something valuable inside of it. He was confident that no one could find it. Even a Great Saint who could destroy the entire Saint's Cliff would still find nothing.

He originally did not want to do that, coming all the way here to retrieve his hidden treasure. He wanted to wait until his power reached a certain level before he return here. His spatial shift was special. The spatial shift was merging itself completely with the spatial shift of the Divine Continent. Any ordinary cultivator would not be able to enter this zone. However, attempting to unlock the treasure that was left by the Greatest Saint would bring attention to formidable Great Saints of this land, as a result, attracting them to come here and creating a wave of aggression in the Divine Continent.

This trip costed Jiang Chen a long journey, he would not unlock the treasure in the spatial shift directly. He had to use a different way that would not let anyone notice and obtain the treasure that he needed. That was the reason he brought Big Yellow with him, he was proficient in a vast array of holy book, he could help Jiang Chen a lot.

A layer of golden shield appeared on the surface of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow bodies. The cold and evil energy disappeared instantly once they touch the shield or being blocked by it. The

blood and energy within their bodies were extraordinary. Any powerful evil energy wouldn't even have the slightest effect on them.

Jiang Chen was leading the way towards the direction to the bottom of the Saint's Cliff. He had built a firm spatial shift which would always remain as it is. The zone was shielded by the spatial shift of Saint of Realm reaching an overlapping effect. In order to obtain the treasure, they needed the location of the it in the spatial shift.

Jiang Chen saw a ten feet tall giant boulder, it had already been corroded by the evil energy, a single touch would cause it to crack. This giant boulder was in fact the hill he slashed a hundred years ago, that was one of the evidence of his glory.

“What is this?” Big Yellow 's eyes sparkled when he saw a seven-colored shield.

“How could it possible that another layer of shield was created?” Jiang Chen frowned.

“Let me try to break it.” After Big Yellow finished his sentence, he used his head to hit the shield.

Bang

“Ouch!”

Big Yellow's head was extremely hard, but this impulsive force reflected him away from the shield. He stood up on his feet with difficulty, trying to shake his head off the dizziness, he was unable to explain the feeling he had.

“This shield is definitely hard!”

Big Yellow was shocked, as well as Jiang Chen. He knew exactly how hard his friend's head was. In this period of time, his friend had fought many battles, even if he wasn't able to beat the opponent down with his head, his hard head never once felt dizzy.

“Damn! I don't believe that I could not break even a shield.” Big Yellow said with disappointment, he bit his teeth and the dragon horns on his head started to release some kind of radiance.

“Stop Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen shouted immediately, he used Great Soul Derivation Technique, spirit of energy penetrated and transferred into the seven-colored shield. He felt that this shield was extraordinarily odd, it contained supreme energy, creating urges for people to pray for it. It wasn't like the shield that was found in this world, it had to come from the outside world.

“What did you sense?” asked Big Yellow curiously.

“If my guess is not wrong, this is the holy shield. That time after the Greatest Saint broke the gate of the world of immortals, a holy

shield like this fell into the Saint's Cliff, separating the Cliff and the real world. The situation inside was completely cut off. Even with the power of a Great Saint, they will never enter this cliff without going past this shield, so it is totally pointless to break the shield with force. Not only the shield will not be broken if we do this, it will attract masters to this place.”

Jiang Chen was making a calculation on this holy shield while his eyes frowned tightly. If he could not pass through this barrier, his plan would go in vain. If he could not use his spatial shift to retrieve the treasure, he wasn't going to get it. Without the treasure, he would not be able to improve his power level. His trip to this place would be totally a waste.

“If we can't go in there, we will have to search outside of it, see whether we can find the treasure, this will depend on our luck. However, I think everything that was good here had already been taken away.” said Big Yellow.

“This is the only possible way.” Jiang Chen shook his head. He knew clearly in his heart that nothing can be found here, not even a hair.

During their frustration, a human and a dog were searching for their rewards everywhere around them. After they had searched for ten minutes, Big Yellow's eyes sparkled, “I could feel a treasure.”

“Where is it?”

Jiang Chen's eyes brightened immediately. When Big Yellow could sense a treasure, it wasn't an ordinary item. After his voice dropped, he saw Big Yellow sped towards a specific direction. Jiang Chen quickly followed him. Very quickly, they came to the front of a big boulder. This boulder was only one foot tall standing upright, it had the shape of a finger as if it was inserted into the land. By just seeing from outside, this boulder was no different than the others, it was also corroded by evil energy.

Seeing this rock, Jiang Chen felt an inexplicable sense of familiarity. His spirit was also shaken, sending a jolt down his spine, as if there was something related to his blood. Even without the reminder of Big Yellow, he could already sense the existence of the treasure hidden in this rock.

"The treasure is just inside this boulder, I have to break it." The moment just after Big Yellow finished his sentence, Jiang Chen's fist had already smashed into the boulder, cracking the surface of it. At this time, a shining radiance rushed out of the narrow openings. As the pieces of the rocks were crumbling, a very shiny radiance flashed out in an instant, all of the evil energy surrounding that area was expelled immediately.

That was a piece of bone, a human bone from the finger of a person. The surface of the bone was shining with bright light, releasing golden beams of strong energy. After a hundred years, a bone was left and hidden in a perfect way. This was a miracle, judging by the force unleashed by this bone, the owner of it had to be the Greatest Saint. It was, in fact, the bone of the Greatest Saint. This treasure was extremely rare!

Chapter 582 - The Seventh Grade Combat King

The moment Jiang Chen saw the bone, it seemed to be able to sense Jiang Chen's existence too. It vibrated and moved towards Jiang Chen automatically without him calling it. That feeling was the same as the event that happened to the Heavenly Saint Sword, but this feeling was stronger than it. Heavenly Saint Sword was just a weapon after all. Any Combat Weapon could never match with his own body parts.

That's right, this bone was Jiang Chen's bone. It was part of the body he left in his past life.

Jiang Chen was observing the vibrating bone in front of him, his eyes were starting to become watery. He never even imagined this scene would happen. His own bone, which was hidden a hundred years ago, had the chance to meet with him again after a century. This was a miracle.

This was also rather logical. Jiang Chen had reached the level of the Greatest Saint. His mighty power allowed his flesh to obtain the highest energy absorption. Even if his body was destroyed during his battle with the immortals, there was still this piece of bone that was preserved.

“Damn! It surprises me that this is a Holy bone. With the body crushed entirely, only the bones lasted forever. In the whole State of Saint, only the Greatest Saint can do this. This is no doubt the bone of the Greatest Saint. It had been preserved for more than a hundred years. This is not an ordinary treasure. You have luck,

don't ya? If you can merge it with your finger, its power is infinite."

Big Yellow was full of joy and excitement. He knew how valuable the bones of a Saint. Everyone knew this. Moreover, the bone came from no ordinary Saint but from the Greatest Saint. He was able to slash off the gate of immortals, his ability was way beyond anything in terms of energy and strength anyone could imagine or ever had. If the flesh of the body wasn't strong enough to withstand the resistance, fusing it with the body would be deadly.

Big Yellow could discern this bone's history. He could guess that this bone belonged to the Greatest Saint himself, but didn't expect the relationship of this bone with Jiang Chen.

Anyone knew that the death of the Greatest Saint was a fact and had become the history for the Divine Continent for a hundred years. Who would know that the Greatest Saint was related to a teenager who was not even twenty years old?

"That's right, my trip did not go in vain. If I can fuse the bone with my body, not only I can obtain the power of a Saint, I am also able to improve my level. Time is of the essence, Big Yellow, protect me while I refine the bone here."

Jiang Chen's pupils dilated, bearing the excitement within his body. He would not get so excited by just getting a piece of bone of a Saint, but this wasn't just an ordinary Saint's bone. This was his own Saint bone, it had a relationship with his veins and blood and was part of him even though it had been a hundred years. It was only logical for him to be this excited.

“Little Chen, refining this saint bone won’t be easy. The bone of the Greatest Saint consists his will. Even though the Greatest Saint was destroyed completely by the immortals without allowing it to leave anything behind, your body still cannot merge with it within in this short period of time even without the will of the Greatest Saint in the bone. There will also be rejections since you are only a Fifth Grade Combat King which is too far behind the level of the Greatest Saint. Completely refining it within ten days is not going to be possible.”

Big Yellow said worriedly. It was supposed to be a good news for Jiang Chen to find an extremely rare treasure, but the time left was too little. There was only nine days left. If the days used for returning to Liang Province is cut away, only eight days would be left in total. Eight days of time to finish the refinery of the Greatest Saint’s bone? It’s not going to happen.

“Don’t worry, my methods of training and refining is special, it is an inherited method of training, it has abnormally fast and quick results. I am confident that I can refine this Saint’s bone in a short time.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Big Yellow. This could only be explained by Jiang Chen’s extraordinary method of training. Big Yellow had witnessed Jiang Chen’s capability. He was no ordinary being. Any cultivator who tried to refine this bone would get rejected most of the time and that would slow down the process a lot. Jiang Chen’s refinery of the Saint’s bone was entirely different. Not only there would be no rejections, the bone was going to fuse with the blood and flesh in his body completely.

“I really have no idea what method of training you are using. If it is so great, you better start working now, I will go in search of other possible leftover treasure.”

Shua

Big Yellow vanished in front of Jiang Chen after making his statement.

Jiang Chen laughed, getting a bone of a Saint was one of the luckiest thing. There had been so many people in the major powers who came over this shield in search of anything they thought valuable. This bone was hidden secretly that even himself couldn't sense it without the help of Big Yellow's special ability.

Jiang Chen sat down, crossing his legs, he lowered his head to take a closer look at the Saint's bone. His palm was holding it tight. It was like this was the most precious thing in the whole world, it was really out of the ordinary. Even if he was asked to trade this with one of a kind Holy weapon, he would refuse it without hesitation.

“This piece of finger bone was left without damage. When I died last time, it's not only a finger bone of mine that was left undisturbed here. My body had passed through the Nine Yang Xuan Gong's training, every part of my body was like treasure at that time. If there were any remains, I am afraid that most of them had been taken away by the major powers in this Pure Land. Humph! If this is the case, I will claim back all the things I have

lost, sooner or later, I will take them back one by one.”

Jiang Chen's looked very surprised. He thought that he was supposed to retrieve the treasure he left many years ago, but he didn't expect to find a single Saint bone. He believed that his remaining Saint bones weren't gonna be only this piece of a finger bone. If there are any other left, they had already been grabbed away by the major powers of this Pure Land.

Those things belonged to him. He swore to take them back. He didn't care about the power of the major powers in this Pure Land. When he was reigning his territory on the Pure Land, the ancestors of the Big Eight Major Families had to pay homage to him.

What he achieved in his previous life was something he wanted to achieve in this life as well.

Jiang Chen focused back on his current task, he began his refinery of the finger bone. Beams of golden radiances shot out of his left hand, it had engulfed the finger bone entirely, making the bone vibrate stronger. There was a positive feeling in him at this time. The finger bone moved towards Jiang Chen's left hand's index finger arranging itself to fit with Jiang Chen's bone exactly by itself. Finally, it turned into a light that entered into Jiang Chen's index finger, instantaneously, his finger swelled more than an inch.

Hiss!

A pure but also a tyrannical energy rushed out of the Saint's bone

into Jiang Chen's body immediately, he couldn't stand to make a voice. After that, the surfaces of his body were engulfed in a golden light, dragon shadows were flashing from it. It was very godly.

Ka Ka

Sounds of dislocating bones were produced. To be specific, the golden light released by his left index finger had covered his left palm completely like a big cocoon.

The process of fusing a Saint's bone completely with one's body was very torturing and unbearable, but Jiang Chen could not feel any signs of pain. This was like an enjoyment to him. The fusion would be followed by a transformation.

The Saint bone contained some energy originally. These energy wasn't as powerful as the others, but for a Combat King, this energy was well beyond powerful. Jiang Chen was able to absorb this energy without any rejections because the energy in the Saint bone belonged to him originally, so he could absorb it directly.

In the meantime of fusing the finger bone, all the Dragon Marks in his DanTian, which was the area under his chest, was condensing one by one, the speed of condensation was getting faster. His body already had more than twenty nine thousands of Dragon Marks even at his Fifth Grade Combat King. After the fusion with this Saint's bone, his grade would rise unprecedentedly to next level or levels.

Although the Saint's bone would not have any rejections with

Jiang Chen's body, the complete fusion would still need days to finish. But, according to Jiang Chen's estimation, eight days of time would be sufficient enough.

After one day, Big Yellow searched everywhere outside of the shield in detail. He was muttering while he returned to their original place. After one day, nothing was found, not even a hair. Only then he truly understood that finding the Saint's finger bone was an unexpected luck.

“How can you refine it with such a fast pace? Your Qi is skyrocketing to a higher level. It seems you don't need eight days to refine it completely. It was wonderful! It seems your methods of fusion are not really ordinary.”

Big Yellow was amazed by Jiang Chen's changes of power every day, he could sense massive energy spilling out of his body. He had no choice but to admire Jiang Chen's methods of training, this had went well beyond his understanding.

For the following seven days, Big Yellow had become Jiang Chen's protector. Jiang Chen's Qi was stronger than the previous day, and in day seven, a surge of power blasted out from Jiang Chen's body.

Ka...Cha!

A refreshing sound came from Jiang Chen's body, that wasn't the sound of the bone, it was the sound of leveling up. Large amounts of Tian Yuan pills were consumed. His grade had reached the Sixth

Grade Combat King within seconds. That surge of power didn't stop moving forward. It was irresistible. It continued to push his power up to the Seventh Grade Combat King in three minutes time, then it stopped after that.

“Damn! Seventh Grade Combat King. You have really completed the fusion with the Saint's bone without any rejections, that will make people speechless.”

Big Yellow jumped up and down because Jiang Chen had surprised him. Even though he had been amazed many times and got accustomed to it. But this time was different, that Saint bone was refined and fused just like that, pushing his level to Seventh Grade Combat King. Leveling two levels up in a short time wasn't something ordinary. He was well aware that Jiang Chen's combat power in Seventh Grade Combat King could eliminate Xiao Nan Feng and the other two effortlessly.

Chapter 583 - The Day Of The Final Battle

Jiang Chen, with an irresistible force, had made a breakthrough and achieved Seventh Grade Combat King. The number of Dragon Marks inside him increased from twenty nine thousand to thirty three thousand instantly. This meant that the bone had helped him condense and gather four thousand new Dragon Marks, pushing his grade to the Seventh Grade Combat King.

Jiang Chen opened his eyes and took a deep breathe. His left index finger hadn't stopped glowing. He could feel the infinite power in his finger after the fusion.

“With my current strength, I can kill Xiao Nan Feng and the other two with minimum effort, plus my finger was never weaker than before. If I cast black magic with this finger, that infinite power is hard to imagine, even the First Grade Combat Emperor would succumb to it.”

Jiang Chen was very satisfied with his present condition. After this fusion, his power of stance had improved so much. It was also because of his powerful stance that required him to consume exactly one million of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills. This number was undoubtedly scary, it was even scarier than Jiang Chen's.

“I obtained ten million Heaven Rank Restoration Pills from the Sky Floor to use during my training until I get to First Grade Combat Emperor. But looking at the present situation, it is not enough at all!”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He realised that while he was developing his Dragon Transformation Art, the consumption of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills was too much. This was an abnormal stage where upgrading from the Fifth Grade Combat King to Seventh Grade Combat King would need one million of the pills. People would not believe their ears when this news was spread out in public.

In the stages of training, the consumption of energy for every level would be more than the previous level. That was why getting into Seventh Grade Combat King would need this much of consumption. The consumption for the grades after that such as Eighth Grade Combat King, Ninth Grade Combat King and First Grade Combat Emperor were even hard to imagine. It was hard to estimate the usage of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills in those levels and how much more are used in every subsequent level. Thus, the remaining nine million Heaven Rank Restoration Pills were obviously not sufficient.

The fusion of the finger bone and Jiang Chen's index finger's bone was successful. There wasn't a slightest discomfort as if Jiang Chen finally found his long lost belongings. The thing that pleased Jiang Chen the most wasn't the matter of his improvement in level, but the magic of Saint contained in the finger bone was untouched and complete.

When a cultivator had reached the realm of Saint, he had successfully become a true Saint. The force inside his body would transform into the magic of Saint. This realm had left the category of humans, moving to another higher level. Therefore, the distinction between the magic of Saint and the Force is impossible to think of.

The magic of Saint was the life and origins of all Saints, it was the essence of everything. If a Saint was killed, the magic of Saint would disappear. However, there was a contingency method that could preserve a small percentage of magic. That would then become a treasure. Jiang Chen's finger bone had the magic of Saint that was kept in it for many years. This was no doubt a miracle, but it was also Jiang Chen's good luck.

“If I can unleash the power of the magic fully, that would be truly scary! However, my level is too weak for that now, trying to use the power of the magic of Saint is a problem, using it in the combat is not even a possible thing to think of.”

Jiang Chen shook his head in disappointment. Even if he possessed the magic of Saint inside him, his ability wouldn't allow him to control it and, thus, not able to unleash the force of the magic. His level was the obstacle of his desire.

But he thought that this magic would be another trump card for him, it was the magic that had great deal of benefits.

“Little Chen! You rushed to the Seventh Grade Combat King directly! I am impressed, this time you can take the three bastards down like grabbing a handful of soil from the land.”

Big Yellow moved towards Jiang Chen and smiled.

Jiang Chen also revealed a smile, “How much time do we still have?”

“You’ve used seven days for training and refining, adding the day we used to come here, we still have two days until the actual day of battle.” said Big Yellow.

“The time is just enough. Coming to the Saint's Cliff was not in vain. We have gained great rewards unexpectedly. Let’s go back together now.”

Jiang Chen’s body swayed and then moved towards the direction outside the Saint's Cliff.

“Zhuang Fan, your revenge would be taken soon on your murderer, I will make Xiao Nan Feng kneel before your corpse.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes reflected two beams of cold light rays. Zhuang Fan haven’t had the chance to kill Xiao Nan Feng himself, but Jiang Chen still had it, he could fulfil his friend’s final wish.

After a day, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow went back from the Saint's Cliff. They did not head to the Heavenly Devil Palace, but to the Rainbow City. They found their friends there, Tyrant and Tan Lang.

Rainbow City was just a small city in Liang Province. Although Chang Qing was being saved, it was only temporary. Tan Lang’s guess was right, all the attention of Asura Palace was on Jiang Chen now, they did not have time and effort to take care of them. That was why they were safe in the Rainbow City.

However, their peaceful lives weren't really peaceful after all. The event that happened that day was so significant, the promise of battle after ten days, this calm-threatening news had intruded their peaceful minds. They wanted the people living in Liang Province to know about this extraordinary news.

It was the same for everyone else, Tyrant and Tan Lang were also affected. They criticized Jiang Chen for his reckless behaviour in making this decision. Since Jiang Chen was only a Fifth Grade Combat King, how powerful he could be in just ten days? Xiao Nan Feng and the other two were geniuses, they were no ordinary Ninth Grade Combat King.

When Tyrant was in the lobby of the prefecture of the City, his first look on Jiang Chen made his eyes nearly pop out of his head as Jiang Chen's Grade of Combat King scared him.

"Get off, I am not interested in men, not to mention I even hate monks!"

Jiang Chen pushed off Tyrant as he was getting near him, wanting to examine him.

"Ambitabha!..... Where have you been for these few days? I'm surprised that you can improve your level by two in this short period of time and reached Seventh Grade Combat King. This is ridiculous, tell me, what did you actually obtain to get you to level up that quickly?"

There was no way for the monk to not be shocked. These days, he was worrying about the battle ten days later. He knew that the opponents were not just overwhelming based on their strength, but also their number. Jiang Chen had to face them all...but his worries had faded away in an instant after he realised the sudden surge of Jiang Chen's Grade of Combat King. Any other cultivator who possessed the Seventh Grade of Combat King that challenged a Ninth Grade Combat King was a total joke, but Jiang Chen was a different case. Tyrant was well aware the ability that Jiang Chen possessed. He knew in his heart that those three geniuses would be dead as Jiang Chen's power had well surpassed them all.

“Tyrant, it seemed that you were not idle during these days after all! You have reached the Seventh Grade Combat King as well, relics sure are creepy.”

Jiang Chen nodded at Tyrant. Tyrant was refining the Second Grade Ordinary Saint of Relics, his refinery of the Nine Solar Lightning Dragon Pills was finished. His improvement was drastic, in just a few days time, he reached Seventh Grade Combat King, it seemed he would not need a long time to reach Eighth Grade Combat King.

“I thought I am now superior, but after meeting you . . . except I am a little more handsome than you, there are no other aspects that I could compare my superiority.”

Tyrant said shamelessly.

“Bald donkey, you dare to talk about the attractiveness of your face in front of master dog? Where are you putting me, master dog,

at?”

Big Yellow said with jealousy.

“No matter how good looking you are, you are still a Dog, I am not going to make any comparison with you.”

Tyrant raised his eyebrows at Big Yellow.

Jiang Chen thought these two highest grade beings were giving him a headache, he gently touched his forehead.

“Little Chen! I didn’t expect you to reach Seventh Grade Combat King so fast, you hold a greater chance of winning the battle now. I won’t worry about that anymore.”

Tan Lang sighed in relief. Jiang Chen was just a Seventh Grade Combat King, but with his ability, his grade was enough to fight a First Grade Combat Emperor.

“Naturally, all of you don’t have to worry about it, I will claim the lives of the three of them. With my power now, Li Tian Yang wouldn’t be able to damage me.”

Jiang Chen’s face was full of confidence, he didn’t worry about Xiao Nan Feng at all in the very beginning.

The next day, when the sky was about to reach daybreak, the

mountains, where Jiang Chen and the three geniuses promised to battle, were crawling with people. The onlookers were more hardworking than the fighters, they were afraid of not being able to watch the show. Although majority of them felt hopeless for Jiang Chen, they were still keen to witness the intimidating war of Liang Province. Since the chances of seeing the three geniuses from the three parties were rare, missing this chance would make a person regret it for his whole life.

“Ten days have passed, I don’t know how Jiang Chen’s preparation was?”

“In just ten days, even if he had trained every day, how well can he be? Plus he is facing the three geniuses alone, this is absolutely absurd!”

“Ya, I also feel that Jiang Chen is too reckless, do you think he will break his promise today and run away?”

“That’s impossible, then our presence here would be nothing. Jiang Chen doesn’t seem like the one who will fool people.”

.....

The fighters had not appeared. Voices of discussions could be heard everywhere in the scene. Until now, most of them certainly didn’t put their hope on Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen fighting them all? He wouldn’t stand a chance, not a chance for escaping as well. Even if he was fighting only one of them, it would be like asking Jiang Chen to finish a pot of tea on the spot.

After half an hour, three powerful figures were flying to the scene, it's as if they reached the place at the same time from different directions. They appeared in the sky above the center of the mountains. They were the three geniuses, Xiao Nan Feng of Asura Palace, Qian Wen Yu of Invincible Sect and Wang Yi Ming of Peerless Sword Faction.

The air was quickly filled with the arrogance that was expressed on their faces. On the Liang province, they absolutely had the right to be arrogant.

“The three geniuses have come, but the masters are not here yet, It seemed only three of them will come today.”

“That is of course, the master of the Heavenly Devil Palace is now standing on Jiang Chen’s side. He had announced to the world that to be fair, only four of them can appear on the day of final battle. Combat Emperors of the four major powers are not allowed to come.”

“Of course this is fair to Jiang Chen, but the three geniuses are enough to handle him alone. They don’t need the masters’ to back them up.”

.....

Waves of arguments rose and dropped consistently.

Chapter 584 - Trampled To Death

“That dude won’t be scared and choose not to come right?”

Wan Yi Ming frowned while asking a question. If Jiang Chen didn’t come today, they would feel like they were being fooled.

At the moment Wan Yi Ming’s voice dropped, movement could be heard from afar. Everyone looked around, trying to find the source of the sound. Their eyes finally caught it. It was very far away. A group of people was moving in their direction slowly. That’s right, it was a very slow movement because that kind of movement was never considered fast.

What stunned people was their formation. A big golden chair floated in the air, a young man dressed in a white shirt was sitting on it. His face was good looking, he seemed younger than twenty years old. He was crossing his legs, coming to the scene at leisure, with an “I don’t care” expression on his face.

If comparisons were made between this young man and the other members, they were obviously in a different situation. Behind the big chair, there was a monk and a young lad carrying it. Two of them were talking to each other aggressively. If you take a closer look, they were just complaining. It had to be the dissatisfaction of carrying that stupid big chair.

But, there was even a more dissatisfied one. In front of them was a yellow dog that was rather big in size. The whole body of the chair was resting itself on the dog’s head, giving him the urge to

break the chair with its head.

“This bastard knows a lot about leisure, doesn't he? Although he wants his entrance into the battlefield fancy, it isn't necessary to ask us to be servants and carry the chair, he is so shameless, so shameless of him ordering us like that...”

Tyrant was about to feel unbearable, especially when he saw the extremely leisured Jiang Chen sitting on top of him slightly squinting his both eyes while enjoying his seat, that had disturbed the balance of his mind.

“Damn! Damn! I quit! What is the biggest reason for carrying one side alone?”

Big Yellow burst out with extreme dissatisfaction. Tyrant and Tan Lang were carrying one side of the chair and he alone was carrying another side, it was so unfair, he thought.

“Shut your mouth up! This is your damn idea!”

Tyrant and Tan Lang both had the impulse of choking this stupid dog to death. It was this dog's idea in the beginning to project a trendy entry into the field. He wanted to win against the three geniuses in terms of morale as he could not kill them himself. No one expected that this would turn out to be unfavourable to them all.

“**du...du...** (vulgar language), when I get back I would give

them something in return.”

Big Yellow kept quiet after his last scolding. This was his idea, but he didn't expect them to turn out being servants.

“My goodness! What did I just see? Is this guy really here to fight his final battle?”

“The man is really enjoying it. Look, he hasn't opened his eyes yet, he didn't care of paying the least bit of respect to the three geniuses. Not to mention, asking people to carry his chair, giving him a free ride, very impressive right?”

“Why do I feel like he is trying to offend everyone with his pride? This is the final battle. Why can't he be serious about it?”

“Apparently, Jiang Chen was doing this deliberately. He wanted to anger the three geniuses. From the morale point of view, they won temporarily, but this appearance is just nonsense.”

.....

Everyone was speechless. This type of entry made people dislike Jiang Chen instantly. There wasn't any seriousness in this attempt. Is triggering everyone's emotions really his objective instead of fighting the final battle?

“Jiang Chen. Is it because you know that today is your death? Do you want to enjoy yourself fully before facing it?”

Wan Yi Ming said it with sarcasm.

“Who was the one who spoke to me just now? With that attitude? It was disrespectful!”

Jiang Chen was still squinting his two eyes, as if he had not awoken from sleep. He didn't even make eye contact with Wan Yi Ming.

“So this is a low-level servant who doesn't have the good looking face of mine, how could you speak like that? Let me help you to teach this servant a lesson!”

Big Yellow's voice was loud enough to disguise his act. He didn't care about the changes in expression on Wan Yi Ming's face. He shouted, “That stupid idiot carrying a sword at the back, how dare you use words to offend my respected master? This is unreasonable. Now, I will give you an opportunity to expiate your wrongdoing, simply find a rock and hit it with your head until you die.”

Goodness!

Countless people were shocked. Wan Yi Ming was staggering on his feet wanting to spit blood. Everybody was silent. A man and a dog had collaborated to make an emotion-triggering show that provoked everyone.

Especially that dog, was he demanding their knuckle sandwiches? His reply made them all lowly.

“God damn it! I will tear this dog into pieces, after that I will kill Jiang Chen.”

Wan Yi Ming was furious. With a sway of his body, he appeared in front of Big Yellow in a split second. Suddenly, he stuck out his palm, his force of Ninth Grade Combat King was unleashed fully, speeding towards Big Yellow Dog to catch him. He wanted to tear this dog into pieces by hook or crook to mitigate his resentment.

“Humph”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph when he saw Wan Yi Ming starting his attack. With his body still sitting, he also used his palm to welcome Wan Yi Ming’s attack.

Bang

The Spatial Shift was broken instantaneously. The impact was huge. Wan Yi Ming felt a very strong vibration from his palm, pushing his body away. He was pushed back ten feet and only able to stand back up after that.

“What?!”

Wan Yi Ming’ facial expression changed. He raised his head and looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief. He thought he could pinch Jiang

Chen with his thumb or finger to death any moment, but this was different. Jiang Chen had become so strong. His power was scary. His attack was more powerful than him and that pushed him so far away.

Wan Yi Ming wasn't the only one who was surprised. Xiao Nan Feng and Qian Wen Yu have the same feeling. Perhaps, they still had no idea of how powerful Jiang Chen had become, but they knew who gained the upper hand of the battle just now. That was just a simple attack from Jiang Chen, his body did not leave his seat yet. Any cultivator could see it without a doubt.

“My god! What did I see, Jiang Chen actually made Wan Yi Ming back away by just one attack? What is happening?”

“He's only a Fifth Grade Combat King, how can he possibly fight with Wan Yi Ming? The gap of Combat King is too wide!”

“From Jiang Chen's explosive force, he had already reached Seventh Grade Combat King in ten days time. I don't have a clue of how he trained from Fifth Grade Combat King to his current level within this short period of time.”

“It is terrifying. A person with Seventh Grade Combat King power defeating a Ninth Grade Combat King is unbelievable.”

.....

Nobody was calm. Everyone thought that the fight was going to

be simple, which was Jiang Chen being killed by the three of them. However, things had changed. It was unexpected that Jiang Chen could upgrade his Combat skills to this level. Many of them had started to change their views on the outcome of the battle about who will be the winner.

The fact was, Jiang Chen was the peerless evildoer who could initiate disasters. At the time he was only at Fifth Grade Combat King, he was able to kill the second Tycoon of Asura Palace who was an Eighth Grade Combat King. Now that he is a Seventh Grade Combat King, his ability was enough to take down all three of the geniuses who were Ninth Grade Combat Kings. The three of them don't stand a chance.

“So, this is the limit of the genius of Peerless Sword Faction.”

Jiang Chen said then vanished from his chair with a flash and appeared above the sky on the mountains where the three geniuses were. He was facing Xiao Nan Feng and the other two and said, “You three come and attack me together!”

“Nonsense! So what if you are now a Seventh Grade Combat King? Let me test your power and see how strong you really are!”

Wan Yi Ming shouted in anger. He rushed towards Jiang Chen to attack again. Xiao Nan Feng and Qian Wen Yu were standing not very far away without any intention of stopping Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen didn't make that powerful attack, they would have joined the fight. However, with this current eye-opening encounter, maybe they should just observe and analyze Jiang Chen's ability.

For the three of them, joining together to the battle and fight Jiang Chen who was facing them alone, would put their faces to shame since they were the best Ninth Grade Combat Kings in the Liang Province.

Wan Yi Ming unleashed all of his power out, ready to make his attack. When he reached Jiang Chen, a fast jingling sound was produced when he unsheathed the sword on his back. This invincible King Weapon was blazing so bad that the entire Space Shift was filled with a slaughtering atmosphere, nearly drowning the whole Space Shift.

“Wu Xiang Sword’s technique.”

This was the highest technique of the Peerless Sword Faction. Wan Yi Ming had possessed the consummate skill of this technique. Any attack made from the sword would lock the Spatial Shift with its force, preventing the opponent from escaping.

Wan Yi Ming had taken out his King Weapon. This clearly suggested that he had converted his ego over the un-powerful Jiang Chen to tactical action and attack. He wanted to get rid of his opponent who humiliated him with his greatest power.

Peng!!A sound wave was produced, deterring everybody’s spiritual stance. Wan Yi Ming could feel the massive force that was exerted on his sword, the sword that he was holding was vibrating greatly.

Peng!!

Jiang Chen made his second step, Wan Yi Ming could feel that the muscle between his thumb and index finger was going to tear apart, he was losing grip of his sword.

Peng!!

At the third step, Wan Yi Ming gave a cry of anguish when his sword was taken away from his hand by Jiang Chen.

“Give me back my precious sword.”

Wan Yi Ming shouted with all his might, he was totally clueless. He didn't expect this would be the outcome. Jiang Chen's power had reached a level where he didn't even stand a chance to counterattack. At the moment he was slashing Jiang Chen with his sword, he was always reflected away by Jiang Chen's attack.

“Humph, step number four.”

Jiang Chen was ruthless. He made his fourth step on Wan Yi Ming's chest.

“Argh...”

Wan Yi Ming gave a cry of pain, his mouth was spitting blood. In the fresh blood contained small pieces of his internal organs. His

chest was being trampled heavily. He was not an opponent of Jiang Chen at all, the gap of power was way too wide.

“Here comes the fifth step.”

Jiang Chen was like the god of death that had arrived to take souls of the dead, the expression in his eyes was full of cruelty and brutality. He made his fifth step on Wan Yi Ming's skull.

“Nooooo...”

Wan Yi Ming felt threatened by death. This was the first time he felt this close to death. He knew clearly that once this leg touched his skull, his death was definite. The flesh in his body was going to burst into pieces. He didn't want to die, but it wasn't his decision to make.

Jiang Chen's leg fell on Wan Yi Ming's skull, a crack was heard. Wan Yi Ming's skull cracked and broke. No sound could be heard from him again. The Azure Dragon's Five Steps was deadly, especially the last step. Its power could be matched with the Fire Dragon's Seal. It wasn't shameful to die under the Five Steps of Black Dragon as Jiang Chen's combat power was way beyond anyone's imagination. He could kill Wan Yi Ming easily, even without using the Azure Dragon Five Steps.

Chapter 585 - Kneel Down And Bow With Your Forehead Touching The Ground

“Wakaka... Excellent.”

Big Yellow laughed with his usual expression. It was within Big Yellow's expectations that it wasn't hard for Jiang Chen to kill Wan Yi Ming. There was no one who knew Jiang Chen's scary power than him, after all

“It is truly extraordinary.”

Tyrant was almost speechless, but he was still pleased. Jiang Chen was going to become stronger, he would be happy for his friend anyway.

“Little Chen has grown incredibly, his opponent didn't even have the chance to react. It will be the end for Xiao Nan Feng and Qian Wen Yu. I think the major powers in Liang Province will need to re-shuffle to fill up the vacant positions very soon.”

Tan Lang couldn't help but shook his head. He had seen too many miraculous incidents from Jiang Chen. It was a mistake that they, the Asura Palace, Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction, offended him. This mistake would cost them greatly. The major powers of Liang Province would begin another wave of candidacy for the vacant positions of their geniuses, like what happened in Southern Continent after the complete destruction of the Devil King Palace which led to the direct rule under the Profound River Palace.

After killing his opponent, Jiang Chen shifted his gaze to Xiao NanFeng and Qian WenYu then said, “Qian Wen Yu, I will give you a chance to live and not kill you if you beg for it. What do you say?”

This was a direct question for Qian Wen Yu which did not include Xiao Nan Feng. This was because, in Jiang Chen’s heart, this arrogant man must die, a death that was unavoidable, a certain excruciating death.

“This is humiliating!”

Qian Wen Yu shouted with rage, his furious aura erupting up to the sky. This must be a ridicule. He represented Invincible Sect as the number one genius to fight today’s final battle. Not only was his face being shown here, but also the reputation of the sect. If he surrendered and beg for his life before the battle, he would not find anything that can cover up his face. He also knew how much this would hurt the reputation of Invincible Sect, there was no way for him to survive in Liang Province.

“Humiliating? So What? I didn’t tell you to kneel in front of me. Why not become a human pet for Big Yellow, I guarantee that your future is way brighter than staying in the Invincible Sect.”

Jiang Chen said it in a calm tone.

Big Yellow’s eyes sparkled and his ears raised when he heard the two words ‘human pet.’ “Yes, this is definitely not a bad decision.

Become my apprentice and follow me, it is better than the future you will have in Invincible Sect. Little Chen, you have very sensible vision for this.” He thought.

“Brother Qian, the man humiliated you to this extent, which is intolerable. If I am not wrong, the spell he casted to kill Wan YiMing was his limit. Not just that, brother Yi Ming failed to see his weak point because he looked down on him. Although his combat power is a little higher than each of us, with our combined strength, there will be chances of eliminating him.”

Xian NanFeng whispered to Qian WenYu. It seemed that fear had sneaked up on him. He knew Jiang Chen’s iron will of tearing him apart as an act of revenge for his good friend, Zhaung Fan. If he was to face him alone, he wouldn’t stand a chance given Jiang Chen’s combat power. But, fighting him with an ally might have hopes.

In reality, Xiao NanFeng was wrong. Two versus one would be good. But, even with the combined strength of twenty Xiao NanFeng and Qian WenYu wouldn’t be enough to kill Jiang Chen.

“Okay, we will fight together.”

Qian WenYu said while gritting his teeth. He hated Jiang Chen instantly. How could he possibly accept being a ‘human pet’? This was disgraceful and totally unacceptable.

“Don’t say I didn’t give y’all chances and say that I’m cruel.”

Jiang Chen said it with an abnormally cold tone. He twisted his body, disappeared from where he stood and appeared in front of Qian Wen Yu. He attacked without hesitation, not giving time for the two of them to form an alliance. It was not because he was afraid of their combined power but he didn't want to waste any more time.

Boom!

Qian Wen Yu sensed quickly when the attack was made. He reacted immediately, a wave of Yuan Force rushed out from his body, speeding towards his opponent.

Jiang Chen raised his left hand and pointed his forefinger at Qian Wen Yu's brow, the finger that was fused with the Saint finger. Once the power was released through the finger it became unbelievably bright, it was unstoppable.

Bang!

The Yuan Force could not slow down even the slightest amount of the force that had erupted from the forefinger, and ended up being crushed under its force. Qian Wen Yu witnessed it for the first time. Jiang Chen touched his forehead softly with lightning speed. It was so fast that it was impossible for a Ninth Grade Combat King to avoid this attack.

Puff

A deep sound was heard. A bloody hole appeared on Qian Wen Yu's forehead, the fresh blood gushed out continuously, as if water escaping from a fountain. His whole body became stiff and his eyes widened, as though unable to accept his miserable death.

“You, you...”

Qian Wen Yu died under Jiang Chen's forefinger. His body fell from the sky. A great genius of Liang Province had fallen.

Wahhhh

Another round of cheers was induced. They were all shocked when they saw the unbelievable scene, it was unforgettable. If 'frightening' was the term used to describe when Jiang Chen was trampling Wan Yi Ming in five steps, the term could be reused for Qian Wen Yu's case. This had exceeded many people's scope of understanding, beyond their ability to comprehend and accept.

“My God...Using a forefinger to kill a Ninth Grade Combat King. This is OUTRAGEOUS!”

“What level has he actually grown to? This is truly unbelievable. Not even a genius like Qian Wen Yu can bear the forefinger's attack and was touched to death.”

“Looks like Xiao NanFeng isn't going to escape his death. It is Jiang Chen's intention at the beginning to get rid of him. If the three geniuses die today, there will be a dramatic change in Liang

Province.”

.....

All of them were shocked but ‘shock’ wasn’t the right word to describe their feelings anymore. The mentally prepared Tyrant and Tan Lang also could not resist from the ‘shock’. All their attention was on Jiang Chen’s forefinger, admitting its great power.

It was his first time to make an attack using the finger fused with Saint Bone, the result was more unimaginable than what he thought. It was a blow of surprise for the rest of them too because the method of killing could easily take down the number one genius of Invincible Sect.

Swoosh

That event caused Xiao Nan Feng's mouth to drop wide open. Just now, when he tried to make his first attack, Qian Wen Yu was killed, he stopped himself immediately. At first he thought to fight him together with his ally to gain the upper hand, but now it had become a vain hope.

Now he knew that Jiang Chen’s power wasn’t under his estimation at all. Even if he allied with Qian Wen Yu, the conclusion would be the same.

“It’s your turn. I suppose you have already prepared for it right?”

Jiang Chen's tone was cold and emotionless. He deeply resented Xiao NanFeng. He felt too reluctant to communicate with him but he didn't want him to die easily. Dying like how his two companions died was a luxury for him.

“Jiang Chen, I admit that I am incapable to be your opponent, but don't you think there isn't a conflict between us?”

Xiao Nan Feng was afraid. The fact that he voluntarily admitted that he wasn't the opponent anymore was an indication of surrender. But, no one dared to mock him. The death of the two strongly indicated the deterrence for the rest. Only an idiot would continue the battle and end up dying. Any further battle with him would deem meaningless.

“I think, if I am the one who is in your position now, you won't say these words to me. In truth, killing a filthy guy like you will dirty my hands. You know more than anyone else about what you have done. Today, it is impossible for you to die like them.”

Cold light beamed from both of Jiang Chen's eyes. He had never hated someone so much since his past life until now. With a wave of his hand, a stream of light dashed through overhead. It stopped in the sky, it was the body of Zhuang Fan.

Jiang Chen pressed on Zhuang Fan's back to hold him, allowing his body to stand upright. Zhuang Fan faced Xiao Nan Feng even though he could not see his murderer anymore.

“Xiao Nan Feng, kneel down and bow before him with your forehead touching the ground!”

Jiang Chen shouted at him angrily.

Chapter 586 - The Cruellest Way Of Dying

“What? You want a Tycoon to kneel before a dead man?”

Xiao Nan Feng was furious. It was very insulting to kneel before a corpse whose social class was the lowest of the lowest. The social class he was at was incomparable. If he was to kneel down in front of all these people, his dignity couldn't be retained anymore.

It was really hard for him. It was because until now, he still cared for his dignity.

“Humph. It is not up to you whether to kneel on your knees.”

Jiang Chen clamoured. His aura rushed out from him. He struck Xiao Nan Feng with the True Dragon Big Palm Print, which would enclose him.

“Hundreds Heiner Creeks!”

Xiao Nan Feng used his ultimate technique. He had already seen through Jiang Chen's ability. Jiang Chen would never show mercy to him even if he knelt down before the corpse. Since today's death was inescapable, the last bet on his life would be worth it.

Bang!

Unfortunately, the power between the two of them varied too

much. The pressure of the True Dragon Big Palm rotted away his force, like the rapid decomposition of a corpse. A few small cracks formed visibly on the spatial area. The huge blood red Dragon Claw lunged with a force of a big mountain, enveloping Xiao Nan Feng entirely.

Argh

Xiao Nan Feng couldn't stand the pressure, blood spurted out from his mouth. Both of his legs became soft and weak, it caused him to kneel down automatically after he puffed. He was kneeling in the middle of the sky right before Zhuang Fan.

“Argh...”

Xiao Nan Feng cried. There was no way for him to break free from Jiang Chen's Dragon Claw which was like a prison cell, locking him and restricting all his movements. He was left without the ability to fight back.

“Aah! Xiao Nan Feng got himself into trouble. Now the retribution for his wrongdoings has found him.”

“Exactly. The lord of the Heavenly Hawk Island is the most pitiful, while Xiao Nan Feng is the pious villain. Now the revenge is taken on the lord's murderer. Kneeling in front of his body will allow the lord to finally rest in peace.”

“If what the lord of the Heavenly Hawk Island had gone through

is real, Xiao Nan Feng deserved it. It is a matter that will be treated with disdain in the Combat King realm. I guess Jiang Chen will not permit him to die this easily because can kill him just like what happened to Wan Yi Ming and Qian Wen Yu. I have no idea about what torture he will inflict on Xiao Nan Feng.”

.....

Arguments aroused in many conversations amongst the people watching the battle. Xian Nan Feng was under the complete control of Jiang Chen, the master of his life and death. His situation didn't win anyone's pity, but instead, they focused all their attention on the dead body of Zhuang Fan whose eyes had been closed forever. It was indeed pathetic. If Zhuang Fan's tragedy happened on Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen himself had no idea how far Zhuang Fan would go to avenge him, he might even dig Xiao Nan Feng's heart out alive.

“Zhuang Fan. Did you see that? Xiao Nan Feng is kneeling in front of you. Now I want him to bow with his face touching the ground for three times for the three members of your family.”

Jiang Chen said. He exerted his palm. Xiao Nan Feng's forehead puffed after hitting the spatial area. The spatial area was invisible and intangible but the impact of his forehead was like knocking the ground, which was deafening.

Dong *Dong* *Dong*

There were three members in the family of Zhuang Fan.....three

lives. A total of nine knocks, there wasn't one knock less. It wasn't his will to do the kneeling and bowing, it had gone beyond his control to direct his body. In other words, his body had fallen into the full custody of Jiang Chen.

After the ninth knock, Xiao Nan Feng's face had become unrecognizable. Fresh blood covered his forehead to his face. The bridge of his nose was broken and became crooked, blood spurted out from his eyes. It stirred up everyone's emotions to see a Ninth Grade Combat King injured by just kneeling and bowing.

Blurgh

Xiao Nan Feng spurted out another mouthful of blood, the main cause of this was his overly triggered anger. Although his face had turned into an abnormal shape, his sanity was still preserved. Thinking that he was the First Tycoon of the Asura Palace, kneeling down in front of countless people will definitely bring him endless insults.

“Jiang Chen, kill me.”

Xiao Nan Feng begged Jiang Chen. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn't going to let him live, no matter how he begged him. He had to die anyway, why not fulfil his death wish now? Otherwise, the torturous cruelty would be expecting him since Jiang Chen was the one who scored perfectly in the violence test. He was merciless when it came to killing.

“Rest assured. Your death today is certain, a very uneasy death.

Xiao Nan Feng, do you know what's the cruellest death in the world? Cramped to death? No. Splitting the limbs by five horses? Crushing your bones into powder? Not also. You must be curious of what it is but no need to rush. You will find out very soon."

Jiang Chen's face was full of smiles, it was a sneering smile. He eyed Xiao Nan Feng pitifully. The expression of his eyes caused Xiao Nan Feng's very soul to shiver because he hadn't had any idea of what was going to happen. Far away from them, he saw Big Yellow's sinister stare.

"Jiang Chen. If you are a man, end my life now. I have been defeated by you today and I admit it!"

Xiao Nan Feng said loudly.

"Because I am a man, I can't fulfil your death wish instantly. Big Yellow, I will hand him to you. What do you think we should do to him? You don't need me to teach you, right?"

Jiang Chen grabbed his neck and threw him towards Big Yellow like a toy.

"Don't worry, I will treat him with great care."

Big Yellow grinned. He spat a layer of Yuan Force, wrapping all over Xiao Nan Feng. Xiao Nan Feng looked at Big Yellow with a shocked expression. Big Yellow twisted his body and aimed his buttocks at him. Big Yellow's butt was probably only three inches

further away from his face.

Three inches. This was going to be one of the greatest tragedies in humanity.

“No!!”

Xiao Nan Feng widened his eyes and gave out a cry of terror. Even though he didn't witness what happened in the Asura Palace ten days ago, he was fully aware of this dog's deadly and poisonous fart, it was comparable to human hell.

“FOR GOD SAKE!”

Countless people exclaimed with shock. Apparently, the latest news had been spread all over the Liang Province making all of them understand its power.....Invincible was no longer the word to describe Big Yellow's Fart.

All of them understood what Jiang Chen meant the moment they saw Big Yellow aimed his buttocks at Xiao Nan Feng.

Xiao Nan Feng struggled intensely even though his body was seriously injured. However, he was under Big Yellow's full control, he did not even have the slightest strength to resist. The only thing he could do was to stare attentively at the plump butt. He never even dreamt that this day would come.

Boom!

Whatever that was fated will come one day. Big Yellow's Whirlwind Spirit Fart that had been brewed for quite some time finally erupted again as if the explosion of a bomb on a peaceful day, shaking the earth and sky. A cloud of green air rushed out, bombarding his face directly. Intense thick green gases were released, turning his face into green color. Now his whole body was surrounded by the green air. Then, the air pushed him to fly forty feet in the sky.

“Ahhh!!...”

Mournful screams could be heard from Xiao Nan Feng. It gave goosebumps to everyone. The scream was like coming out of his burning lungs, it had turned from pitiful to creepy. It was hard to imagine any human being to create such voices, he must have undergone unbearable suffering.

Xiao Nan Feng was floating in the sky, still with his entire body wrapped around by the green air, it wasn't leaving his skin no matter how he move. He retched continuously, the hair atop his head was standing vertically and his eye balls were popping out from his skull.

“Wakaka”

Big Yellow laughed. His speed was incredibly fast, appearing in front of Xiao Nan Feng in the blink of an eye. This time he simply rode on Xiao Nan Feng's face.

Bang!

Another deafening sound...This sound totally buried Xiao Nan Feng's screams of pain. He turned around and a moan at its highest pitch could be heard.

Argh... Argh... Argh...

Bang *Bang* *Bang*

It was an unforgettable scene for the people watching it. Big Yellow rode on Xiao Nan Feng's head and erupted his Whirlwind Spirit Fart again and again, insanely flooding the air with his green fart. People from far away were starting to smell it's disgusting smell.

“Damn! Brutal!”

“This is certainly the cruelest retribution even executed. This superior dog's buttocks can infiltrate into one's soul and rip it apart.”

“Xiao Nan Feng is finished. He will be the first Ninth Grade Combat King in the world to be smoked to death.”

.....

Everyone's faces turned pale and white. It was unimaginable

even if they put themselves in Xiao Nan Feng's shoes. This scene hardly happened in a thousand years and the likes of Big Yellow barely only appeared in ten thousand years.

Boom!

It was Big Yellow's last fart on him, followed by a silent reaction. Big Yellow then removed his legs and left Xiao Nan Feng's head. Xiao Nan Feng's face wasn't his anymore, his mouth was full of white foam. His body fell from the sky, smashing into the sharp structure of the summit on a mountain. His breath stopped after a few attempts of squirming. At his last breath, his facial expression was full of torture and pain. His way of dying wasn't peaceful at all.

“Dead.”

“He is really dead. My god. He is the Great Tycoon of Asura Palace, the number one genius, a Ninth Grade Combat King, but died under the butt of the dog. This is the most tragic way of dying, it is surely pathetic.”

“Pathetic indeed. Sad resemblance and too cruel. What is cramped to death and splitting the limbs by five horses? They aren't like this. The superior dog's fart is the world's cruelest thing.”

This is the dreariest scene ever. Xiao Nan Feng died under the fart of a dog. This would become the topic of conversation for many years in the future.

“Very f***ing brutal!”

The monk was staring at the dog who was moving into his direction while wagging his tail. He couldn't help but move further away. This dog was too scary, his way of killing was heinous. The consequences of fighting the dog was unthinkable.

Xiao Nan Feng had died. Jiang Chen didn't pay much attention to it. He faced Zhuang Fan and said, “Zhuang Fan, I have avenged your family from the murderer. I hope that your family will be reunited in the Soul realm. Once the matter in Liang Province is settled, I will go to Qing City to bury you.”

Chapter 587 - Outbreak Of Hostilities

Jiang Chen returned Zhuang Fan's body into his Dantian. Xiao Nan Feng was dead. One critical wish was finally fulfilled. For Jiang Chen, today's battle rose Liang Province to fame; for Xiao Nan Feng and the rest, it would attract massive sarcasm.

There was a period when many of them came to Gorge Mountain (Luo Xiao Mountain) to fight a battle that determined the strongest genius in Liang Province. But from what happened just now, it was pointless. If Jiang Chen was included in it, none of them was worth the title of 'The Strongest Genius.'

As for the genius of Heavenly Devil Palace, he was a truly fortunate fellow. Heavenly Devil Palace was supposed to take part in the battle if not for Dark Min Zi's change of attitude. If this happened, the promised battle would become four versus one instead of the trio. But that wouldn't create any miracles either, they would still face the same fate.

On the surface of the mountains lay three dead bodies, the bodies of the three impressive talents of Liang Province that had fallen into eternal sleep, turning into a historical and unforgettable figures.

Many spectators were looking at Jiang Chen. A man that wasn't older than twenty years old had achieved this much. Not just that, he could kill three Ninth Grade Combat Kings while only possessing Seventh Grade Combat King power and had initiated disasters before. Perhaps only such a devil could hold the title of the 'Strongest Genius'.

In a small state like Liang Province, there wasn't anyone that was on par with Jiang Chen's level. He had become one of the talents in the Mysterious Domain. Although there were countless talents in the Mysterious Domain that were way better than him, however if they were compared to his reincarnated talent, it would be senseless.

“Jiang Chen has killed the three geniuses. The three major powers of Liang Province will not take this matter lightly and let him go freely.”

“But, Dark Devil Religion got Jiang Chen's back. Plus he also has the support from Heavenly Devil Palace. It seems the three major powers do not have audacious bravery to do anything about it.”

“It is not about courage anymore, it is a must. The three major powers aren't fools. Even if the Dark Devil Religion is Jiang Chen's assurer, they will still kill him. Because the resentment and hatred they have for him has taken root deep within their hearts, it's impossible for their will to kill him to diminish. On the other hand, the scariest part of Jiang Chen is that he can advance very fast. If time is given to him, I'm afraid that it will be the end of the three major powers. They can't afford to wait until that day to come. Also, the Dark Devil Religion won't be able to interfere since they are under the watch of Freedom Palace and Nebula Religion, it is unlikely that they will attempt any action in Liang Province.”

.....

Arguments started amongst the people. Although Jiang Chen had killed the three geniuses, it was still far from over. It would only deepen the resentment and hatred of the masters of the three major powers, making them unable to overlook this matter. This was in line with the statement that the three major powers also had no choice but to kill him even if he had the Dark Devil Religion backing him, because he would also not leave them alone, taking revenge on them.

When some of them wanted to leave the battle scene, powerful forces appeared from far away. A few silhouettes arrived at the location of the battle from different directions at the same time. Their auras were immense, they were the Combat Emperors.

After the flashes of their silhouettes, the six figures that came from three different locations in the sky above the mountains became clearer. They were the masters of three powers and their Great Elders. They didn't intend to show up in this location. According to the agreement of the battle, Combat Emperors were not allowed to take part but, a moment before, they saw the Soul Jade Slip in each of their sect broke into pieces. This indicated the end of the battle, which their geniuses made their ultimate sacrifice. That was why they rushed to the scene.

The six of them eyed cautiously at the three dead bodies, infuriating with anger.

“Impossible, this is impossible. How could this happen?”

Invincible Nie's tone was shivering. It was hard to believe what he just saw. The only reason that they agreed for the battle to

happen ten days later was that they were highly confident about their geniuses' abilities even if their masters were absent. They didn't expect Jiang Chen had reached such level of power in only ten days and kill them all.

“Jiang Chen, is this your doing?”

Li Tian Yang exclaimed sternly.

“Who else do you think can possibly kill them?”

Jiang Chen said sneeringly, with an arrogant face.

The six Combat Emperors had already detected his strong Qi, which had reached the Seventh Grade Combat King. This sent a chill down their spines. In just ten days' time, advancing to Seventh Grade from Fifth Grade was an enormous improvement, 'astonishment' was a more appropriate word to describe this.

The astonishment soon transformed into fear when they thought that a Seventh Grade Combat King was able to kill three Ninth Grade Combat Kings. They foresaw that if Jiang Chen had advanced to Eighth or even Ninth Grade Combat King, killing them wouldn't be hard.

His speed of advancement was hard to predict, it could be faster than anyone's expectation. Li Tian Yang, Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist made quick eye contacts with each other, sending signals to one another about their intention to kill Jiang

Chen. That's right, killing him was their unmistakable intention. Now, they had to eliminate this devil at all costs, even if it would offend the Dark Devil Religion, but they were still under the eyes of Freedom Palace. However, Jiang Chen's further development would realize their worst dream which was the end of their world.

“See, the three major powers are here. They will undoubtedly kill him for good. I would do the same given the same situation.”

“Exactly, it is obvious that offending Dark Devil Religion would result in the destruction of all of us and all the powers in Liang Province, but giving the opportunity for Jiang Chen to become stronger is entirely different. Because Freedom Palace will face Dark Devil Religion on behalf of us but won't if it was just a small individual like Jiang Chen.”

“It seems like the situation is starting to heat up. Do you all see that? Jiang Chen's facial expression did not change, calm and confident. He isn't disturbed by the existence of the Combat Emperors at all. Do not tell me that he is confident in fighting them.”

“Who knows? This devil is unpredictable.”

.....

Now, people could smell the intensely burnt gunpowder. The resentment and hatred had developed to the extent that the only resolution would be a life and death battle.

“The three powers don’t feel shameful? It is agreed that the battle only involved their geniuses. Now there is interference of the masters... they are rather thick skinned... this makes me unable to continue seeing the battle anymore.”

It was a weird tone, not from a stranger, it was Tyrant’s..

“Bald donkey, what did you just say?”

Li Tian Yang glared and shouted at him.

“He said you all are shameless, a group of shameless old men. Even master dog can understand, how come you can’t? How can your intelligence be eligible to fit you in the position of the master of a sect? Why don’t you step down and let me succeed your place.”

Big Yellow wagged his sturdy tail. He really had a vulgar mouth.

Puff

His words made a lot of people laugh. The real meaning of the words were ‘As the master of the sect, you are no better than a dog?’

“Don’t misunderstand them, perhaps they are just here to collect the corpses.”

Jiang Chen said it with the exact same tone, calm and easy.

Li Tian Yang and the rest were furious. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow said those word with perfect sarcasm, as if they had trained for years for a duet performance. It was spiteful for important figures like them. No one had ever talked to them in such a way as that would mean digging their own grave.

“Jiang Chen, for the conflicts and resentment between us, let’s end it today. I would like to see how powerful your Seventh Grade Combat King is.”

Li Tian Yang’s Qi trembled, sending a palm attack to Jiang Chen all of a sudden. Reputation wasn’t the important element today anymore. If this kid didn’t die today, chances to eliminate him in the future would be rare or none at all

Bang!

A black ray sped from the sky, reflecting Li Tian Yang’s attack. Two silhouettes appeared in front of Jiang Chen, they were Dark Min Zi and Great Elder. To win the alliance with the Dark Devil Religion, Dark Min Zi had been observing the movement of the other three powers. When he noticed they were heading to the battle scene, he had followed them.

“Li Tian Yang, you don’t want your reputation anymore? The agreement clearly stated the terms. Now, because your geniuses were incompetent and killed by Jiang Chen, you all come here to seek revenge for them? How shameful it is?”

Dark Min Zi sent another sentence of sarcasm to them.

“Dark Min Zi, this is our matter. I hope you don’t take part.”

Shadowless Taoist said.

“I don’t care, and I will intrude. Let me tell you all, I am the first one here to oppose anyone that wants to kill Jiang Chen.”

Dark Min Zi was firm. This was a golden opportunity to befriend Jiang Chen, he couldn’t miss it.

“Here comes the outbreak of hostility. Now everyone knows Jiang Chen is a good friend of the young master of Dark Devil Religion. Befriending Jiang Chen is equivalent to have rooted a part in Dark Devil Religion. Dark Min Zi isn’t foolish. He is determined to protect Jiang Chen.”

“That’s right. He and Jiang Chen have no relationship whatsoever before. Ten days ago, when Jiang Chen was surrounded by the three major powers, he was just there to join the fun and see how Jiang Chen dies. But, he changed his attitude and view after Sot Old Man’s appearance .”

“Of course, if it was me, I will also protect Jiang Chen.”

.....

The current scene had an atmosphere of intense hostility, threatening to erupt any moment. Everyone watching quickly backed away a few feet. They had already seen through it. If it wasn't stopped, it would cause the biggest battle in the history of Liang Province. All the combat emperors were involved. The result would be devastating if the battle started. The combat aura released by the fighters were too strong to handle, many of them who wanted to watch the 'show' wouldn't go to the extent of risking their lives, as it was not worth it.

The masters of the three major powers glanced at each other again, murderous looks were exchanged to intensify their desire to kill Jiang Chen. Even if Jiang Chen was backed by Dark Min Zi, they had no choice but to initiate the battle.

Chapter 588 - Counter Attack

“Dark Min Zi, if you insist to stand on Jiang Chen’s side and fight us, then let today’s battle decide our lives. I would like to see how Heavenly Devil Palace can fight the six of us together.”

Invincible Nie said confidently. This was the first time the three major powers fought jointly. If this was done a long time ago, Heavenly Devil Palace would be gone by now. This just didn’t happen because of the infighting happening among them, an alliance to eliminate Heavenly Devil Palace would hurt the masters’ Yuan Force immensely which wouldn’t be worth it at all. But today was different, they had to unite to defeat Jiang Chen. It wasn’t Heavenly Devil Palace that frightened them, it was Jiang Chen.

The six Combat Emperors of the three major powers released thick murderous aura up to the sky. The battle to death, that wouldn’t give Jiang Chen any chance of escape, was about to begin.

Dark Min Zi and the Great Elder’s faces turned pale and unpleasant when they saw what was happening. They didn’t expect that the three major powers were so determined to get rid of Jiang Chen. Judging from the current situation, the two of them were First Grade Combat Emperors which wouldn’t be enough to fight the six of them. The differences in their power were too much. Dark Min Zi didn’t even include Jiang Chen in his estimation. He might be able to kill three geniuses who were all Ninth Grade Combat Kings, but Ninth Grade Combat Kings couldn’t be compared to First Grade Combat Emperors. Not to mention Li Tian Yang was at the peak of First Grade Combat

Emperor, he was only one more step before becoming a Second Grade Combat Emperor.

“Brother Jiang. Today’s situation is unfavorable. Great Elder and I will find ways to contain them, you have to run during that time.”

Dark Min Zi said to him.

“Thank you for helping me. But, how can I leave you two to fight them alone and run away?”

Jiang Chen smiled. With his current power, it was sufficient to fight an ordinary First Grade Combat Emperor, his power of Combat Emperor was similar to the three major powers and their Great Elders. His true power allowed him to contend with them easily. In addition, his bone contained the Saint power, this gave him enough confidence to eliminate a First Grade Combat Emperor. This battle was also a good opportunity for him to test his combat power.

As the Greatest Saint, there wasn’t any battles that he had not experienced. So, the current battle wasn’t something.

“Knock it off! Kill them!”

Li Tian Yang yelled. He led the team and casted a Golden Dharma Seal after a wave of his hand, heading towards Jiang Chen’s direction, engulfing him. The battle had started.

The moment Dark Min Zi made his defense to reflect the attack, an unexpected event happened again. Another powerful Qi descended from the sky, a brilliant ray of light lunged forward, hitting Li Tian Yang's Golden Dharma Seal away.

Bang!

The roar trembled the Spatial Shift. Li Tian Yang's body received a fierce shock, causing him to shake. The one who made this attack had to be on par with him.

“Who is it?”

Li Tian Yang demanded an answer. All the focus, including Dark Min Zi's attention, shifted to the unknown person from afar. A purple glow was seen, it became larger and clearer. It eventually became a young lad on purple clothes, bringing himself down on the mountain.

The purple-clothed young lad had a good-looking face, his hair danced as the wind blew, and his body was emitting powerful Qi from top to bottom. It startled them when a young lad like him had attained the Combat Emperor realm. It was unmistakable that he was a First Grade Combat Emperor. To reach the Combat Emperor realm at a very young age was uncommon, not only in Liang Province, but also in Divine Continent. It was deemed as a first class talent. His level of Combat Emperor might not be as strong like the others in Divine Continent, but his young age was the proof of his talent.

“What is this young man? He has reached the Combat Emperor Realm, very scary.”

“That’s right, it seems he is also here to assist Jiang Chen. Don’t tell me this is the young master of the Dark Devil Religion. No, observing from his attack just now, it wasn’t a Devil’s spell. Apparently, he isn’t from the Devil realm.”

“Such young talent, his origin had to be extraordinary. Maybe, he is one of the geniuses from the five major powers in Mysterious City.

.....

Li Tian Yang was focusing on the newly emerged young man. He seemed familiar to Li Tian Yang but couldn’t recall where he had seen him before.

“Who are you? Why do you stop me?!”

Li Tian Yang shouted his questions.

“Li Tian Yang, perhaps you have forgotten me. That time when I was badly injured by a storm, I accidentally offended you verbally and was imprisoned in the Freezing Hell Jail without receiving any treatment. If it isn’t for Jiang Chen who destroyed the prison cell, I am dead long ago.”

The purple-clothed young man said. He was an outsider, he was the Tan Family's Tan Zhi Hao. At the time when Jiang Chen just came back from Western Continent, he had been pushing his level of Combat King to Combat Emperor realm. It was unexpected that he succeeded in achieving his goal within these ten days.

Tan Zhi Hao turned to Jiang Chen after he finished clarifying, greeting Jiang Chen by holding his fists in front of his chest. He said, "I am thankful for your help in Freezing Hell Jail that day, your grace will be remembered."

Jiang Chen greeted him back politely with the same manner. He couldn't recall this young man. His only priority that time was his mission, he didn't have the chance to care about others. Now he knew that all of the prisoners were released when he destroyed the Freezing Hell Jail. Tan Zhi Hao was one of them. He was amazed by Tan Zhi Hao's exceptional talent, achieving First Grade Combat Emperor at his age.

"So it is you."

Li Tian Yang thought of Tan Zhi Hao for a while. That time he remembered that he held a young man captive for speaking offensively to him and send him to Freezing Hell Jail. He didn't imagine he would emerge again.

"Your surname is Tan."

Shadowless Taoist was looking at the young man with surprise, as though he had thought of something.

“That’s right. I am from Tan family which gives me the name Tan Zhi Hao.”

Tan Zhi Hao declared his name and his family’s surname.

“What?!”

When those words were spelled out from his mouth, it sparked a wave of conversation amongst the people watching. All the bystanders’ eyes returned to Li Tian Yang, feeling pitiful for him. He held a genius from the Tan family captive and imprisoned him in the Freezing Hell Jail. Was there anyone that could do something more foolish than this?

“No wonder! He is from the Tan family. He reached such great heights at his young age. Although Tan family is just a family, they are still comparable to the other four great powers, forming the five major powers. Li Tian Yang foolishly send him to prison. He is going down this time.”

“Aww, this is sad. But, it is also a miracle to be able to survive after offending the Tan Family.”

“The tension is getting more intense. Tan Zhi Hao said that he had escaped from the Freezing Hell Jail freely because of Jiang Chen’s help. He is certainly here to help Jiang Chen and avenge Asura Palace’s foolish decision on imprisoning him.”

“Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction are not in the favorable side either, unless they choose to give up and retreat.”

.....

Astonishment flooded everyone's eyes. The situation was changing unexpectedly from time to time. From Dark Devil Religion to Freedom Palace, and now it was the genius from Tan family. Three major powers were involved in this fight. In the current situation, eliminating Jiang Chen had become harder than ever.

“Uhh, Li Tian Yang dares to offend the Tan family, he is getting himself into trouble. Our plan isn't going to work anymore.”

Invincible Nie whispered to Shadowless Taoist.

“Jiang Chen has saved the genius of Tan family. Tan Zhi Hao won't stand idle. He is the young genius of Tan family, I am afraid that we aren't enough to defeat them. Freedom Palace will keep an eye on Dark Devil Religion's movement but not on Tan family, so what are we going to do now?”

Shadowless Taoist frowned.

“We will retreat and leave this place immediately. There will still be chances. If we are willing to talk with Jiang Chen to terms, I believe all the conflicts will be resolved. It is still better than dying here.”

Invincible Nie said. His desire to kill Jiang Chen was stronger than anyone because his Ferghana Stallion was killed by him. But he was well aware of the current situation. When Tan family was involved in the fight, it would make matters worse. There was no way for them to win to Tan Zhi Hao even if they were of the same level, First Grade Combat Emperor, the true strength varied greatly when it was compared to a genius. They weren't going to defeat him.

“Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction, if you want to fight Jiang Chen, it means you are turning me into your enemy.”

Tan Zhi Hao looked at Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist.

Shadowless Taoist held his fists while facing Jiang Chen without hesitation, “Jiang Chen, you and Peerless Sword Faction's conflicts are written off today. I swear to God that I will not put you into such predicament again. What do you say?”

Peerless Sword Faction was opting to compromise, but there wasn't anyone to make fun of his action. From many people's point of view, this was the most sensible decision given the situation they were in.

Shadowless Taoist chose to fall back. Invincible Nie wasn't happy with the decision that Shadowless Taoist made at all but he knew there wasn't any other options. He bit his tongue, then said loudly to Jiang Chen with an unsatisfied tone, “Jiang Chen, you have killed my Ferghana Stallion, my genius. These vengeful conflicts

ends today. From today onwards, we won't be crossing each other's lines again. Deal?"

"Brother Nie, brother Shadowless, you all..."

Li Tian Yang's nervousness skyrocketed all of a sudden. He didn't expect this situation to happen during the battle. The agreed alliance had now separated into fragments of its own. The shattered alliance would be a disadvantage to him and the repercussion that awaited him was disastrous.

"Humph, Li Tian Yang, you should blame yourself for that, putting the Tan family's genius into your prison, you are getting yourself into trouble."

Invincible Nie humphed with an unfriendly tone. He hated Li Tian Yang a lot now. If it wasn't for his foolish act in putting a genius into the cell, today's situation wouldn't happen. Their combined strength earlier was enough to send Jiang Chen to hell. He had thrown away the only chance presented in front of them.

"Brother Jiang, what do you think?"

Tan Zhi Hao faced Jiang Chen. His purpose today was to find Asura Palace, not the other two major powers.

"Resolution of conflicts is not impossible. Since you all have initiated that idea, why not do it with greater sincerity? Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist, each of you will give me ten million

Heaven Rank Restoration pills and we have a deal.”

Jiang Chen squinted both eyes and said calmly. How could he let this opportunity to blackmail them go away like that?

Chapter 589 - The End For Li Tian Yang

“What?!”

Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist exclaimed at the same time. They were now looking at Jiang Chen as though they had just seen a ghost. Their fury and animosity gave them the urge to lunge forward and bite him to death.

.....

“Ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills?! It is an absurd demand. This is like looting during a war, truly an act of robbers.”

“Damn! What do you mean by looting during a war? Today he just revealed his true nature to us. He is too cruel, demanding ten million pills from them is like wanting their lives.”

“The two major powers definitely have this much, but it will be a great loss to them if they gave ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills to him instantly. This is cruel. He is really a heartless person. But refusing this demand will be unfavourable to them and it will cost them their lives today.”

“That is nothing to me. I will do the same if I were Jiang Chen, since he can demand anything from all of them now, why not do it?. If their position were reversed, he knew that they won’t show him any mercy, killing him for good as soon as possible. Now that he has the advantage, why not make harsh demands on them in return for what they did to him?”

.....

Jiang Chen's demand on them was totally barbaric. Many people turned their attention to Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist with empathy. It was pity for the two important figures in Liang Province. They had to bite their tongues, watching Jiang Chen rob their properties away in front of them. It was the first time in the entire Liang Province for this incident to happen. It was only Jiang Chen who could make it happen.

However, a pathetic man had its own mistakes. Just like Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist, they were the most pitiful individuals in the scene. They could only blame themselves for their evil motive to kill Jiang Chen at the beginning. They should just feel lucky that Jiang Chen didn't want them dead. All the bystanders that played by the rules could see through this very clearly.

“How? Ten million is a very reasonable amount. Do the two masters have any disagreement?”

Jiang Chen gazed at the two, whose facial colour turned reddish like the colour of a pork liver, and felt an unexplained excitement. Darn it! At that time the two of them were going to kill him and now it was his turn to return the favour. Of course, demanding harshly from them would be the favour in exchange for the resolution of all their conflicts. He didn't have any opinion for it as killing them wasn't important. Also, after today, they wouldn't dare to find him anymore. So, getting whatever possible from them was his intention.

Ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills wasn't a small amount for the two major powers. They weren't as influential as Tian Yi Sect in the Western Continent, but they were still part of the four major powers in Liang Province. Each of them should still be able to give out ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills. What would happen to them or what repercussions would it brought to them was not Jiang Chen's concern anymore.

“Jiang Chen, are you robbing my pills away? Don't try to demand beyond the limits!”

Invincible Nie said while gritting his teeth.

“Jiang Chen, you have killed two of our geniuses and Invincible Nie's Ferghana Stallion. We have cleared those debts away, even this is not enough for you?”

Shadowless Taoist said, implying that ten million of Heaven Rank Restoration pills were too much.

“You're right. We won't be satisfied until we get ten million of it from each of you or we'll want you dead.”

Big Yellow stood beside Jiang Chen, crying out his bold statements.

“Please stop all the nonsense. I will count until three, bring out ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills or we are going into a

life and death battle.”

Jiang Chen face was stern. His intonation wasn't paying any respect to them. If he couldn't get those pills during a time like this, when a genius of the Tan family was with him, he would definitely feel sorry for himself. He would consume a considerable amount of those pills, especially when he reaches the peak of the Combat King Grade. He had to get as much pills as possible when the time comes for his future advancement.

“You...”

Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist were frustrated, gritting their teeth desperately. What was going on? They were supposed to come here today and kill someone, now it all switched. Not only their target wasn't eliminated, they had to lose ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills. Most importantly, their reputation would be seriously damaged, robbing all of their pride away in Liang Province.

“You two better follow brother Jiang's order. I, Tan Zhi Hao, am indebted to Jiang Chen and is here to repay the debt. Whatever he chooses to do is also my will. You should know better than anyone the consequences of going against me.”

Tan Zhi Hao said while staring at them.

Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist gritted their teeth, afterwards, they opened their mouth, this movement happened automatically. There wasn't a way out for a compromise. They had

to. They couldn't afford to offend the Tan family, and especially, this young man named Tan Zhi Hao. Losing ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills was an awful experience, but it was still better than losing their lives.

“Alright, I'll give it. But, I am not carrying this much pills right now.”

Shadowless Taoist replied.

“It's okay. I will give you ten minutes to get back and collect those pills for me. The two elders will stay. Remember, there are only ten minutes time. With your level, it is enough for you to go back and forth from your sects. If I don't see you two in ten minutes, these two elders will become dead bodies plus I will destroy your sect one by one. I am sure you know what I am capable of.”

Jiang Chen said. He would only give them ten minutes to collect the pills from their sects. As they were both First Grade Combat Emperor, they were able to travel incredibly fast. It would only cost them the effort like blinking their eyes, ten minutes time was more than enough to do that.

“Okay.”

Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist twisted their bodies, and vanished. They showed an unfriendly facial expression the moment they left, it was the depressing feeling that they had to deliberately suppress. It deepened their resentment towards Jiang

Chen. They had no other options. Today they had to give away ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills for no particular purpose. From this day onwards, they wouldn't ever put Jiang Chen in any predicament again unless they wanted to dig their own graves.

For Jiang Chen, he wasn't concerned if the two would create troubles for him. Given his current power, fighting one First Grade Combat Emperor wasn't hard anymore.

Both the Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction's Great Elders stayed at the scene. Their facial expressions were worse than the other two. Although they possessed the power of a First Grade Combat Emperor, they didn't dare do anything. Their opponents could easily overpower them. There were two Combat Emperors from Heavenly Devil Palace, most importantly, the sudden emergence of Tan Zhi Hao who wasn't just an ordinary cultivator from the Tan family. This gave them a headache.

Since their departure, the one that felt frightened the most was Li Tian Yang. He had lost all of his allies and became a single soldier. Even with the help of the two Great elders, it was still impossible to fight Dark Min Zi and Tan Zhi Hao.

Swoosh

Fear wouldn't help in this situation, making a direct confrontation was the only way out. Tan Zhi Hao shifted his fiery glare to Li Tian Yang. A rush of murderous aura erupted from his body, rushing towards Li Tian Yang's direction and wrapping over his entire body. Tan Zhi hao was the young genius of the Tan family. Even though he possessed the same level of grade as Li Tian

Yang, his power was matchless compared to his opponent.

“Li Tian Yang, welcome your death!”

Tan Zhi Hao moved his arm and created a spectrum of rainbow light, racing towards Li Tian Yang.

Li Tian Yang's face paled, he knew that he had to defend the attack. As the master of a sect and with his grade of Combat Emperor approaching the Second Grade, his attack wasn't a joke. With his palms he created a shapeless huge aura to defend himself against Tan Zhi Hao's attack. In just a moment, he used his bare hands to tear open the spatial area, moving into it and escaped.

“Li Tian Yang. Your death is certain today. Don't try to run!”

Tan Zhi Hao's voice was so deafening that it shook the sky. It seemed Li Tian Yang was going to die under his hands.

Jiang Chen was frowning at the side. It was because Big Yellow's broken sword was in the custody of Li Tian Yang. If he was killed by Tan Zhi Hao, he was afraid that it would also be destroyed along with Li Tian Yang. He wouldn't want to lose a very valuable item.

“Don't worry. Even if Li Tian Yang is killed, the sword will still be safe.”

Big Yellow said confidently.

Jiang Chen felt relieved after hearing his words. The broken sword was a mystical treasure. Since Big Yellow was confident about the broken sword, it shouldn't have any problems.

Bang

The fierce battle between Tan Zhi Hao and Li Tian Yang continued. Li Tian Yang seemed to be losing. He wasn't the opponent of Tan Zhi Hao at all. It seemed that he would be killed by him very soon.

When the Great Elder of Asura Palace saw what was happening, his eyes glowed with flickering light. He calculated his next decision. If he joined the attack, it wouldn't help as Dark Min Zi was watching them. If that was the case, his only choice was to try escaping this predicament.

Swoosh

The moment this idea surfaced in the Great Elder's mind, a silhouette appeared in front of him. It wasn't anyone but Jiang Chen.

"Great Elder, looking to escape? Do you think I will let you go?"

Jiang Chen had a cold and sarcastic expression on his face. He didn't forget how this old man joined the hunt, together with Li Tian Yang and Xiao Nan Feng to kill him. If it wasn't for Big

Yellow, who saved him using his broken sword in the last minute, he would be long dead. He must clear off this debt himself.

“Jiang Chen. You dare stop me, you are seeking death.”

Great Elder sent an aggressive palm strike to Jiang Chen before his voice disappeared. He felt lucky in his heart now that Jiang Chen himself initiated to approach him. This was too good to be true. After capturing him, he could hold him captive and use him to exchange for Li Tian Yang's life. That would save both of their lives.

From the Great Elder's point of view, Jiang Chen was too arrogant, thinking that he really was a genius. A genius who was only a Seventh Grade Combat King was stupid enough to fight a Combat Emperor. It was suicide.

Chapter 590 - Profound Nine Solar Finger's Power

The Great Elder's thoughts made sense. A while ago, he wanted to flee from the battle, during the time Tan Zhi Hao was battling with Li Tian Yang, to save his own life. He didn't expect Jiang Chen to come and stop him from fleeing. That was a blessing in disguise. By capturing Jiang Chen and threatening his opponent, he didn't need to run away and Li Tian Yang could escape his death as well.

Bang

The vacuum trembled. He sent out an attack big enough to wrap Jiang Chen's body. A scary slaughtering aura was fully unleashed by a First Grade Combat Emperor. His power was comparable to any ordinary cultivator of his level.

“Brother Jiang, be careful!”

Dark Min Zi was shocked. He didn't imagine that Jiang Chen himself would hold the First Grade Combat Emperor Great Elder off from fleeing. He saw the Great Elder's attack rushing towards Jiang Chen. From his perspective, Jiang Chen wasn't as powerful. Even though he was able to take down three Ninth Grade Combat King geniuses, he wouldn't be able to achieve the same result when he was dealing with a Combat Emperor. Dark Min Zi was well aware that the power varied too much, even if it was just one grade away from the Combat Emperor.

“Don’t waste your effort! I can handle him myself.”

Jiang Chen shouted hastily. This was the moment where he could finally examine his own combat power. If he picked Li Tian Yang, who was at the peak of First Grade Combat Emperor as his opponent, he might not be able to win. But, this Great Elder wasn’t as powerful as Li Tian Yang, so he just fitted to be his opponent nicely.

Hu... *Hu...*

A strong breeze whistled, fiery light blasted and rose rapidly up to the sky. Jiang Chen struck with his Fire Dragon Seal. He didn’t want to underestimate a First Grade Combat Emperor, casting his most powerful spell. The power of the Fire Dragon Seal was overwhelming. It was created by the condensation of True Dragon Fire and True Lightning Fire that consisted the terrifying Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal.

Roar...

The dragon’s roar shook the sky. Its emergence caused the temperature of the battle scene to rise. The whole place was being heated up by the bursting flames. The Fire Dragon met the Great Elder’s attack and crashed, an intense explosion was produced causing the vacuum to tremble.

*Deng**Deng**Deng*

In such an enormous impact, Jiang Chen and the Great Elder stepped three steps back to find their balance. It was a draw in terms of their power. This scene paralyzed all the surrounding people. Dark Min Zi and the Heavenly Devil Palace's Great Elder opened their mouth wide, they were greatly surprised. They did not believe what they had just seen.

“My goodness! His power can match with the First Grade Combat Emperor? How can he be this powerful?”

“Very frightening, he is only a Seventh Grade Combat King. This is a God defying power. A Seventh Grade Combat King's power is on par with a First Grade Combat Emperor. Now the three geniuses' death aren't unreasonable anymore. Anyone can see through that by looking at the distinction between Jiang Chen and the Great Elder.”

“It should be the Great Elder who will win since he is a First Grade Combat Emperor. It was just one of his basic attacks, but Jiang Chen, on the other hand, had casted his ultimate spell. If the Great Elder strikes with his ultimate skill, Jiang Chen will be defeated.”

.....

No one relaxed. A Seventh Grade Combat King could defend against a First Grade Combat Emperor's attack. It had to be a joke. No one dared to believe what they had just seen. It was something that only happened in dreams. They knew very well the gap from Seventh Grade Combat King to First Grade Combat Emperor was too wide. Jiang Chen had gotten rid of all these 'gap belief' in their

minds which made it difficult for them to understand.

“Great Elder, do it quickly. Take Jiang Chen down!”

Li Tian Yang roared. He was in a helpless condition now. His mouth was spurting blood, his King Weapon was the only thing that kept him alive, the only thing that kept Tan Zhi Hao busy. Tan Zhi Hao's Qi was at the maximum, his body was bursting with Combat Power. Everyone could see it through his gestures. He would be able to quench his desire of killing Li Tian Yang today.

“Okay.”

The Great Elder was terrified. He changed his impression on Jiang Chen, looking at him in awe, washing away all his thoughts of going easy with him. A jingling of metals could be heard when he moved his arm. A long sword that was charmed appeared in his hand, letting out a brilliant golden light. His King Weapon wasn't ordinary, it was at the peak level. The higher the level of King Weapon, the harder it is to obtain it. For any ordinary First Grade Combat Emperor, it was considered good enough to possess one Kings' Weapon with a peak level.

The scarier weapons were the Minor Saint's Weapons and the Great Saint's Weapons. They were rarer, especially the Great Saint's Weapon. The Great Saints in the Saint's State were easier to find compared to getting a Great Saint's Weapon. It could only be created by careful cultivation of a Great Saint.

“Jiang Chen, you are a peerless genius that only appears every

ten thousand years. But, my attack just now is a basic one. Now, I will activate my King Weapon to kill you with all my might. You are not my opponent, now, welcome your death!”

Great Elder’s Qi was formidable. The long metal in his hand swooshed. At the same time, the brightness from the sword shined through the vacuum, forming a large sword of light that raced in the direction of Jiang Chen. The light of the sword shook everything, including the vacuum, as it moved to its target. Many spatial shift passageways were also destroyed.

Many people started talking mainly because of their unexpressed emotions. A Combat Emperor was too powerful. Just one attack could break the spatial shift tunnels. Its strength varied greatly from the previous attack. Everyone wanted to see whether Jiang Chen could survive this attack.

This attack was in fact extravagant. With Jiang Chen’s current Combat King’s power, he could cast the Fire Dragon Seal and Azure Dragon’s Five Steps Technique. They were afraid that it wasn’t sufficient to stop the attack. However, Jiang Chen didn’t feel intimidated. Both of his eyes shot out two brightening rays of light when he ignited the energy from the Saint Bone in his left forefinger, causing it to vibrate actively.

Big Yellow, who was watching the battle from afar, had been expecting this to happen. “This is intoxicating. No one can tell whether the power of Saint Bone can kill a First Grade Combat Emperor.”

Big Yellow thought that Jiang Chen couldn’t fully unleash the

power of the Saint Bone due to the grade of his Combat King. But, a slight release of the power could be gigantic.

A finger wasn't enough to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor. But, it would be a different scenario if the Profound Nine Solar spell was used on the finger.

Jiang Chen's confidence was firm. This was his trump card.

“Profound Nine Solar Finger!”

Jiang Chen declared. His finger was sharp as a sword. His forefinger was illuminating bright golden light. Waves of pressure that escaped from the trails of light strained everyone around, some of them even felt their souls shiver.

Bang...

Nine gigantic golden fingers were formed. The power of Profound Nine Solar Finger went beyond anyone's imagination because it was merged with the strength of the Saint Bone, strengthening its power manifold. Each of the gigantic fingers was like a Heavenly pillar. There were Nine Solar Talisman marks on each of the gigantic fingers' surfaces, dazzling everyone's eyes.

Whizz *Whizz* *Whizz*

The nine gigantic fingers that Jiang Chen controlled didn't undergo fusion and rushed ahead instantly, as though nine similar

golden dragons were moving with their long tails followed behind.

Keng *Keng* *Keng*

Profound Nine Solar Finger clashed with Great Elder's gigantic sword of light. The conquering light illuminated by the sword of light broke and crumbled into pieces all of a sudden.

“What?!”

Great Elder exclaimed. He was absolutely horrified. He felt that these nine gigantic fingers were like wild and ancient beasts, unstoppable. The critical element was that there was an unusual pressure contained in these golden fingers, which made him feel very uneasy.

The speed of the Profound Nine Solar Fingers was very fast. All fingers fused to become a larger golden finger after smashing and eliminating the sword of light and charged forward to its target.

The Great Elder was petrified. He raised his long sword swiftly without hesitation, slashing the gigantic finger in front of him.

Bang

Aah!

The long sword slipped from his hand while he shrieked of pain.

Blood was forced out of his mouth like a one-time-spurt of a fountain. His face turned very pale before he was pushed away, as if a meteor was falling from the sky.

At this point, fear had almost eaten up all the bystanders. The feeling was so irresistible because it came deep down from their very souls. They all thought that the one who would be defeated was Jiang Chen. Who would have thought that Jiang Chen hadn't executed his trump card in his first attack? He had turned the defeat into victory, injuring the Great Elder badly.

“Great Elder, your end has arrived.”

Jiang Chen held the Great Elder's long sword in his hand and twisted his body. He moved in an incredible speed using the Spatial Shift below his feet and appeared before the Great Elder. The Great Elder had enough time to stabilize his body but not enough to recover his Qi fully. Jiang Chen slashed with the long sword violently before he could react.

“No!”

Great Elder could feel the threatening feeling of death. He groaned in pain with all his might, but it was pointless. Jiang Chen's sword was cold-blooded. The long sword in his hand slashed through the Great Elder's throat, ripping his head off, it flew high up to the sky. Below his head, the blood spurted continuously like a blood fountain, creating a bloody scene.

The Great Elder was dead, he was killed by the cold-blooded

Jiang Chen. He would become a great subject of sarcasm for dying under his own sword in the days to come.

Everyone was petrified and stood rooted at their positions. They felt that this world consisted of too much insanity. That was a Combat Emperor, an individual who people admired and thought highly of, as though it was the summit of the highest mountain, impossible to climb. But, this summit was destroyed just like that by just a Seventh Grade Combat King.

“Tan Lang, I will give this sword to you as a present.”

Jiang Chen didn't look at Tan Lang while tossing the long sword to him. Tan Lang eyes' sparkled, his face was filled with joy. He caught the long sword instantly. It was the King Weapon of the Great Elder, a weapon that was far greater than his. He was absolutely thrilled.

Dark Min Zi and the Heavenly Devil Palace's Great Elder stared at each other, they found fear in each other's eyes and at the same time, they felt fortunate. They felt fortunate for making the right decision. The decision of not fighting against Jiang Chen as enemy but fight together with him as an ally. This young man was too scary. His speed of growth was beyond anyone's imagination. In just ten days, he had become a very strong individual.

“Ultra devil.”

This was what they thought in their hearts. Jiang Chen's future wasn't something they could predict anymore, it was

unimaginable.

Chapter 591 - A Big Event In Liang Province

Li Tian Yang's body was shaking. It was obvious that his body was exhausted. When he saw the Great Elder was killed, his was disheartened. The last hope he had was destroyed, the hope that he would survive today.

Tan Zhi Hao showed a certain fear for Jiang Chen in his eyes. At first, he ought to help Jiang Chen to counter the Great Elder's attack, but he never thought that Jiang Chen could be so intense. He killed the Great Elder straight away. At the same time, shame overrode his consciousness for the fact that his opponent was still alive while Jiang Chen, who was only a Seventh Grade Combat King, had already killed his opponent.

“Li Tian Yang, your time to die has arrived!”

Tan Zhi Chen raised his murderous aura to another level. A golden spear appeared in both of his hands. The mark of the talisman on the surface of the golden spear seemed to be agitated, emitting a strong Emperor's aura. Anyone knew that this was a formidable Emperor's Weapon by just looking at it, and it was more powerful than Li Tian Yang's.

Weng *Weng*

The vibration in the air that was caused by the movement of the long spear could be heard. It appeared in front of Li Tian Yang in an instant. Fear was the only emotion in Li Tian Yang's eyes. He knew very well that this was Tan Zhi Hao's ultimate attack. He

was sure that he couldn't survive this attack even if he's not injured.

He tried to flee anyway as that was human instinct. But, he realised that he couldn't. He could sense the shadow of the grim reaper coming in his location to claim his life. So, he attempted nothing given that fact and waited for his death.

Fu

The long spear pierced through Li Tian Yang's head. The master of Asura Palace had fallen. His body fell from the sky after Tan Zhi Hao pulled his spear from his head. Big Yellow had been waiting for this moment. He turned into a golden light, moving in a rapid speed to Li Tian Yang's body. Big Yellow broke his abdomen using his sharp claws to retrieve his broken sword. He immediately slip the broken sword into his Dantian without anyone noticing it. They just saw Big Yellow made a dash to the dead body, clawing open the stomach, which everyone thought that this dog was very brutal and merciless even to a dead man.

Of course, Big Yellow didn't care about how the others would think of him. His main concern was his treasure. The broken sword would somehow gain extra attention, so he kept it secretly. But, even if the broken sword was revealed, it wouldn't attract too much attention as it was no different than scrap metal. When a person died, his Dantian would be destroyed as well and whatever things that were hidden or kept in it would be damaged badly. Fortunately, Big Yellow's quick reaction had saved his sword, it was as good as last time. Big Yellow might be as foolish as he looked, but he was intelligent enough to not get himself into

trouble. He knew clearly the special abilities of the broken sword.

The site of battle was messy. All the mountains below were cracked and fractured, the broken pieces of the summit toppled down one by one. This was the destructive power of a Combat Emperor. The battle was over, followed by silence. Everyone found themselves gasping for air. Asura Palace which was one of the four major powers had fallen just like that. It's master, Great Elder and First Tycoon were all dead. This large sect would find it very difficult to continue existing in Liang Province.

The Great Elders of Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction witnessed what had just happened. Their faces turned very pale. They were horrified when they saw Tan Zhi Hao and Jiang Chen, as though they had seen two ghosts. Now they could comprehend deeply the decision made by Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist. If they made the wrong decision, which was going against Jiang Chen, they would face the same conclusion as the master of Asura Palace. Although Heaven Rank Restoration pills were precious, these pills wouldn't be useful anymore when one had lost his life.

Two powerful Qi approached the battle site, they were the two masters who had returned. They looked very miserable, feeling a sense of endless oppression crawling within their hearts. However, all of these feelings disappeared once they arrived at the battle site.

The moment these two people arrived, they were informed instantly about what had just happened by their Great Elders using True Qi transmission. Then they turned their gazes to the two killers, their feeling wasn't something that could be described by words. They anticipated Li Tian Yang would die under Tan Zhi

Hao's hands since the Tan family wasn't a power that could be offended. Jiang Chen's actions, on the other hand was totally out of their expectation, being able to eliminate a First Grade Combat Emperor.

They could have killed Jiang Chen, eliminating the chances for him to grow further. As the saying went 'get rid of the roots if you want to stop the plant from ever growing.' However, looking at the current situation it wouldn't be possible even without the interruption of Tan Zhi Hao or even if they had jointly fought Jiang Chen. In other words, it meant Jiang Chen could easily escape from the battle when he didn't felt like gaining the upper hand, which would bring the end to their lives when he reappeared.

"The two of you are punctual. So, are the ten million Heaven Rank Restoration pills ready?"

Jiang Chen stared at Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist.

The two took a deep breath when they removed the Heavenly Earth Ring from their fingers and threw it to Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen caught the rings and chanted towards it, and nodded in delight when he saw the mountains of pills in it, pills that were pure and refined.

"Very well, from now on, my conflicts and resentments with Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction are settled. But, I warn you all to never attempt to provoke me, if not, humph..."

Jiang Chen humphed. His tone was clear. Many had seen his means of killing, a cold-blooded killer who killed without hesitation. It seemed that it was worth for Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist to exchange their lives with ten million pills each. They wouldn't dare to offend Jiang Chen anymore unless their brains had gone stupid.

Most of them thought that Jiang Chen wouldn't stay in Liang Province after the battle. Why would a genius stay in a small state like Liang Province? He should be venturing into the Mysterious Domain.

“Goodbye.”

Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist turned and left after showing their fists in front of their chests. The two Great Elder didn't dare to stay any longer and followed the two masters quickly. Everyone was speechless about how much damage Jiang Chen had brought to the two sects. There wasn't a chance to avenge themselves given his current strength and ability.

Tan Zhi Hao kept his long sword and came to Jiang Chen's side, “Brother Jiang, if it wasn't of your kind rescue that time, I'm afraid that Tan Zhi Hao would have ceased to exist long ago.”

“I also have to thank you for today's help.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He wasn't patronizing. If Tan Zhi Hao didn't appear today, which had scared Invincible Nie and the rest, the situation would be totally different and uncontrollable even with

the help of Heavenly Devil Palace. He wasn't an opponent at all for the six Combat Emperors. His Profound Nine Solar Dragon might be powerful, but it hadn't reached its maximum potential power and the activation of the skill drained most of his energy. The consumption of Yuan Force in his body was already significant just after he killed the Great Elder. This was deemed uncommon when he was in the stages of cultivating the Dragon Transformation Art.

So, unleashing the power of Saint Bone was his trump card that couldn't be simply used.

If it wasn't for Tan Zhi Hao who came before the battle had begun, Jiang Chen could only sustain at most a few rounds before he fled. He would then return to fight them after becoming an Eighth Grade Combat King. So, Tan Zhi Hao's appearance had helped him solve all his problems and conflicts.

"I am bound to kill him. I am a person who likes to do things myself, quenching my desire for vengeance, only then I could feel the sense of pleasure after that."

Tan Zhi Hao said.

His words were outrageous to a lot of people. With his ability and identity of Tan family, his will to kill Asura Palace could just be fulfilled by his orders. If he gave the order to take down Asura Palace, they could be easily wiped out by a few times even if they could revive from the dead. So no one dared to comment on his arrogant words.

At this time, Dark Min Zi moved toward them then held his fists and addressed himself, “It’s my pleasure, Heavenly Devil Palace Dark Min Zi, to meet you, young master Tan.”

Tan Zhi Hao simply nodded his head. He didn’t attempt to speak to him. As a genius of Tan family, he considered himself the righteous one that wouldn’t come in contact with any Devil Religion. If Dark Min Zi wasn’t a friend of Jiang Chen, he wouldn’t even try to respond.

Dark Min Zi just smiled plainly at his arrogance, thinking that he had the right to do so because he was a genius of Tan family. He buried his emotions and put it aside, and turned to Jiang Chen, “Brother Jiang is truly a good friend of young master who is a superb genius that I have never met before in my life, are you free to pay a visit to my Heavenly Devil Palace, young master Tan?”

“I am very grateful to you for your help today. I have some matters to attend to, I promise I will pay you a visit after the matter is resolved.”

Jiang Chen answered in place of Tan Zhi Hao with a smile. He knew in his heart that Dark Min Zi’s main intention was to establish a relationship with Han Yan. Anyway, he certainly had helped Jiang Chen a lot, he should go to his palace.

“Alright, I will be waiting for you in Heavenly Devil Palace.”

Dark Min Zi was delighted and left the site along with the Great Elder.

“Any future plans brother Jiang? You possessed great talent inside of you. I believe Liang Province isn’t a place you should stay in, why not follow me back to Tan family?”

Tan Zhi Hao invited Jiang Chen to his sect. A genius like Jiang Chen would be of great help in the Tan family in the future.

“I understand your intention brother Tan, but I have been accustomed to my unrestrained life, living alone. I am afraid that I would find it difficult to adjust in your Tan family.”

Jiang Chen declined his offer politely. He was sure that he didn’t like to join any sect. Although the matter in Liang Province was settled, he hadn’t obtained any information about the things he was seeking for after he arrived to the Divine Continent a few months ago.

There were other four parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword that were not found. This was his goal. He had to find all parts of the Heavenly Saint Sword to restore its true power. It was a peerless Saint Weapon and the whereabouts of its parts were still unknown. Jiang Chen was determined in his search. His blood was connected to the Heavenly Saint Sword, every part of the sword that he found would increase his combat grade by a notch.

Of course, the biggest reward for the time he spent in Divine Continent was the left hand forefinger Saint Bone.

The next important thing for him to do would be to proceed to

the Freezing Hell Jail of Asura Palace, to find the hidden treasure of Li Tian Yang, a treasure that Big Yellow sensed. That was a chance that couldn't be missed.

Chapter 592 - The Heavenly Earth Pure Water

“Very well, if brother Jiang needs help next time, don’t forget to go to Tan family. I promise, your request won’t be rejected.”

Tan ZhiHao patted his chest to prove his promise. He would never forget that Jiang Chen had saved his life before. This kindness was meant to last for a lifetime, there wasn’t a way to clear off his debt as a person’s life was priceless. Jiang Chen had become his benefactor the moment he saved him from the Freezing Hell Jail.

“Hey brother Tan, can I recommend a friend to train in your family?”

Jiang Chen asked when the thought crossed his mind.

“Of course you can. Tan family looks like a clan, but it is actually a sect. We have accepted many outside cultivators. They have all become the main pillars of Tan family. Your friend is my friend. When he arrives to Tan family, I assure you that he will get the best cultivating resources.”

Tan Zhi Hao said.

Jiang Chen nodded. If a comparison was made between the Tan family and those inherited ancient families in the Pure Land of the Divine Continent, Tan family was way better. Those ancient

families wouldn't accept any potential disciples that didn't have their surname. Tan family, on the other hand, did the exact opposite. They were like a large sect which had a very influential power that made many people desire to go there to obtain certain achievements.

Jiang Chen turned his head to Tan Lang and said, "Tan Lang, come over here."

Tan Lang walked over, he heard clearly the conversation just now. He had already guessed what was going to happen.

"Tan Lang, the chaos in Liang Province has ended. Asura Palace only exists in name now, there isn't any reason for you to stay here any longer. You should go to Tan family, it is located at the centre of the Mysterious Domain, do not miss this unique opportunity. We are going to meet soon."

Jiang Chen said. He still had many stuff that has yet to be done. In the process of completing those tasks, he knew that he might face countless challenges in the future. Tan Lang was only a Fourth Grade Combat King, he would only be a hindrance if he followed Jiang Chen.

It wasn't Jiang Chen's intention to abandon him, it was just that he felt that Tan Lang had a brighter future in training under the Tan family than following him. He would have a peaceful training ground compared to travelling around the state. Moreover, Tan family was one of the five major powers in Divine Continent, which many people had tried to join.

“Okay, it is my honor to be able to train in Tan family.”

Tan Lang accepted the offer. He didn't have a good reason to decline such a great offer. If he stayed in Asura Palace, he was afraid that he wouldn't have the chance to go to the center of Mysterious Domain. Also, he might not have the chance to establish connections with Tan family which could help him in his advancement. Although he preferred to follow Jiang Chen's exciting journey, Jiang Chen's level was getting further away from his. There's no way that he could catch up with Jiang Chen which made him a real burden if he followed him. He didn't want to be an extra burden to Jiang Chen, so he had decided to train hard in Tan family, and try his best to shorten the gap of power between them.

Tan Lang also realized that Jiang Chen's decision was made on his behalf. He knew that he wouldn't have the chance to join Tan family if it wasn't for Jiang Chen's relationship with Tan Zhi Hao. This was a golden opportunity.

“Brother Tan, I will pass Tan Lang to you now, treat him with care.”

Jiang Chen said.

“No worries brother Jiang. Tan Lang is my friend from now on.”

Tan Zhi Hao held his fists before Jiang Chen to guarantee, “Since the matter here is over, I shall go now.”

Obviously, Tan Zhi Hao wasn't interested with a lowly state like Liang Province at all. The reason he came was to take his revenge on Li Tian Yang. Nothing was left for him to do here, he shouldn't stay any longer.

Tan Lang left along with Tan Zhi Hao. His eyes showed admiration before he headed to Tan family.

“Tan Lang was blessed because of the incident. When he befriended Jiang Chen, not only did he not in the process, instead he had joined Tan family. He has extraordinary luck!”

“That is making people envious of him. That is Tan family, it will be so much better if I can join the sect.”

“Training in Tan family is a lot better than training in Liang Province. Tan family has the best cultivating resources. It has nurtured many geniuses.”

.....

All of them were envious of what they saw. This was like an opportunity that fell from the sky. It was imaginable how much Tan Lang would grow while training in Tan family compared to training in Asura Palace.

As for Jiang Chen, he was the winner of the battle. He had defeated the three major powers. His fame would leave an eternal

mark in Liang Province and became a historic story to tell.

“Big Yellow, Tyrant, let’s go.”

Jiang Chen ordered and headed to the Asura Palace.

“Little Chen, today is intoxicating! I never thought that you could be this powerful, you have killed a First Grade Combat Emperor! You are way stronger than me now, which have given me a lot of pressure.”

Tyrant said then sighed. The thought that Jiang Chen was more powerful than him gave him an unusual pressure. He had become peerless once he had surpassed his grade.

“You bastards don’t have to worry. Great Master Ran Feng has the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus. Your grade will skyrocket once you obtain it. It is as powerful as the three greatest Dharma Seal of Buddha sect. Your power will become scary when you acquire the three spells. Ancestor Greenlotus also possesses a secret holy book, which is a treasure of Buddha sect.

Jiang Chen’s admiration for Ancestor Greenlotus was high. As a friend of Ancestor Greenlotus, he knew more than anyone about his power. So, there was no need for Tyrant to worry as he was a descendant Greenlotus.

“There is no doubt. That I, Tyrant, will advance rapidly under his nurture, becoming the incarnation of Ancestor.”

Tyrant said in a narcissistic tone.

After hearing what Tyrant had said, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow turned and continued their journey immediately.

“Hey, wait up.”

Tyrant caught up with their speed quickly.

“Little Chen, where are we headed now?”

Tyrant asked curiously.

“The Asura Palace.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Li Tian Yang has died, what is the purpose of going there? For god’s sake, don’t tell me you want to go there to eliminate the entire sect?”

Tyrant widened his eyes. At first, he thought that Jiang Chen wanted to finish Asura Palace. But he knew Jiang Chen wasn’t that kind of person, he wouldn’t do something this lame. However, he still couldn’t figure out why they would go there.

“To search for the treasure.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“What treasure?”

Tyrant’s eyes sparkled after hearing the word ‘treasure’.

“You will know once we arrive.”

Jiang Chen also had no clue about the treasure, but he had already determined its location. It was inside the Freezing Hell Jail.

Asura Palace had descended into chaos when the news of Li Tian Yang and Great Elder’s death reached the sect. To them, the news was a disaster like multiple lightning had struck them, damaging the roof of their sect, destroying the pillars of the building and thus the sect collapsed. From today onwards, Asura Palace’s only existence was the name, its glory had faded away with its masters.

Later, two men and a dog arrived at the Asura Palace. For Asura Palace, they were undoubtedly the destructive meteoroid that had landed. Their arrival caused the disciples ranging from elders to beginner to feel fear. Even the Ninth Grade Combat King elders were shivering when they heard that Jiang Chen had killed Xiao NanFeng and also their First Grade Combat Emperor’s Great Elder.

“This is the end, Jiang Chen has come. He is going to kill us, we

are all going to die.”

“What should we do? What are we gonna do? Are we gonna die? I don’t want to die yet.”

“Will this devil kill us all? He could even kill Combat Emperors. We are unable to stop him.”

.....

The situation in the Asura Palace became worse than ever, all of the disciples were on their feet, not knowing where to run like an army of helpless ants. Jiang Chen’s group’s emergence after the battle here was the proof that they would eliminate them completely.

“Listen up, the people of Asura Palace. I am here for the Freezing Hell Jail, not for you, so there is no need to be afraid.”

Jiang Chen’s deafening voice travelled across the entire Asura Palace. Every one of them sighed with relief after knowing that Jiang Chen wasn’t here for them. Most importantly, they could keep their lives. Even if Asura Palace was gone, they still could begin a new life somewhere else.

Jiang Chen casted his Great Soul Derivation Technique, unleashing his soul power. He was able to feel the location of Freezing Hell Jail, and flew towards it instantly.

Very soon, at the center of the Asura Palace, Jiang Chen was able to connect the node in the passage to Freezing Hell Jail. He waved his hand to create a golden light, breaking the spaces in the node. The three of them jumped into it. The Freezing Hell Jail wasn't fully built in the spatial zone, so it was much convenient to go inside.

After entering the Spatial Zone, they could feel a tingling coldness that pushed on their skin. The surrounding area were incredibly cold and carried the ability to corrode. They could see variegated flashes of light on the outer layer of the spatial zone. The whole place was deemed incomplete as it was only built not long ago.

“It is only a few months ago when I destroyed this spatial zone. Even if Li Tian Yang want to rebuild the spatial zone within a short period of time, it will be impossible without the support of special elements. It had to be it, the coldness here is uncommon that I can't even determine what it is.”

Jiang Chen said while he scanned the surrounding area.

“It had to be the treasure, I have sensed its location nearby.”

Big Yellow said and turned into a flash of light, rushing to the deeper region of the Spatial Zone. Jiang Chen and Tyrant followed closely at his back. A place was hidden from their view before they were near the area. Big Yellow found the prohibition seal and destroyed it instantly. A milky white crystal stone appeared before them, they shifted their gaze at the crystal stone's internal body where they found a sticky drop of liquid, it was the cause of the

coldness in this spatial zone.

Chapter 593 - Water Dragon Seal

The tingling sensation of coldness could still be felt even if the body of the crystal stone was separating the inner part. The coldness could easily penetrate into one's skin and then went deeper into the bone. That reminded Jiang Chen about Yan Chen Yu's Nine Yin Meridians, but this droplet of liquid was colder than that, the coldest thing he had ever felt on earth.

“My god. A drop of liquid is enough to create a frosty atmosphere in the spatial zone? What kind of air is this?”

Tyrant was amazed, the same feeling went to Big Yellow. The three of them were standing in the spatial zone. When they couldn't stand the cold any longer they casted a golden layer of shield to retain their body temperature.

“Little Chen, you are more knowledgeable than I do. Do you know what this treasure is?”

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen. Although he could sense the location of the treasure, he was unable to see through what the treasure was.

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. He focused on the sticky drop of liquid in the crystal stone without blinking. This was a legendary treasure that he, being the Greatest Saint, had never seen before.

“Heavenly Earth Pure Water, this is it!”

Jiang Chen said. These seven words he said exhilarated him. He was well aware than anyone about how precious the treasure is.

“What? Heavenly Earth Pure Water? I have seen the words ‘Pure Water’ in an ancient record left by Ancestor. It is the coldest water in the world. A drop weighs a million pounds, it can crush a big mountain and freeze streams and rivers on it. If a mass of Heavenly Earth Pure Water is spilled, it will bring catastrophe to the world. Of course, such Pure Water is scarce, it only exists as a legend, but I never imagine that it exists here. If it is really the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, one drop of it is invaluable.”

Tyrant was absolutely astonished by the rare treasure. He had read about the Pure Water in ancient books. This treasure originated from the earth, a very rare kind.

“Tyrant was right, the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was the product created during the formation of Sky and Earth, a genuine treasure. I didn’t expect Asura Palace to hide such great treasure in it, this is a good fortune. Haha...”

Jiang Chen laughed.

“But Jiang Chen, this Heavenly Earth Pure Water is unusually potent. It is impossible to cultivate it. It wasn’t the weight that scares people but the heavenly earth cold aura contained in the liquid, the force was unbearable. Therefore, a direct cultivation of Pure Water is not possible, unless it was cultivated with pills or weapons.”

Tyrant said.

Jiang Chen smiled lightly after he heard Tyrant's thought, then he spoke. "Other people may not be able to do it, but I can. I have one combat technique named 'The Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal', in which to cultivate fully it requires the five elements of heaven and earth. The Heavenly Earth Pure Water is something I have been looking for. If I successfully refine it, the Water Dragon Seal will complete its cultivation and reach its maximum state."

This was why Jiang Chen was happy about. From the moment he acquired the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, he knew surely that cultivating this skill would be an extremely hard process. As five elements were required to complete the cultivation, the difficulty level was too high. He originally possessed True Dragon Fire and Lightning True Fire that were used to cultivate Fire Dragon Seal. The other four elements were needed to cultivate four different seals. Now that he had obtained the Pure Water, it was like a present that fell from the sky.

Besides, the Heavenly Earth Pure Water consisted not just the element of water but also the element of coldness, which was Jiang Chen's favorite part. He couldn't wait to begin the cultivation of Water Dragon Seal, its attributes were both the element of water and frost. Once the spell was casted, the power included water elemental and frost elemental attacks, which had a frostbiting effect on the enemy. The double elemental attributes made the enemy vulnerable even in the defense mode.

In addition, the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was too powerful, its

power was aggressive and overwhelming. Thus, Jiang Chen only needed half the drop of the liquid to complete the cultivation of Water Dragon Seal, allowing it to undergo a transformation. He would keep the other half of the liquid for a person, who needed it the most.

Jiang Chen couldn't forget Yan ChenYu, a YiRen who was also the incarnation of Ice God. Yan Chen Yu's Nine Yin Meridians was a body of frost attributes which might exist once every ten thousand years. If he could further cultivate using the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, the benefits were unimaginable.

Tyrant and Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen strangely and said at the same time, "Abnormal being!"

He could undergo a direct cultivation using Heavenly Earth Pure Water and this was very uncommon, totally irregular. These words came directly from Jiang Chen's mouth, if it was somebody else's, they wouldn't believe it. They undoubtedly believed that Jiang Chen could be the only person that could do it, because he had created miracles, too many of them.

"You two will be my custodian for now. I have to cultivate the Pure Water immediately. Once my Water Dragon Seal transformed, I will further advance my grade to Eighth Grade Combat King."

Jiang Chen said.

Tyrant and Big Yellow looked at each other for a while but didn't

talk. It was so easy for Jiang Chen as if drinking a glass of herbal tea. It made them envious of him. He was too strong, he could almost cultivate and refine anything, as though his entire body was the confinement of treasure. It would be hard for him not to advance quickly. If a frost attributed body like the incarnation of the Ice God had cultivated the Heavenly Earth Pure Water and undergo a metamorphosis, the advancement shouldn't be just one grade.

The pool of power inside Jiang Chen was inestimable. Not only his speed of advancement fast, his ability to overcome the challenges faced during the advancement was beyond anyone's imagination.

Tyrant and Big Yellow were standing at the two corners of Freezing Hell Jail, guarding Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen moved two steps forward nearer to the crystal stone. He had the True Dragon Fire and Lightning True Fire plus Dragon Transformation Art that acted as his shield against the frost and coldness emitted by the Pure Water. He exerted the True Dragon Big Palm to get the crystal stone over. He had to be extra careful as the drop of liquid was very heavy.

“I can't break the crystal stone, I have to extract the Pure Water directly to begin my cultivation.”

Jiang Chen sat down with both legs crossed. He gave out a holy light which penetrated into the crystal stone, slowly extracting the essence of the Pure Water. The five elements were connected to each other in the aspect of 'mutual ignition and mutual restraint'.

The Heavenly Earth Pure Water and Lightning True Fire were mutually restraining each other, very hard to integrate. If Jiang Chen hadn't acquired the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, he wouldn't dare make such audacious decision. The skill was a Divine Combat Technique. It was the same as Energy Technique, but able to undergo a complete fusion of the five elements without experiencing any rejections of attributes, this was the scariest part of the Combat Dragon Seal.

Tiny lines of Pure Water turned into gas, entering into Jiang Chen's body.

Ka...Ka...

At this moment, a thick layer of solid ice formed on the surface of Jiang Chen's body, turning him into an ice statue. He breathed cold air. As expected, the Heavenly Earth Pure Water was potent. Its coldness and frost could go beyond a person's ability to withstand the coldness. It could freeze all the internal organs and frostbit them. The frost would lock a person's Yuan Force and eliminate the chances of survival, which would cause a person to die.

Jiang Chen didn't want to make a mistake. He focused on revolving the Water Dragon Seal Art, attempting to cultivate the Heavenly Earth Pure Water step by step.

The process of cultivating the Pure Water was the same as the process of cultivating the Water Dragon Seal. It couldn't be done overnight, a longer time was needed even if Jiang Chen used Dragon Transformation Art, at least two days were needed to

complete the cultivation.

Jiang Chen stopped after he had absorbed half of the Pure Water. The amount was sufficient for him and any amount more than that would be deemed as excess and wasted. His body was injured by the potent effect of Pure Water which wasn't a good news to him.

Ka...Ka...

In these two days, the outer layer of solid ice became thicker, becoming an icy cocoon. Eventually, Jiang Chen was fully wrapped by it, showing the shape of a small hill. His life and breathing couldn't be sensed from the outside.

Tyrant and Big Yellow witnessed the entire process. They shuddered even if they weren't the one who had undergone the cultivation. The aura released by Pure Water was scary. It was not possible for an ordinary man to go through this. This was the reason why Li TianYang dumped the Pure Water here after obtaining it.

They finally understood the purpose of Li TianYang building the Freezing Hell Jail. It was to hide the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, distracting the outsiders about the Pure Water's existence.

“This dude surely is divine. His advancement in the future is unimaginable.”

Tyrant couldn't help but be amazed. When he first met Jiang

Chen at Chaotic Ocean, Jiang Chen was only a First Grade Combat King, a grade which he had just upgraded at the time. In a few months of time, he had reached Seventh Grade Combat King. And now, he was going to enhance his grade to the Eighth Grade. His rapid speed of advancement was frightening.

Two days later.

*Ka...Ka... *

Cracking sounds could be heard. Lines after lines of cracks started to appear on the surface of the solid ice, then more and more cracks formed until a strong Qi escaped from it. The emergence of such power had shaken the entire Freezing Hell Jail.

Bang!

Suddenly, there was a blasting sound. The icy surface crumbled as soon as the sound was heard, fragments of broken ice flew in all directions. Jiang Chen's dark hair danced on itself even if there was no wind. There was an active Water Dragon Seal rotating continuously in front of his palm, emitting the sound of a Water Dragon.

Hah!

Jiang Chen shouted. He activated the Water Dragon Seal. The seal turned into a giant dragon which was a few hundred feet tall, its body shone with blue light, as though water was rippling in the

beach. The Water Dragon's rage caused it to thrust in a direction insanely, smashing the newly-built Freezing Hell Jail's inner and then the outer surface. The spatial zone collapsed in an instant when it lost all its support.

Bang!

Roar!

The thundering roar of the Water Dragon shook the entire mountain of Asura Palace. Many buildings collapsed immediately. It was like the end of the world which made the elders and disciples scared to death. They had no idea of what 'the devil' had done after he entered the Freezing Hell Jail. They had already been nervous for two days, and this the-end-of-world situation didn't give them a chance to relax at all.

Chapter 594 - Eighth Grade Combat King

‘What’s going on? The Freezing Hell Jail is destroyed again? Why is he always related to the Jail?’

“I can sense a very powerful Qi and Combat Power. Could it be that Jiang Chen wants us all dead, ignoring his verbal promise just now?”

“He won’t, I don’t think he's that kind of person.”

.....

They wouldn’t have a chance to live peacefully when Jiang Chen is still in the Asura Palace. There wasn’t anyone who wasn’t scared of this hybrid devil king. Nobody could stop him in Liang Province now.

In the demolished Freezing Hell Jail, Tyrant and Big Yellow’s faces were terrified by the tyrannical power of Water Dragon Seal. Fire Dragon Seal’s power was about the same as Water Dragon Seal’s power. The scary part of Water Dragon Seal was its ability to cause frost to everything, even the spatial zone would be locked and frozen, it was truly frightening.

“A terrifying combat technique! He really has completed the cultivation of Heavenly Earth Pure Water. Judging by his Qi, he will advance to the Eighth Grade in no time, enhancing the Water Dragon Seal further.”

Tyrant shook his head and was speechless to see such an abnormal being.

“Wakaka! Very intoxicating, very intoxicating!”

Big Yellow laughed. He was delighted. The stronger Jiang Chen became, the happier he was. He felt excited when he thought about how he and Jiang Chen would show off and swagger in the battlefield.

“Hahaha...”

Jiang Chen laughed as well. The successful cultivation of Water Dragon Seal enhanced the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal, and also the power of Fire Dragon Seal. The Five Dragon Seals in the Five Elements Combat Dragon Seal were interrelated. If any of the Dragon Seal undergoes a transformation or metamorphosis during cultivation, it would further enhance the other Dragon Seals.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen's Dantian started to vibrate. The impact from the Pure Water, and the transformation of Water Dragon Seal boosted Jiang Chen's pool of energy. Dragon Marks were forming, within a few minutes, two thousand dragon marks were formed out of the condensation. Jiang Chen had entered into the Eighth Grade Combat King, then stopped at the middle of the grade which was not very far away from the Ninth Grade.

Roar!

Lines of reddish dragon marks appeared all over Jiang Chen's body, dragon roars were heard, brightening him up like a divine being. It was as if he was an ancestor of dragons, an incarnation of dragons who had just arrived at his destination.

The Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's body had reached thirty-five thousand after becoming an Eighth Grade Combat King, which increased the space in his Dantian. Shadows of dragons danced in his Dantian, bursting with an unconquerable Qi and aura to its surroundings.

“Finally, I have reached the Eighth Grade. My combat power now allows me to kill a First Grade Combat Emperor with a smack without the help of the Saint Bone. I can also fight with a Second Grade Combat Emperor now.”

Jiang Chen's eyes reflected brilliant light. He was absolutely pleased with his current condition and grade. The potent impact of Pure Water had been very strong, it was able to push Jiang Chen's grade by one, allowing him to reach the Eighth Grade. Only half of it was absorbed, he kept the other half which was in the crystal stone in his Dantian for Yan Chen Yu.

“Waaa, an Eighth Grade Combat King...I don't think Liang Province can fit a god like you anymore.”

Tyrant exclaimed.

“Then I will head to the center of Mysterious Domain. My

footsteps, will never stop.”

Jiang Chen tidied his clothes. There was still a long road ahead of him, it was impossible to stop now. Jiang Chen had to continue his journey in search for the Heavenly Saint Sword. There were also the matters of Ancestor Greenlotus and Wu Ningzhu waiting for him to solve. He had dominated the Liang Province, but in Divine Continent or even in the Mysterious Domain, an Eighth Grade Combat King was just a small fry and very weak in terms of power.

“That’s right, we cannot stop right here. Little Chen, where do we go now?”

Big Yellow said. As long as he was by Jiang Chen’s side, he would get all kinds exciting and stimulating incidents.

“I have no idea for now. Let’s leave Asura Palace first, we will be paying a visit to the Heavenly Devil Palace, that’s the promise to Dark Min Zi.”

Jiang Chen said. He wanted to go there to be his guest as promised, at the same time, he could reward Dark Min Zi with some devil souls. It didn’t matter whether Dark MinZi had helped him fight the battle or not, he firmly stood on Jiang Chen’s side for all this while. He had to accept Dark MinZi as his friend on behalf of Han Yan.

A while later, two men and a dog didn’t attempt to stay any longer, they left the Asura Palace and headed to Heavenly Devil Palace. It would be their final pit stop in Liang Province. The

conflicts were all resolved. He had to begin his journey in search for Nangong Wentian and Wu Ningzhu. Until now, their whereabouts were still unknown, which made him very worried about them.

Seeing the three evil stars departing their territory, tears trickled down everyone's faces in Asura Palace. They had been through a lot of chaotic torture in these two days, they were afraid that those three would begin another massacre and wipe them out when they arrived.

Devil Religion was self-sustaining. In every big city, there would be one sect related to Devil Religion. Heavenly Devil Palace had occupied a portion of the land in Liang Province, this proved its power in the state. Heavenly Devil Palace was the nearest to Chaotic Ocean and the mountain where the palace was erected was named Heavenly Devil Mountain, which helped in inventing the name 'Heavenly Devil Palace'.

Heavenly Devil Mountain had a radius of a few hundred miles. The place wasn't boiling with Devil Qi. It was the opposite, it was like spring, like a wonderland, which didn't vary from Asura Palace and the other righteous sects. The only difference was the shape and type of the buildings. The buildings in the Asura Palace and Invincible Sect were richly decorated by jades. On the other hand, the Heavenly Devil Palace was a black ancient castle that gave a heavy atmosphere.

Although Devil Religion was attached to devils, they weren't demons. They were only cultivating the devil energy, advancing their grades faster. They were all humans who had human

instincts unless they had gone insane and was possessed by demons in the process of training.

This was the reason Devil Religions were allowed to inhabit in large cities and domains. If these religions were led by demons, humans in the region would quickly eliminate them together.

Outside of Heavenly Devil Palace, three silhouettes suddenly appeared, and headed to the main part of Heavenly Devil Palace without slowing down.

“Who had trespassed the Heavenly Devil Palace?”

Someone clamored. A few disciples appeared and blocked Jiang Chen. No one dared to trespass their territory as the punishment for that would be death.

Jiang Chen and the rest stopped. They were silent, then gazed at those few guarding disciples.

The four guarding disciples felt a sense of familiarity from the group of people, their features reminded them of someone, maybe from someone they had heard of before. When a scary name emerged in one of their heads, his face changed dramatically.

“You.... Are you Jiang Chen?”

The leader’s face turned from stern to horror. If it was Jiang Chen alone, they wouldn’t recognize him, but when they saw a

monk and a dog beside him, they had no doubt that it was him.

“That’s right. Inform your master, I came here to pay a visit.”

Jiang Chen nodded and said.

“Forgive me for my ignorance, come, please, this way. Our master has given the special order that if Jiang Chen comes to our palace, we are not allowed to be even slightly neglectful to you.”

The other disciples quickly greeted Jiang Chen respectfully. The incident that happened two days ago had already spread all over Liang Province. No one wasn’t knowledgeable about it. Jiang Chen had killed three geniuses, and the appalling part was when he killed a First Grade Combat Emperor. Although they were almost the same age as him, they looked at him in awe. They had a strong sense of worship for him, treating him like their admired model.

In addition to this, Jiang Chen had an influential friend who was the young master of the Dark Devil Religion, a sect which they must follow. Thus, it would be good if they could establish a relationship with the Dark Devil Religion through Jiang Chen’s help.

“Haha...Look, Brother Jiang has come. Forgive me for almost failing to come out and welcome you.”

A hearty voice rang out. Dark Min Zi flew towards them, along with twenty to thirty people.

“Little Chen, this type of welcoming is the grandest of Heavenly Devil Palace, I suppose.”

Tyrant smiled. Not only did the master come out himself, he had also brought elders and high grades with him. It seemed that Jiang Chen was the only one who could receive this type of welcome ceremony, it also showed how important this was to Dark Min Zi.

Jiang Chen smiled without saying a word. He knew in his heart that Dark MinZi treated him with such respect because he was a friend of the Dark Devil Religion’s young master.

“You are too kind. You have helped me many times, my arrival here is natural.’

Jiang Chen held his fists to greet him.

“Brother Jiang, this way, come inside.”

Dark Min Zi gestured him to the palace. Jiang Chen moved in the direction without feeling any shyness.

The genius in the palace looked at the imposing Jiang Chen, he couldn’t help but heaved a heavy sigh. He was a great genius in Heavenly Devil Palace, and also one of the four geniuses in Liang Province, but he was very impressed by such a person to the point that he was willing to throw himself down at Jiang Chen’s feet in admiration. He wasn’t present at the battle site, but he knew all

about the death of the three geniuses, they all died under his hands. He was now feeling fortunate that Dark Min Zi made a quick shift to stand on Jiang Chen's side or else the consequence would be the same as the three geniuses that ultimately died before him.

In the Big Central Hall of Heavenly Devil Palace, all high grade elders were present to welcome Jiang Chen with their fists.

“Master Dark, I have something to give you as reward for helping me and our friendship.”

Jiang Chen said. He motioned his hand, a sound of *hu la* erupted. There were roughly hundreds of devil souls rushed out, suspending in the air of the Big Central Hall and releasing an intense aura to the atmosphere.

Chapter 595 - Fragments Of Heavenly Saint Sword

At this moment, the atmosphere around the Big Central Hall was filled with a strong devil aura, making the air denser. Hundreds of them were unleashed, each of them were glimmering with terrifying light.

“These are devil souls. The devil souls of demons. My god...How did you get this many of them?”

“This is unbelievable! Even though these devil souls are the lowest of grade in the Devil King realm, these things are still invaluable. Look at that one, an Eighth Grade Devil King? How did Jiang Chen get so many devil souls?”

“At that time, the Devil Race intruded the large continent. They were forced back into the Devil World by the powerful cultivators from Pure Land and Buddha Sect. The Devil World was the neighbour of the Western Continent. It was controlled by the Great Lightning Tune Temple. It was said that many major powers in the Western Continent trained in the Devil World, they would kill the demons to obtain the devils’ souls and sell them to the Devil Religions in large cities. Only the Devil Religions which had influential power like the Dark Devil Religion was qualified to make a trade with them. Heavenly Devil Palace wasn’t qualified for the trade. It is hard to believe that Jiang Chen has obtained so many devil souls.”

“Every devil soul contains the essence of a demon. It is very precious to us or for the cultivators of Devil Religions. The power

would be endlessly greater after the cultivation is complete.”

“Jiang Chen is too generous for giving out so many of devil souls.”

.....

The people who stood in the Centre Big Hall were all High Grade Elders. It was not just them who were shocked, Dark Min Zi himself couldn't imagine that this was true. He didn't know how Jiang Chen got this many devil souls that even one of them is of Eighth Grade Devil King.

“Brother Jiang, how...how did you get so many devil souls?”

Dark Min Zi was petrified.

“I have entered into the Devil World and killed some of the demons there. My intention was to trade these devil souls away. But, since you have helped me a lot, I will give you these devil souls in return for your help. You think these devil souls are too little?”

Jiang Chen smiled and waved his hand and all the devil souls were sucked into a Heavenly Earth Ring. The ring automatically flew towards Dark Min Zi. That amount wasn't going to take away all of the devil souls as he still had a lot of them. The time when he was in the Devil world, he obtained a part of the devil souls after killing the demons and mostly from looting some masters' devil souls. Therefore, a hundred of them wasn't a big deal to him.

As for Heaven Rank Restoration pills, he wasn't in need of them since he had received ten million pills from Invincible Nie and Shadowless Taoist each. His advancement to Eighth Grade Combat King had consumed a million and left him with nineteen million of them. So, he wouldn't be worrying about pills for a while.

‘Too little?’

Was he joking? If a hundred devil souls was too little, everyone in the Central Big Hall including Dark Min Zi himself would want to slap him on the face. This was a huge wealth. The benefits it would bring to Heavenly Devil Palace were great, it could be used to nurture many young geniuses.

“Brother Jiang, I am very grateful for such a great gift. I know that you are interested in Heaven Rank Restoration pills, here is three million of them. Please accept them.”

Dark Min Zi held out another Heavenly Earth Ring that contained three million Heaven Rank Restoration pills and sent it to Jiang Chen. Apparently, the pills had already been prepared by Dark Min Zi before Jiang Chen's arrival and he would give it to him even without his gift.

“Okay, if this is the case then I will accept them.”

As a courtesy, Jiang Chen accepted the ring. These were energy pills and were very useful to him. While he was cultivating Dragon Transformation Art, the energy consumption was still unknown. It

was impossible to estimate until he reached the grade of Minor Saint, which would be the time when the Heaven Rank Restoration pills weren't effective to him anymore. It was when he would need massive amount of Saint Restoration pills to support his refinery. It sounded scary enough for such a great consumption, it gave Jiang Chen a headache just thinking about it.

“Brother Jiang, over here. Your old brother, have fulfilled his duty as the lord of this palace.”

Dark Min Zi said and smiled, addressing himself as Jiang Chen's old brother, treating Jiang Chen as his peer to show how much he admired him. In reality, Jiang Chen's current power now was eligible to be one of Dark Min Zi's peers even without his intention to use Jiang Chen in establishing connections with the young master of the Dark Devil religion. He was now an Eighth Grade Combat King, which was way more powerful than two days ago. If he fought with Dark Min Zi, he would undoubtedly gain the upper hand.

Bang!

At this time, a deep roar that came from a faraway spatial area rang into the entire hall. Everyone raised their heads to look for the source of the sound. Far away, a very bright sword could be seen. They could sense the wave of combat power, there had to be people having battles.

“Such powerful aura, it is an intense fight.”

“That place must be far away from here, out of the radius of Liang Province. It is unimaginable that the sound was able to travel all the way to here. I can also sense the pressure of their auras. The one who casted the spell has to be a master at the level of a Minor Saint. It is really hard to estimate how powerful it is.”

“Who are battling? The force can even travel far away from the battle site to here, it is scary.”

All the people in the Central Big Hall were commenting about the sound and aura. They couldn't figure out how powerful a Minor Saint could be, but Tyrant was very clear about it. His master was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, he could kill a Ninth Grade Combat King by just staring at him through the incarnation created by a Godly Chant. Their powers were completely beyond comprehension.

Bang!

The light of a sword was reflected into the hall again. The two opponents were master cultivators, their ability was hard to estimate and it frightened one's spirit. Jiang Chen's gaze fixed on the source of light reflected from the swords, his focused gaze turned into a pleasant one, because he could sense a familiarity from the light of the sword. It was unmistakably the familiarity that came from Heavenly Saint Sword. Someone had found the fragments of Heavenly Saint Sword and used it to create another new weapon.

“Master Dark, who do you think are battling?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Judging from this terrifying power, the fighters must be at least a Minor Saint. In the Mysterious City, there are only five major powers who are this powerful. That sharp and brilliant light of sword was able to travel from a place so far away from ours. Perhaps, it is Master Xing Yun Zong. I heard that the sword that he is holding is a peerless sword. Some also said that he was very lucky to obtain one of the fragments of the sword left by the Greatest Saint. In several years time, he had completed the fusion of the fragment with its weapon and that is the sword he possesses now. My guess must be right, he has to be Master Xing Yun Zong because there aren't a lot of swordsmen in the five major powers.

Dark Min Zi replied.

Bang!

Another clash was heard and then followed by the disappearance of their auras, as if the battle was over. But Jiang Chen couldn't stay calm. The fourth fragment of the sword finally appeared.

“I think I know what my next target.”

A glimmer of light reflected off Jiang Chen's eyes. At first he didn't have any idea where to go, but after this, he knew from his heart that his next location would be the Mysterious Domain. He had to find ways to enter the Nebula Sect. He didn't care who it was, his main priority was to retrieve his lost item. He had to get it back even if it was Master Xing Yun Zong, he wouldn't give a damn

about him.

At dawn, Jiang Chen said his farewells to Dark Min Zi and the others before the three of them headed to the Center of Mysterious Domain.

“Little Chen, where are we headed?”

Big Yellow asked.

“We are on our journey to the Center of the Mysterious Domain. I am going to join Nebula Sect.”

Jiang Chen replied.

“What is the use of joining Nebula Sect?”

Tyrant was surprised, not knowing what Jiang Chen was trying to do.

“I have my own plans. We will go there and gather information. Joining the Nebula Sect isn’t going to be easy, we have to find a chance.”

Jiang Chen said. He knew that Nebula Sect didn’t simply accept discipleship from outsiders at any time. The registration for discipleship only happened at a specific time in a year. If anyone missed the date, it was impossible to enter unless the person had

connections with the members in the sect.

Tyrant and Big Yellow didn't know why he had to go there. To them, The Centre of Mysterious Domain was a competitive but enjoyable place to live at.

The distance from Liang Province to the Center of Mysterious Domain was very far. They had to fly across tens of large continents to arrive at their destination. Jiang Chen wasn't hurrying, he was enjoying the beautiful scenery of the continents along his journey.

Tyrant didn't say a single word in three days time, as if he had entered into some kind of state, especially when he was moving across the old forested terrain in the mountains. He would stare at something, focusing on it for a long time; two hours at the very least.

“What happened to you Tyrant? Why have you become so silent suddenly? I am not used to it.”

Big Yellow asked curiously.

“Buddha's teachings mentioned about enlightenment. The eminent monk in Buddha Sect that meditated would take more than ten years just to achieve enlightenment. Tyrant was doing a soul searching in the path to enlightenment, fully immersing himself into his own world. A world of peace where he had to integrate himself into nature in order to find the feeling of detachment from his physical body. The enlightenment was

extremely difficult to achieve, so we must not disturb him, we must follow his footsteps while slowing down ours.”

Jiang Chen could see through it. The sudden feeling of enlightenment struck Tyrant, he was extremely lucky to meet it, it was something that could only be met by chance.

‘An insight from the enlightenment could shock the heavens’, this phrase wasn’t nonsense. Tyrant was a genius in Buddha Sect, who was able to meditate at a very young age. Once he had achieved enlightenment, he would push his grade to the Eighth Grade Combat King or even the Ninth Grade Combat King.

Enlightenment could bring unimaginable power and energy to people. Inside Tyrant’s body, the Relics and Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills’ effect were the enhancement. His pool of energy was deemed super strong. The higher the pool of energy a person had, the better their chances to achieve enlightenment.

“This dude is also abnormal? He can just simply achieve enlightenment and advance his Combat King Grade.”

Big Yellow said it with admiration.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes at his friend’s immaturity. He thought to himself ‘simply achieve enlightenment?’ what if he tried to do it.

This dog must be depending in sleeping to advance his Combat

King Grade.

Chapter 596 - Ran Feng Monastery

They stopped from time to time during their journey since they had many encounters on the road. There were many roaming demons and devils that blocked their way, but Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had gotten rid of them without an issue, allowing Tyrant to focus in his meditation.

If they were to travel in full speed with their current power, they could use the Spatial Shift and travel through the Spatial Area in maximum speed, crossing different continents before reaching the Central of Mysterious Domain. However, Tyrant had entered into meditation all of a sudden. Therefore, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had to follow behind him, guarding him like his personal bodyguards to ensure his safety.

Three days later, as soon as they just got out of a foggy forest, they noticed some changes on Tyrant. A layer of golden light was covering his body, it was Buddha's pure light. When it became so brilliant Tyrant sat down immediately with both of his lower legs crossed. Low and deep chanting was coming continuously from his mouth, lines of golden white Sanskrit were escaping his mouth as well, it was very holy.

Jiang Chen could make out the type of the chant, it was the Lotus Chant. It was a profound chant scripture. It seemed that during his meditation, Tyrant had been enlightened by the Lotus Chant. The shining Sanskrit gradually surrounded and danced around his body, as though butterflies were pollinating, which was very beautiful to look at.

The Light of Buddha shone far away in every direction, and ultimately becoming a pure golden light beam that sped up to the sky. Tyrant's body started to float in mid-air and a blurred image of lotus had formed below him. He looked like a Buddha who was undeniably divine.

“Buddha Sect is a profound teaching. Although this monk didn't restrain himself from alcohol and killings, he's a person who has Buddha in his heart. Without that, he will not achieve such enlightenment.”

Big Yellow said.

“Absolutely, he acquired the Lotus Chant and summoned a lotus, it seems that this enlightenment is giving him a great boost in power. It will be out of our anticipation of how many grades he will surpass. Perhaps he will surpass the Eighth Grade Combat King and reach the Ninth Grade Combat King.”

Jiang Chen envied. He could see it from his eyes what transformation Tyrant was undergoing. It wouldn't only enhance his power but also his spiritual realm. The enhancement in his body from inside out would lead to great improvements, which would awaken the potential power of Buddha in him. In the future, he might be able to surpass Great Master Ran Feng.

“He is in a special condition now. I'm afraid this will last for a period of time. We have to be careful. We must not let anyone interrupt the process. Big Yellow, you need to cast a spell to protect this area. If you see any beast approach, kill it on sight.”

Jiang Chen said it in a solemn tone. This is a critical moment for Tyrant, he must not be disturbed. If he was distracted from the meditation, all of his efforts would be in vain and he had to start all over again.

There was a monastery a thousand miles away. It wasn't a big temple, and there were only about several tens of people in it. At this point, an Elder Monk was sitting with his legs crossed under a big ritual bell, one of his hands was holding a string of golden Buddha beads.

His eyes suddenly opened, gazing at a far away direction. With the power of Buddha and his sensitive senses towards Buddha light, he could naturally see the Buddha light that shone from thousands of miles away.

“A very pure Buddha light!”

The Elder Monk was surprised.

At this moment, a silhouette sped and appeared before the elder monk. He was around his age, in his sixties. He also saw the Buddha light as the Elder Monk did.

“Abbot, it seems that there is a Buddha light coming from that direction, it has to be some high-ranking monk.”

The other Elder Monk said.

“Such pure Buddha light is very powerful, my power is far less than that. It seems a high-ranking monk of Buddha Sect has arrived in Yu Province. Let’s welcome him.”

The Abbot of the monastery said before transforming into golden light and flew to the source of the light, followed by the other Elder Monk.

In the lush forest, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had fortified their defenses against unknown enemies. They suddenly saw two silhouettes approaching them in the sky. As time passed, two people wearing robes could be seen approaching them. One was an Eighth Grade Combat King and the other one had reached the Ninth Grade Combat King, they were powerful but not powerful enough to defeat Jiang Chen’s group.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow raised their guards, but the two elder monks didn’t go any nearer to them after landing on the ground.

“There is an eminent monk meditating here, we must not interrupt him. He is a genuine disciple of Buddha Sect who needs to be respected.”

The Abbot of monastery said. They fixed their gazes on the monk who was in the process of enlightenment. Then they let their palms touch their own palms and positioned themselves in mid-air, not intending to move any nearer an inch.

“They don’t seem malevolent.”

Jiang Chen smiled. His sharp senses told him everything, their conversation was very audible in his ears. He knew instantly that they were here because of the Buddha's light.

“This place has to be the Yu Province of Mysterious Domain. Does Mysterious Domain has monks?”

Big Yellow was trying to find out why.

“What do you know? Fart? The disciples of Buddha Sect are everywhere, it is not just in the Western Continent that many monks go to. Temples and monastery can be found throughout the Divine Continent, their numbers may be not much, but all of them meditate in front of Buddha all the time, in search for detachment of their desires and find peace. That is why we can't see them often out on the street. These two Elder Monks are from a monastery in Yu Province. When they meet a high-ranking monk, they must have great respect for him. Therefore, they will naturally come to find him.”

Jiang Chen explained.

Big Yellow felt that he had learnt something amazing, as though he was enlightened by Jiang Chen's explanation. Now he knew that Buddha Sect not only existed in the Western Continent, and Great Lightning Tune Temple wasn't the only powerful Buddha Sect. Many of them were located in a lot of provinces in the continent and other continents as well, Heavenly One Sect was just one of them.

Tyrant's Qi became stronger, along with his Buddha light. The blurry image of lotus under him slowly became clearer. This process went on for half an hour, and then, Tyrant's Qi rose to another notch, reaching the Eighth Grade Combat King.

It continued to rise without pausing! It was like what happened to Jiang Chen in Saint's Cliff, pushing his grade by two.

"This bald donkey's advancement is too abrupt! He is going to reach the Ninth Grade."

Big Yellow's eyes sparkled.

"Not only that. The enlightenment this time has helped him build a base for advancement into Combat Emperor Realm, which means, he can easily make his way to the First Grade Combat Emperor after this."

Jiang Chen said with a smile. So, it was true that when one achieve a certain enlightenment, that person could defy god's will to a certain extent.

As Jiang Chen expected, Tyrant entered the Ninth Grade Combat King after half an hour. He finally stopped at a level above the basic level of the Ninth Grade Combat King, which was beyond ordinary.

Swoosh

All the Buddha light swooshed and returned to Tyrant's body. Tyrant opened his eyes and landed slowly from the air. He took a deep breath and laughed for the advancement he had just achieved.

“Wakaka, I say to you...Amitabha!”

Tyrant approached Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, attempting to show off. But when he saw two Elder Monk flying towards him, his facial expression changed instantly and became rigid and stern like a high-ranking monk.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow felt nauseated by his action. The way he acted was too real. They laughed even harder when they saw Tyrant's acting skill had improved. To save Tyrant's face, they suppressed their laughter, as though they suffered a temporary constipation.

“I have the urge to slam his face.”

Jiang Chen whispered.

“I want to fart at his face.”

Big Yellow exclaimed with low tone.

Tyrant heard their comments, especially Big Yellow's. He

shuddered lightly while stepping a few steps back.

At this time, the two elder monk descended from the sky and moved towards Tyrant. Both palms touching their own palms and said with utmost sincerity, “I don’t know that you have arrived in Yu Province, forgive our delayed welcome. I am Abbot Yuan Ming of Ran Feng Monastery in Yu Province, this is my junior fellow, and his Dharma name is Yuan Tong.”

Yuan Ming announced his identity.

“I am Monk Tyrant. You just said that you two came from Ran Feng Monastery?”

Monk Tyrant didn’t pay attention to their Dharma names, but the two words ‘Ran Feng’ were heard clearly. A monastery in Yu Province of Mysterious Domain used his master’s name, ‘Ran Feng,’ as the name of their monastery. Was this a coincidence?

“That’s right, it is Ran Feng Monastery. Great Master Tyrant, why not pay a visit to our place?”

Yuan Ming invited him.

“Good. I travel everywhere and will go to any temple or monastery if I see one.”

Tyrant accepted his invitation. He recalled that their destination was the Central Point of Mysterious Domain. Even though Yu

Province was not very far from the Central Point, there would still be a long distance ahead of them. They shouldn't delay their schedule but he needed to find out about this monastery that used his master's name. He wanted to check this place and see whether there were any disrespectful things for his master.

“This is great.”

Yuan Ming was pleased. It was their honor to be able to invite such an eminent monk.

“These two are...”

Yuan Ming looked at them.

“They are my friends.”

Tyrant responded.

Afterwards, a group of people that were led by the two Elder Monks flew towards Ran Feng Monastery. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow understood fully why the sudden change of destination, they knew how much Master Ran Feng was worth in his heart. Or else Tyrant would have declined the invitation.

On the way, Tyrant didn't attempt to smile and remained his firm facial expression, the expression of an eminent monk, and that made his two friends' laughter to almost erup.

“Master Dog wants to see how long this stupid monk’s pretense will last.”

Big Yellow tried to wink at Tyrant, but he had no response. He was now totally a high monk.

Chapter 597 - Murderous Aura

They were fast. The distance between the forest and Ran Feng monastery was a thousand miles, but it didn't matter to them, as they could reach it like blinking their eyes. As they moved nearer, Jiang Chen could see the summit of a mountain from afar, topped by a monastery. The size of the building was as expected, it is a small monastery.

The monastery was surrounded by mountains, the environment was magnificent, it is a good place for training. Places where the Buddha Sect is located always gave people a sense of harmony.

“Great Master Tyrant, that is Ran Feng Monastery, please follow me.”

Yuan Ming gestured in a polite way. Tyrant was young, but Yuan Ming didn't attempt to belittle him, calling him Great Master. He was amazed by the pure Buddha light emitted by Tyrant.

“There are a total of thirty monks in Ran Feng Monastery. They are remote from mundane society and meditate here peacefully.”

Abbot Yuan Ming introduced his monastery to them. Although the monastery wasn't big, it could fit at least a few hundred monks. Thirty of them were too little. However, this was common because Buddha Sects were normally a minority in any province. Unlike the Great Lightning Tune Temple which was incomparable.

Tyrant nodded then they landed onto the monastery. There was

an overhead bronze gate, topped by three words in gold colour, 'Ran Feng Monastery.'

Tyrant held his palm to his other palm and bowed when he saw his master's name, "Abbot, why do you call this monastery 'Ran Feng monastery?' I am from the Western Continent, and there is a Great Master there with the Dharma name 'Ran Feng.' Is it because there is a connection between Great Master Ran Feng and this monastery?"

When they heard Tyrant was from Western Continent, they were thrilled. They changed their view of him instantly.

"No wonder Great Master has such a pure Buddha light at such a young age. You are in fact a Great Master from the Western Continent. That's right, the name is 'Ran Feng Monastery' because there is a connection between Great Master Ran Feng and this monastery. Great Master Tyrant, please, come in, I will explain in detail."

Abbot Yuan Ming said.

Tyrant had to find out the reason behind all of these, he was curious why they had named the monastery using his master's Dharma name.

Jiang Chen was analysing the monastery, trying to distinguish the things that were special here, and finding out what was the possible connection with Great Master Ran Feng. Since Abbot Yuan Ming had mentioned that the name originated from him,

there had to be some kind of connections, which made Jiang Chen interested.

The monastery was small but the big hall inside was grand. They sat on the empty chairs that were two rows facing each other. Tea was brewed for them.

“My name is Zuo Hui Shan, I originated from the Zuo family in Yuan Yang City. This monastery was non-existent forty years ago. At that time, there was an eminent monk from the Western Continent that saved my father when his life was endangered during his journey, his Dharma name was ‘Great Master Ran Feng’. After my father came back, he decided to build a monastery that had the statue of Great Master Ran Feng so that he and his disciples could worship him in the monastery. When I found this place, I knew that the monastery fitted here. Over the course of forty years, even though my father had passed away, Zuo family will always return here to worship him every year.”

Abbot Yuan Ming explained, describing every detail of the history as if there was nothing to hide, there was no secret.

“So this is how it is.”

Tyrant and Jiang Chen finally understood its root. It was because Great Master Ran Feng had done a good deed, and they were doing this as a return to repay his kind deeds.

“Forty years ago, I wasn’t born yet. My master was travelling around, therefore saving the head of the Zuo family was not

uncommon.”

Tyrant recalled, he was an abandoned baby that was saved by his master during his travels. If it wasn't for Great Master Ran Feng's kindness, he wouldn't exist. Now that he could travel this far in the Mysterious Domain and found a monastery named after his master's Dharma name, he felt very proud of his master and himself.

“Abbot said that there is a statue of Great Master Ran Feng, right? Can you lead me to it?”

Tyrant asked. If there was a statue of his master, he had to at least give his master a few kowtows.

“Great Master, this way.”

Abbot Yuan Ming rose on his feet, and walked out of the big hall. There was another big hall behind the previous hall. This wasn't as grand as the previous hall, with very little decorations in its surroundings, but there was a large statue in it. It was the statue of Great Master Ran Feng.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant stepped into the hall and saw a large statue of ten feet tall, wearing an ancient yellow robe on its body. One of its hands was placed upright in front of its chest and it had a peaceful facial expression, it also had a white beard that made the statue to look like the real Great Master Ran Feng.

“Master.”

Tyrant called out for his master. He strode to the statue and knelt down, creating a puffing sound. He gently made three kowtows before standing up. Immediately, he felt a good impression for Zuo family's sincere intention and the exquisite craftsmanship for making this statue so real.

‘Master.’

Yuan Ming and Yuan Tong stood rooted to the ground after hearing that. Their facial expression changed, they weren't foolish. Seeing how Tyrant worship the statue, could it be...he is the disciple of Great Master Ran Feng?

Tyrant turned to Yuan Ming, “Abbott is right, I am Great Master Ran Feng's disciple.”

“A high rank disciple of Great Master Ran Feng has arrived in our monastery. Until now, I haven't witnessed the ability of Great Master Ran Feng, but now I have the chance to witness the power of his high rank disciple. I will have no more regrets.”

Abbot Yuan Ming was undoubtedly excited. He didn't think that the young monk that he met was actually the disciple of his benefactor. Without a doubt, Yuan Ming was sure that only a superior being like Great Master Ran Feng could nurture a genius like Tyrant.

“Okay, I have given my kowtows to my master. I will come to visit often next time, but I can’t stay any longer as I have important matters on hand.”

Tyrant said. He felt relieved after knowing the origins of the monastery.

Abbot Yuan Ming’s expression changed knowing that Tyrant was leaving and said, “Great Master coincidentally arrived to our monastery, and tomorrow is the day of Zuo family worshipping Great Master Ran Feng that happens yearly. Why not stay overnight for the prayer ceremony? Allow our Zuo family to fulfil our duties as the owner of the Ran Feng Monastery before you leave.”

Tyrant twisted his head to look at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen knew this very well: the relationship between Tyrant and his master, and said, “We are putting today’s task off and continue on our journey after the prayer ceremony with Zuo family, it won’t take a lot of time.”

“What this man said is true, how do I address you?”

Abbot Yuan Ming faced Jiang Chen. His eyes were full of surprise and doubts. He saw through that Tyrant needed Jiang Chen’s permission to stay, this young lad must be the leader, which reminded him not to be neglectful.

“I am Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen said.

If it was the others who heard his name, astonishment would be the first reaction. Those incidents that happened in Liang Province had spread throughout the entire Mysterious Domain, Yu Province was not excluded, and people here knew who he was. But, Abbot Yuan Ming and the others were detached from society, they wouldn't know about it.

“Jiang Chen, Great Master Tyrant, I have received the news that the young lady of Zuo family will come to replace the master of Zuo family who has been in the state of seclusion. Today, please stay and rest here.”

Abbot Yuan Ming said.

That night, Abbot Yuan Ming made arrangements specifically for them, letting them stay beside a peaceful and beautiful yard. The yard was grown with flowers and grasses, making the air cool and fresh, and making the environment natural. The view of the moon and stars from the yard was clear, plus a pleasant smell was consistently released by the flowers, it was perfect.

“I have never expected to see my master's statue here. Zuo family knows how to show their gratitude, they have been worshipping my master.”

Tyrant said and felt satisfied with what the Zuo family did.

“You stupid monk liked to be a serious monk the whole time. Aren’t you tired?”

Big Yellow walked to Tyrant.

“Bastard, I am originally a high rank monk, didn’t you hear what the Abbot called me? It was Great Master! You damn dog dare to disrespect a Great Master... Ouch!”

Without having the chance to finish Tyrant’s threatening sentence, Big Yellow bit him on his buttocks.

“Stupid dog, release your teeth! You dare to bite an eminent monk’s buttocks? You want to die?!”

Tyrant continued to threaten and curse, but Big Yellow didn’t seem to be losing his grip on his buttocks.

Jiang Chen moved outside quickly to watch the stars. When the two of them started a fight, there wouldn’t be an end.

The result was true. Tyrant got entangled with Big Yellow with the matter of hurting his back for half an hour. He glared at Big Yellow vengefully, “Decayed dog, if this place wasn’t a monastery, I swear I would fix you! I am a Ninth Grade Combat King now!”

Big Yellow didn't care about his threats at all and went to sleep on a big green rock.

Jiang Chen, who was looking up at the stars frowned suddenly. He casted his Great Soul Derivation Technique, releasing his soul aura and his eyes focused.

“There's a murderous aura.”

Jiang Chen said it with a very cold tone.

Tyrant's facial expression changed, Big Yellow swooshed and climbed from his rocky bed.

“Little Chen, what did you just say?”

Tyrant asked.

“I can sense a cloud of murderous aura surrounding this monastery. Even though it was hidden and concealed well, it can't escape my senses.”

Jiang Chen said. Tyrant's sense wasn't as good as Jiang Chen's, he hadn't sensed anything. After listening to Jiang Chen, he tried casting Lotus Chant to detect the aura and just sensed a plain aura.

“This aura isn't targeting us.”

Tyrant deduced.

“If it isn’t targeting us, it should be targeting the monastery.’

Big Yellow said.

“It is unlikely, the monastery has been here for forty years. If there’s anyone who wants to launch an attack to the place, it should’ve been done a long time ago. What’s the use of waiting until now? Plus it is also purposeless to hide the aura.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes reflected a brilliant light. His wisdom and composure was always higher than theirs.

Chapter 598 - Zuo Ling Er

The calm atmosphere suddenly became tense. The concealed murderous aura made Jiang Chen and the rest feel uncomfortable although the aura was not directed to them.

“If my guess is not wrong, they are preparing to start a murder for tomorrow’s prayer ceremony.”

Jiang Chen guessed. Tomorrow was a perfect opportunity to set an ambush for murdering someone during the prayer ceremony.

“It seems Abbot Yuan Ming hasn’t realized it. Should we tell him?”

Tyrant said.

“We cannot alert anyone because that will also alert the assassin. He may be an enemy of the Zuo family from a long time ago. The Zuo family is one of the high social class in Yuan Yang City for they were able to build a monastery here. So I think the Zuo family should have some kind of preventive measures for such grand ceremony.”

Jiang Chen waved his right hand to Tyrant, implying that it was a bad idea.

During the silent night, there wasn’t a slightest attempt of assassination. Jiang Chen had no doubt about it now, the reason

that this aura was concealed so secretly was that the attacker was waiting for a chance to strike. If he was targeting them or the monastery, he would have shown up earlier instead of staying silent and hiding for the whole night.

Dang... *Dang...* *Dang...*

The ringing of a large bell resounded as soon as daybreak began. Warm sunlight shone on the big piece of land, the lights that struck some parts of the monastery reflected off the building, as though a layer of golden shield had covered it.

The ringing of the large bell lasted longer than usual. It was because today was a special day, a day of the annual prayer ceremony.

Yuan Tong came in person to invite Jiang Chen and his friends. The three of them followed him to the front of a big hall and stood beside a group of monks, waiting for the Zuo family members to arrive.

Soon, a harmonious cloud appeared in the sky. On top of the cloud, there were seven to eight people standing, each of them was wearing a robe with a vigorous Qi that suggested nobility. The person standing at the front most was a little girl who was merely about twelve years old. She was in a brilliant clothing and her hair were tied with two pigtails, her skin was white as if it was crafted from a white jade. She looked pretty in her attire and had a face of a beauty, the attributes of an empress of a city.

She was attractive. It wasn't only because of her good-looking face, but also her grade. A girl as young as her has already reached the Ninth Grade Combat King, she was a natural-born-abnormal.

“My god! This child is a Ninth Grade Combat King? Am I seeing it wrong?”

Tyrant's eyes widened, unable to believe what he just saw. A Ninth Grade Combat King at the age of twelve or a thirteen? There were only a few of them like her in this continent. She must have started cultivating while she was still in her mother's womb.

“This is Master Zuo's daughter, Zuo Ling Er. She is twelve years old this year and has reached Ninth Grade Combat King, she is recognized as a genius in Yuan Yang City.”

Abbot Yuan Ming initiated to explain. His words were full of exultation and honor. Having a dazzling young genius in the Zuo family was truly something to be proud of. In truth, a Ninth Grade Combat King who was as young as her, not only would be a genius in Yuan Yang City, but also across the entire continent.

“Zuo family is very fortunate to have such a genius.”

Jiang Chen said.

Zuo Ling Er and her family landed outside of the monastery. It was a rule that they had to walk outside all the way into the monastery, they were not allowed to do the opposite, which was

landing on the internal part of the monastery. The rule was set to show respect to Great Master Ran Feng.

Master Zuo and an Elder who were both First Grade Combat Emperors had gone to seclusion. Today's prayer ceremony would be led by the Zuo family's genius. It was the family's honor to have her represent the Zuo family and she would be the most eligible to lead the ceremony in front of Great Master Ran Feng.

Zuo Ling Er was a Ninth Grade Combat King, along with seven others, three of them were the same grade as her and four Eighth Grade Combat King. This combination of cultivators in a group was impressive in Yuan Yang City.

Yu Province was larger than Liang Province, with a lot of large powers and Combat Emperors. It wasn't comparable to Liang Province's Asura Palace.

Zuo Ling Er bounced in the direction of Abbot Yuan Ming and hugged him after she stepped into the monastery, "Uncle, Ling Er missed you so much!"

This girl's body seemed thin and weak, but her strength was freakingly strong. After wobbling her uncle for two rounds, her uncle almost lost his balance.

"Little Er, don't mess around, this is the monastery."

Abbot Yuan Ming gave Zuo Ling Er a fond and affectionate look.

Although he had become a monk, he couldn't help growing very fond of this descendant of the Zuo family.

“Whee, why are there so many outsiders here today?”

Zuo Ling Er glanced at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in surprise. She didn't notice Tyrant's existence. This was because only monks of Ran Feng Monastery stayed here. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow weren't monks, they were caught in her eyes at the beginning and was sure that they were outsiders.

“These are guests. Ling Er, go, kneel and bow down in front of Great Master Ran Feng. I will introduce them to you later, I believe you will be glad to know them.”

Abbot Yuan Ming said.

“Alright...”

Zuo Ling Er hid her smile and returned to her serious face. She took big steps towards the statue. She was only twelve years old, but she was a lot more thoughtful than the other kids who were the same age as her. If she wasn't eligible, Zuo family wouldn't permit her to represent the family and lead this important ceremony.

Bang!

When Zuo Er Ling made her first step and was just about to make

the second, a rumbling as if from thunder was heard outside, which shook the entire mountain.

“It emerges at last.”

Jiang Chen squinted. The planned assassination was for the Zuo family or perhaps only for Zuo Ling Er. Yesterday Jiang Chen couldn't figure out the real intention of the assassination, but after seeing Zuo Ling Er today, it all made sense to him now. An exceptional talent like her should be eliminated to clear off any obstacles in the future.

“Who is it?”

Abbot Yuan Ming's face turned stern and clamored.

Whizz *Whizz* *Whizz*

As soon as abbot Yuan Ming's voice faded, silhouettes of different people flew out from multiple directions towards the monastery. There were about twenty of them. They were all high grade Combat Kings, the weakest was at least an Eight Grade but most of them were Ninth Grade.

“Haha...It seems today will be the last time of Zuo family's annual prayer ceremony.”

A person laughed. He seemed to be in his forties or fifties, he had a sturdy body behind his black clothes. The scary part of him was

his grade: A First Grade Combat Emperor.

There is a First Grade Combat Emperor and tens of Ninth Grade Combat King and another tens of Eighth Grade Combat King. It was a frightening team. To the Zuo family, who hadn't had even one First Grade Combat Emperor, it was going to be a destructive tragedy.

“Kong Yan, what is the meaning of all this?”

An elder of the Zuo family clamored, anger filled his face.

“What is the meaning? You think I am here to spend my time chatting with you, Zuo family? The spatial areas here are all sealed. All of you have to die here.”

Kong Yan announced without trying to hide his true intentions. There were two major powers in Yuan Yang City, they were the Zuo family and the Kong family. As the saying goes ‘a mountain can never fit two tigers’, these two families had been in conflict for so long, but the Kong family had never intended to raid the Ran Feng Monastery before. This was the reason that Zuo family permitted Zuo Ling Er to lead the prayer ceremony. They hadn't expected that the Kong family would launch a surprise attack on the monastery, and they had a First Grade Combat Emperor with them. As for the Combat Kings, only a few of them were Kong family's members, most of them were probably hired to join the battle.

“Humph, you are the same as always. It seems that you have

already set up an ambush before this, just to attack Aunty Er.”

Zuo Ling Er pointed at Kong Yan and said, “Unlike others, Aunty Er is a violent person, the girls aren’t allowed to fight”

“Sister, the little genius of Zuo family. You have grown fast, making the Kong family feel threatened. Also, the Nebula Sect is recruiting disciples, they have only two quotas in our City, thus only two people can enter from Yuan Yang City. Once you are dead, not only I have erased the potential threats, I can also grab those two quotas.”

Kong Yan smiled maliciously. Apparently, the Kong family had been preparing for this very day to come. They were informed that the Combat Emperor of the Zuo family had left for seclusion, therefore they would be able to get rid of Zuo Ling Er in Ran Feng monastery.

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered when he heard of the recruitment of disciples by Nebula Sect, he finally found his chance.

“Too rude!”

Abbot Yuan Ming’s eyes were full of fury. “You, Kong family are really cunning to commit such wrongdoings. This is the holy land of the Buddha Sect, don’t you dare tarnish it!”

“Go f**k yourself. What dog’s fart holy land are you talking about? I am here so that the monastery and everything here will be

razed to the ground. After obtaining the two quota of discipleship in Nebula Sect, the whole Yuan Yang City will be our Kong family's. Soon, Kong family's power will be on par with those major powers in Yu Province."

Kong Yan was extremely cocky, today, he won't let anyone from the monastery to escape their deaths.

"Go! Destroy this monastery!"

Kong Yan shouted. The Combat Kings unleashed their auras, one of the Kong family's Ninth Grade Combat King broke the parts and decorations of the big hall and stepped on the head of the statue of Great Master Ran Feng with his big leg.

"Haha...You all worship an old monk, this is very silly."

He mocked.

Boom!

A sea of fury suddenly rushed out from Tyrant's body and shot out in all directions. Both of his eyes turned red and stared at one of the Kong family member that was stepping on his master's head. He had crossed Tyrant's line, it was totally unacceptable.

"Get your ass down the statue immediately, or else I will let you die in pain."

Tyrant's voice was ice cold, his words carried a horrifying murderous aura.

Chapter 599 - Tyrant's Fiery Fury

No one had expected that serious and lowly monk would suddenly step out to fight. All the attention were shifted to him, including Zuo Ling Er's, Kong Yan's, and especially the one who was stepping on the statue's head.

Those of the Kong family who were placing their attention on their arch-rivals, the Zuo family, and also on Abbot Yuan Ming, never once had they thought that a monk would fight. Even though monks would feel angry about that action, but the ones that were provoked the most should be the Zuo family and Abbot Yuan Ming. They didn't know why a nobody-monk would get so furious about it, and the fiery aura unleashed by him shocked them, he had also reached the Ninth Grade Combat King.

“Very good. I never thought that a small monastery has kept a genius like you, a young genius that had reached the Ninth Grade Combat King. It seems that the Zuo family isn't that bad after all. Too bad, all of you have to die today. Yuan Yang City is destined to be ours.”

Kong Yan smiled coldly.

Tyrant didn't look at him. Now he was full of rage and glared at the bastard who stepped on his master's head. He swore that he wouldn't let this person live.

“Haha, little monk. Why become so angry for a statue? I can just easily break the head by my leg.”

The Ninth Grade Combat King of Kong family mocked at Tyrant's pointless anger. His leg began to step harder creating 'KaKa' sound, it could break at any time.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow shook their heads helplessly. They felt pity for the Ninth Grade Combat King. He was finished, no one on earth or heaven could save him anymore.

“Come and die!”

Tyrant raged, the rage he never wanted to show. His whole body turned into light and raced to his target. An illusion of a Buddha palm struck the Ninth Grade Combat King, his facial expression changed dramatically, he didn't have time to prepare for it as it was too fast. The impact of the ferocious attack was enough to push and press him into a meat pie even if he used his full power to defend it.

Kacha!

Tyrant didn't slam him to the wall. The big palm gripped the Ninth Grade Combat King's neck, pulling him down from the statue. Tyrant had become an ancient violent beast, both hands clamping tightly on his target's shoulders.

“You dare blaspheme my master? Die now!”

Tyrant exerted his hands that had millions pounds of strength,

moments later only a sound of 'Chi la' was heard. The scene became very bloody, they witnessed a Ninth Grade Combat King that was absolutely defenseless under Tyrant's attack. His entire body was torn into half alive, blood was pouring out profusely from the reddish side of the half body, the detached internal organs were thrown and scattered over the big hall.

Hiss!

Everyone gasped in horror. Yuan Ming and Yuan Tong eyes' widened. This little monk was too ferocious. The way he slaughtered a man wasn't like a high rank monk at all, he was even more violent than a demon, tearing the enemy's body apart when he was still breathing. This type of slaughtering raised goose bumps to everyone.

Yuan Ming couldn't believe his eyes. He recalled the eminent and devoted monk yesterday, but it all changed when the monk struck his enemy, the attack was brutal and tyrannical. Yuan Ming and Yuan Tong understood why Tyrant became so angry, the intruder was stepping on his master's head, which was unacceptable to him.

Tyrant's power was beyond their expectation. He was the same grade as his enemy, both were Ninth Grade Combat King, the gap between them shouldn't be extraordinarily wide.

The Zuo family members' mouths opened wide out of surprise. Despite knowing all the people in monastery, they didn't imagine a heaven defying monk like him had sneaked into the group. Judging by his means of killing, they instantly saw through that the Zuo family's genius, Zuo Ling Er, was no match for him.

“God dammit! Raze this place! Crush the statue!”

Kong Yan raged. The attack made by the little monk was too fast, he didn't even had a chance to save his comrade. The Kong family had lost one valuable asset, a Ninth Grade Combat King. He was ordered to set an ambush in the Ran Feng monastery for a massacre. But one of them was taken down before they could even attack their enemy, this fact made him very furious.

“Crushing the statue...You have blasphemed my highly respected master. None of you can leave today, your lives will be the atonement for your sins.”

Tyrant's tone was cold and serious. Thick murderous aura was coming out from him,. He was unquestionably furious. He was a cold-blooded killer, he murdered people without blinking his eyes. Now he couldn't stomach the fact that his master's dignity was being dampened, he wouldn't allow this monastery to be destroyed, no one was allowed to touch his master's statue.

“I will get rid of you first.”

Kong Yan raged and thrust forward. His speed was fast, but there was someone moving faster than him, a young lad in white clothes, he blocked Kong Yan's way like a ghost.

“You have to pass through me first before killing him.”

The young lad in white clothes wasn't a stranger. He was Jiang Chen, nineteen years old now, slowly turning into an adult, who was full of heroic spirit.

“F*ck off!”

Kong Yan looked down on the young man that blocked him: an Eighth Grade Combat King. He couldn't find a reason to respect him, he launched a simple palm attack, summoning strong wind that tore the spatial area, to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen confronted the attack simply by his fist, both attack met and created an impact and a loud explosion. Lines of cracks appeared on the spatial area. Jiang Chen stood rooted at his position and didn't move, while Kong Yan stepped three steps back to find his balance.

“What?!”

Kong Yan exclaimed and stared at the white-clothed young man with his big eyes. It was like he had seen a ghost. Both families that were ready to battle were distracted, they couldn't believe what they saw.

“Who is this dude? He is only an Eighth Grade Combat King... How can he force a First Grade Combat Emperor to back a few steps by just using his fist? What is he and how did he came to the monastery.”

The members of Zuo family were amazed. A young man with extraordinary power who was more powerful emerged before them, before they could even accept the madness of the monk.

“Exceptional!”

Zuo Ling Er's little mouth opened. That time when she came in, she had seen Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, but she didn't pay much attention to them, treating them casually. She hadn't expected that they had hidden their powers so well.

The two people who were surprised the most were Yuan Ming and Yuan Tong. Yesterday their attention was put mainly on Tyrant, totally neglecting Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. It wasn't possible at the time to think that Jiang Chen would turn out to be a scary man. Now they realized that the reason why Tyrant had to ask for Jiang Chen's opinion before deciding to stay overnight in the monastery, was because he was the strongest among them.

When Jiang Chen was at his Seventh Grade Combat King, he could kill a First Grade Combat Emperor. Now that he had reached the Eighth Grade Combat King, killing a First Grade Combat Emperor would be effortless. In truth, Tyrant was never stronger than Jiang Chen even after his enlightenment, but he was powerful enough to eliminate a First Grade Combat Emperor. The situation was getting a little menacing. Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any time, he would confront the Combat Emperor and leave the rest to the two abnormals, Tyrant and Zuo Ling Er, whom the number of enemies was too little for them to kill. Plus, Big Yellow was a time bomb waiting to explode.

“This young man, this is between us and Zuo family. I hope you won’t interfere.”

Kong Yan was staring at Jiang Chen.

“Zuo family and Kong family’s matter isn’t my concern and not in my interests, but I can’t stand here to see you destroy the monastery, if you dare to touch a thing here, I will take your souls.”

Jiang Chen said. Brilliant dragon scales emerged on his palm, he thrust forward and clawed, casting the spell of True Dragon Palm, in the direction of Kong Yan.

“Rock Crushing Palm.”

Kong Yan shouted. Strong winds blew as his palm moved, his eyes were full of fire. He couldn’t believe that a First Grade Combat Emperor like him could not defeat an Eighth Grade Combat King.

Bang!

Kong Yan’s eyes were filled with terror when the True Dragon Palm and his Rock Crushing Palm clashed. It was one of the skills that he was so proud of but it wasn’t effective to Jiang Chen. His Rock Crushing Palm was crushed by the True Dragon Palm, as though he was pushed by a big mountain, sending him flying more than ten feet away. He could only find his balance to stand again moments later, but the unpleasant feeling inside of him could not

be expressed.

“Kill them all! Don’t leave one alive.”

At this time, Zuo Ling Er roared and rushed towards one of the Ninth Grade Combat Kings.

“Kill!”

The Zuo family shrieked, intensely and excitingly. They should be excited. They thought that they would all die today as the Kong family’s number was overwhelming and they had brought a Combat Emperor with them. Zuo Ling Er would die and the monastery would be destroyed, everyone would die. They hadn’t expected that there would be rescuers in the middle of their crisis. They were extraordinary rescuers, one of them was able to make a Combat Emperor lose his balance. This was a big turnaround of the situation. Now they couldn’t give their enemies any chance to live.

Bang!

In the intense battle, both parties’ high rank Combat Kings were fighting with one another with their skills, wanting to kill as many as they could. Big Yellow and Tyrant quickly casted a layer of seal as protection for the statue of Great Master Ran Feng. They were afraid that the monastery was going to be destroyed by all the frantic attacks and spells in the battle, they thought that this type of a chaotic battle could even destroy ten of the same monasteries.

Argh...

A person made a mournful scream, a Ninth Grade Combat King was taken down by Zuo Ling Er. Her fist attack exploded in his forehead, it was as violent as Tyrant's. This little girl was emotionless and possessed unlimited brute force, which was a rare attribute, a force that was as big as a mountain. None of her peers which were in the same grade as her could match her strength.

Yuan Ming and Yuan Tong also attacked. The monks of the monastery came together to cast a formation spell to fight the Kong family. This was an intense life and death battle, no one was able to calm down and relax.

Chapter 600 - A Friendly Relationship

Argh! *Argh!*

The intensity of the chaotic battle increased, followed by more mournful screams. Tyrant and Zuo Ling Er were both ferocious mad humans, the Ninth Grade Combat Kings were not enough to be their opponents. Big Yellow was also a scary one, as if a poop stirring stick was stirring on the stubborn feces in a portable toilet, turning everyone upside down. The Eighth Grade Combat Kings who couldn't bear his attack and were torn apart by the attack.

The battlefield was tragic. All the buildings in the monastery were almost destroyed, blood vaporized into the air, a stinging stench of blood could be smelled everywhere. Many high rank Combat Kings were making their ultimate sacrifices, turning the peaceful and calm monastery into an Asura hell. Such a massive incident happening inside the monastery did not alert anyone outside. No sound could escape from there as Kong Yan had sealed the entire spatial area in the monastery. Even if a spell casted could shake the sky above and the earth below, no one from the outside could sense it.

In this intense battle, both parties suffered injuries and casualties, especially the Kong family, but only a few members of the Zuo family suffered injuries. The Kong family had lost more than half of their group not very long after the battle had started. The one who were still alive were frightened to death, their fighting spirit had dropped to almost zero. While the Zuo family on the other hand, was just getting started.

This was what usually happened in the battlefield, the army became so ferocious when the fighting spirits were sparked.

As for the battle that was happening between the two strongest men, Kong Yan was pressed on the ground and hit by Jiang Chen. One of his arms was broken and torn away from his body, blood had soaked his clothes in the helpless situation. When he raised his head to look at Jiang Chen, he could see a very relaxed and easygoing expression from his face. He suddenly felt that Jiang Chen was toying with him. Jiang Chen could have easily taken his life at the beginning.

“Damn! Truly unlucky! I've met a harmful abnormal unexpectedly today!”

Kong Yan spurted blood. The mouthful of blood was coughed because he was seriously injured, both physically and mentally. As for the mental part, he felt extremely unhappy to be defeated by an Eighth Grade Combat King.

“Master Kong, unlock the seal now, we can't fight anymore.”

Someone shouted at Kong Yan while fleeing for his life. The seal was supposed to lock the spatial area to prevent their enemies from escaping. However the situation had changed, they realized that they had trapped themselves instead, with no way to escape from the place. The only person who could unlock the seal was Kong Yan.

Kong Yan himself also couldn't stand the battle any longer. He

summoned a talisman in his hand and threw it into the air. After it rumbled, the invisible seal in the spatial area disappeared. Kong Yan fled instantly, flying out from the battlefield.

“Young man, ‘Green mountains never gets old, green rivers will never dry’. We will meet again. Our Kong family has recorded down today’s incident, we will doubly repay you all in the future.”

Kong Yan left a vengeful message and chose to flee. Too bad, Jiang Chen wouldn’t allow him.

“If you had chosen to flee in the very beginning, I wouldn't have been able to chase you, but with your current state, fleeing is just a vain hope.”

Jiang Chen revealed a cold smile. At the moment when he struck Kong Yan, he had already given him the death sentence. Jiang Chen wouldn’t allow a threatening enemy to escape from his grasp. Someone like him, a First Grade Combat Emperor, would bring trouble in the future.

Keng!

Jiang Chen slashed with his Heavenly Saint Sword. The long sword turned into a long rainbow, slashing through the dimensional area and arriving on Kong Yan’s back.

“No!!”

Kong Yan felt his life was endangered by the sword. It was too fast and strong. The Qi released from the sword had wrapped his entire body, eliminating all the chances of escaping.

“What?!”

“Kong Yan is dead...We have to escape now!”

“That man is too strong. Our plan has failed. Let’s run for our lives!”

.....

Kong Yan’s death was a fatal blow to the Kong family’s fighting spirit. From fighters, they had become timid birds that flew away in all directions.

“Kill them all! Don’t let even one escape!”

Zuo Ling Er ordered, and chased one of them in lightning speed while swaying her fists in the air, crushing his head. The enemies were high rank Combat Kings. Even though they couldn’t fight them anymore, they still had the ability to escape. Despite the Zuo family and Tyrant frantically killing as many of them as possible, several of them managed to escape.

To the Zuo family, this was an amazing battle that needed to be recorded. The Zuo family was supposed to be the prey, but in the middle of the fight, they had turned the situation around and

caused the Kong family to suffer many casualties, which included a Combat Emperor. The Kong family would really feel extremely disappointed at the same time regretful regarding this situation.

The battle had ended, but everyone couldn't calm down. They were now staring at the demolished monastery. The monks couldn't help but sigh. Many of them were also staring at Jiang Chen. This handsome and white-clothed youth was undoubtedly their benefactor. They could imagine the tragedy that would happen if he did not help out today. Their lives would all be in danger despite the fact that Zuo Ling Er possessed a great talent, and had almost completed her cultivation in the Combat King realm. The gap between a Combat King and a Combat Emperor was too large, as if trying to jump over a huge monsoon drain.

“What's your name, big brother?”

Zuo Ling Er came to Jiang Chen's side. Her watery eyes were fixed on him. It was really hard to imagine an adorable girl like her had a violent side when battling: as ferocious as a lion.

“I am Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen smiled and extended his arms to pinch Ling Er's cheek. Jiang Chen naturally felt pleased when a sweet little girl wanted to find out about his name.

“Amitabha, luckily we have your help today. If not, the consequences would be disastrous.”

Abbot Yuan Ming walked over, his words were full of gratitude. He felt very fortunate that he had invited these three guests into the monastery and had them stay overnight. The opposite would cost the Zuo family tremendously. Apparently, the Zuo family had a good fortune this time.

“Jiang Chen. This name is somewhat familiar.”

An elder of the Zuo family tried to recall where he had heard the name before.

“You are the one who caused chaos in the Liang Province!”

One of them recalled his identity and exclaimed when he saw the dog and the scary little monk beside him. He suddenly realized that Tyrant wasn't the monastery's monk. He heard that Jiang Chen had killed a Combat Emperor of Asura Palace, which was very extraordinary. There was also a monk and a dog that was always following him. Therefore, he found the connection between them and determined that the young man is Jiang Chen.

“It seems that my name is well known, even in the Yu Province.”

Jiang Chen smiled calmly, confirming his identity.

“Wah! So that Jiang Chen is you, big brother? I have heard the things that you have done in Liang Province, it was too awesome!”

Zuo Ling Er cheered. Her eyes stared at Jiang Chen in

admiration, as though her eyes were blinking like stars.

“So you are brother Jiang Chen. No wonder you were able to kill a Combat Emperor. If it wasn’t for your intervention today, our Zuo family would lose everything. This is a great kindness to us, please accept my gratitude.”

A Ninth Grade Combat King elder of the Zuo family said solemnly. The others followed his actions and also showed their gratitude to Jiang Chen. Today’s situation was very dangerous, they tried to think what would happen if Jiang Chen wasn’t here, Zuo Ling Er might get injured or even die. No one in the Zuo family could bear that responsibility.

“Not much courtesy is needed. Big brother is one of us now.”

Zuo Ling Er was very mature for her age. In spite of seeing Jiang Chen for the first time, she didn’t regard him as a stranger anymore and her manners towards him was forthright.

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but laugh. This little girl really did have a good attitude, he liked her instantly.

“Do you all not know how to be grateful for an eminent monk’s help?”

Tyrant couldn’t stand the situation anymore. His contribution in the battlefield was not meagre, but everyone turned their attention to Jiang Chen, totally neglecting his presence.

“Erm, this is Great Master Tyrant, a high rank monk that came from Western Continent. He is a disciple of Great Master Ran Feng.”

Yuan Ming quickly introduced him to Ling Er. He wouldn't dare to antagonize a disciple of Great Master Ran Feng.

“What? Disciple of Great Master Ran Feng?”

Everyone's attention now shifted to Tyrant, including Ling Er's. At first, they thought that this monk was also one of them in the monastery. But, only after witnessing his powerful attacks did they know that he was with Jiang Chen. Still, they couldn't imagine this monk had a connection with Great Master Ran Feng. The monastery was built to worship Great Master Ran Feng, now that his disciple had come here, Tyrant should be their guest of honor.

The members of the Zuo family were astonished. After a cold and silent moment, Zuo Ling Er broke the silence and invited Jiang Chen and his friends to the Zuo family to be their guests in Yuan Yang City.

“Miss, I think we have to leave now. I'm afraid that the intense battle here had spread to Yuan Yang City. I'm worried that the Kong family may act.”

An elder of the Zuo family reminded.

“Big brother, you and I hit it off even if we just met for the very first time. You must come to our Zuo family and be our guest. When my dad knows about this, he will be more than thankful to you. And, brother monk, you are a disciple of Great Master Ran Feng, if I can’t bring you back to the Zuo family, I will be scolded like hell.”

Zuo Ling Er’s tone was aggressive and determined, it gave them a very hard time to decline her offer. But, that wasn’t the essential part, the most important thing in Jiang Chen’s heart was the matter regarding Nebula Sect. Even if he was not invited by Zuo Ling Er to Yuan Yang City, he would go there anyway. He wouldn’t let the chance of joining the Nebula Sect slip away.

“Alright, since you say it. If I don’t go, then I’m being impolite.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He was very clear that once he entered Yuan Yang City, he would be involved in the strife between the Kong and Zuo family. Despite the fact that he had killed one of Kong family’s Combat Emperor, it wasn’t the end and they wouldn’t just leave it like that. So, this would become one of his unsolved obstacles in the future.